





# OTHERWORLDLY EVIL MONARCH

BOOK 02

*Fengling Tianxia*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Otherworldly Evil Monarch

(异世邪君)

by

**Fengling Tianxia**

(风凌天下)

# Synopsis

---

Jun Xie was the number one assassin in modern earth. His skills and knowledge in the field of assassination were unparalleled, his accomplishments unprecedented, his reputation terrified the entire underworld. However, during a mission to retrieve a mystical treasure, a mishap occurred...

He is now Jun Moxie, a sixteen year old super level debauchee, sole heir to the declining Jun family. A family of valiant heroes, left with an old grandpa, a crippled uncle and a debauchee as the sole heir! Accepting the world's criticism and cold stares with a smile, his new journey begins! His life will be carved by his own will! Rise to the top! Evil Monarch Jun Xie!

“This cup I toast to those I’ve killed in my past life. Forgive me, for there is no chance for you to have revenge. Gulp!

This cup I toast to those whose life I will take in my new life. Forgive me, for you are fated to die by my hands. Cheers!”

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 101: By A Hair's Breadth!

---

"Pity! Such a pity! How good would have it been if Jun Mo Xie was killed! At least, that would have made Old Jun's heart ache!" Lady Yue'er said through gritted teeth. Hearing that Jun Mo Xie had unexpectedly did not die had caused her to feel extremely regretful. Under the boat, Jun Mo Xie was searching his brain, extremely puzzled. He did not recall offending this "Lady Yue'er." One would think from the bitter resentment in this young lady's voice, she had been violated a hundred times by Jun Mo Xie!

Lord Liu slowly pondered and said. "Now that this situation has escalated to this point, the mission to assassinate the Princess will be temporarily called off. We are fortunate to have acquired the Xuan beast tendons without a hitch. At this juncture, I can make arrangements for your departure from Tianxiang. Haha..."

"As for the other issues, I'll personally report to my master and see what the old man has planned. Perhaps we may have to collaborate with your hall once again, and I'll have to inconvenience everyone to return at that time. Please send greetings to the Blood Sword Hall's Grandmaster on my behalf and tell him 'although this was a failure, 'Second Uncle' is still grateful.'"

After saying these words, his voice became extremely solemn. Apparently, this sentence was the original words of this so-called 'Second Uncle' Jun Mo Xie was silent as he twitched his mouth. It was obvious that this 'Second Uncle' was the Second Prince. Was there even a need for you to act so mysterious if you were going to give such an obvious name?

"Lord Liu, thank you for your generous words. As for our departure, we naturally have our means. We'll take our leave!"

The three men immediately stood up and cupped their fists.

"The Xuan beast tendons have been given to Lady Yue'er for safe

keeping. Thirty tendons is not a small number so we hope that we will be informed as soon as this matter is resolved. That which belongs to us, we will personally come back to retrieve."

Lord Liu laughed and said.

"You do not need to be polite. When you return, please ask the Grandmaster if he had given some thoughts to our request to assassinate an emperor. Regardless of his answer, please give us an answer as soon as possible!"

"Yes." The three men filed out and disappeared into the night. Lord Liu did not send them off.

"Lady Yue'er. The palace had already conducted a major purge after the incident with the princess and all three sides have lost much manpower. But this does not concern us. What's more important is that the one behind all this is most likely the big boss. Therefore, you need to complete your assignment we've discussed earlier as quickly as possible. In case of a information leak, do your best to arrange some people to enter the palace! Be vigilant and maintain only a single line of communication!" Lord Liu lowered his voice and spoke urgently.

"Yes. Lord Liu and 'Second Uncle' can rest assured. I have already made preparation a long time ago and have selected only virgin maidens."

Lady Yue'er's gentle and beautiful voice echoed.

"If not for 'Second Uncle's' important plans, even Yue'er would want to go to the palace to play for a few days."

"Haha, Lady Yue'er is one of Tianxiang's top beauties! Who can resist your charms?"

Lord Liu laughed a while before lowering his voice once again to speak.

"'Second Uncle' has ordered that we move forward with the plans to create crossbows out of the Xuan beast tendons. They might be

needed at any time, there is not a single moment to waste. Since many parties are watching our every move, it would be inconvenient for us to be personally involved. That is why we entrust you with completing this task."

Lady Yue'er replied uneasily. "I naturally understand, but these strips of Xuan beast tendons are too exceptional. Using ordinary steel would not be able to bring out the full potential of these tendons. Unfortunately, we will not be able to employ Shen Bing Pu, even though his craftsmanship is unrivaled in Tianxiang, since a tall tree attracts unwanted attention. Our only option is to do business with Jiangnan's famous Zhao Clan Trading Company. I have already sent messengers to get in touch with them before the auction, but I have not received a response yet."

"The sooner this issue is resolved, the better. We are even willing to double the payment if that is what it takes." Lord Liu said cautiously. "These crossbows will be crucial to us in the future. Not only has 'Second Uncle' paid an almost exorbitant price, and taking a significant risk by involving himself personally with the representatives from the Blood Sword Hall. Before this business with the Xuan beast tendons is completed, we absolutely cannot have any mishaps.

"This subordinate naturally understands." Lady Yue'er gently smiled before continuing. "Lord Liu, do you know what came of the matter I asked of 'Second Uncle'?"

Lord Liu's voice became quite solemn. "Lady Yue'er, Jun Zhan Tian is a cornerstone of the Tianxiang Kingdom. Killing him is easier said than done. Even the Blood Sword Hall, who dares to assassinate a princess, will hesitate to do so, it is not an easy decision to be made so lightly when it comes to Jun Zhan Tian!"

"'Second Uncle' only needs to mobilize a fraction of his manpower! We can frame Jun Zhan Tian for plotting a rebellion by taking advantage of the recent uproar the old man caused in the capital. With anger clouding His Majesty's mind, the result will be



obvious!"

In Lady Yue'er's voice, extreme resentment was palpable.

"Every night I sleep, I dream of the death and destruction that awaits that old man's family. Is 'Second Uncle' going to let this decisive opportunity slip away!"

"That's out of the question!" Lord Liu resolutely rejected this suggestion. "Jun Zhan Tian controls at least half of the power in Tianxiang. We can target Jun Zhan Tian himself but not when it may implicate his entire faction. What 'Second Uncle' wants is not a fragmented Tianxiang Kingdom."

"Jun Zhan Tian left my country in ruins and my family dead or scattered. After listening to your words, it sounds like..." Despair was evident in Lady Yue'er's voice. "If 'Second Uncle' is incapable of accomplishing my task, then why would I continue working with him?"

"Outrageous!" Lord Liu harshly scolded before lowering his voice.

"Lady Yue'er, your personal grudge is not a priority. Blood Sword Hall is still hesitant to act so wait until they have completed their assignment in the Yu Tang Kingdom. After that, 'Second Uncle' will certainly have ways to make them submit. The three masters from the Blood Sword Hall are all at the Sky Xuan cultivation level, and their mysterious leader is even rumored to be a peak level Spirit Xuan expert! Dealing with a trifling Jun Zhan Tian would certainly be a simple matter. Besides, Jun Zhan Tian already has one foot buried in his grave, what's the harm in letting him struggle at death's door for a few more months?"

Lady Yue'er snorted angrily but remained silent.

Jun Mo Xie trembled! They were planning the assassination of his grandfather! Not only were the assassins from "Blood Sword Hall" actually three Sky Xuan level experts but their leader was apparently at the Spirit Xuan level!

But because immeasurably tranquillness of the lake surface, the water had made an extremely slight splash sound when he trembled. Although the sound was almost inaudible, Jun Xie still immediately cursed in his heart.

"Who's there?!" A voice snapped. "There's someone under the boat!"

He had been exposed!

Jun Mo Xie didn't have time to think before turning his body around and firmly kicking off the bottom of the boat. His body looked like a big swordfish as he violently shot off deeper into the lake, quickly swimming far away.

An explosion rocked the pleasure boat as the roof of the cabin disintegrated into a shower of splinters. A figure layered in a bright and dazzling golden radiance, as he rushed into the air, reaching almost five zhangs in height! Like lightning, his two eyes sweep across in all direction to discover Jun Mo Xie's silhouette escaping underwater at great speed.

With a flash of golden light, the figure returned to the boat to seize the helmsman's long bamboo pole.

Shua!

With a heave, the pole looked like black lightning that had been enveloped in golden Xuan Qi as it flew out from his hands towards Jun Mo Xie's underwater silhouette. At the same time, the figure launched high up in the sky and flew out in the same direction as the bamboo pole. Gliding over the lake surface with the sleeves of his robe fluttering, this dazzling golden figure appeared as if a god had descended to earth.

This was precisely Lord Liu!

The expert at the peak Gold level cultivation and just a half step from the Jade Xuan level!

Jun Mo Xie continued to press on and swam away when he

suddenly sensed layer upon layers of heavy pressure pushing down from above. The water surrounding his body felt as if it suddenly froze and a feeling of impending crisis grew within his heart. His blood rapidly ran cold!

Without turning his head, Jun Mo Xie could sense that the trajectory of this attack would penetrate his torso. If he was unable to avoid it, then there would inevitably leave a bloody big hole on his torso!

Swiftly making up his mind, he instantly circulated the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune at full strength. Feeling the stress on his body reduced, he exerted all his effort to lean to one side, puffing out his chest, sticking out his butt, and sucking in his waist—his appearance exactly like that of an "S" shape. A really, really killer figure with curves in all the right places!

Shua!

The four zhang long bamboo pole barely scraped by Jun Mo Xie's skin, continued past his small back, coincidentally cutting through his clothes, before deeply stabbing into the lake bed.

Jun Mo Xie felt a chill running down his thigh and a stinging pain as he saw short curly hair suddenly floated around in the water. If the bamboo pole had even deviated by a hair's breadth, he feared that Young Master Jun would have to wait patiently for His Majesty, the Emperor, in heaven. He immediately burst out into a cold sweat!

Standard bamboo poles were only two zhang in length, but the bamboo poles used at Spirit Fog Lake were relatively longer due to the depth of the lake.

Jun Mo Xie struggled to get free. The bamboo pole that was inserted into the space between his clothes and flesh unexpectedly did not budge. A small and exquisite flying dagger appeared with a flip of his right hand before he made a quick backward slash and became free. Two pieces of gown resembling a pair of butterflies

parted to either side of him to reveal a stark naked body. If this had been a young lady, then it would have been a very alluring sight.

Up in the sky, the golden figure quickly descended. Before even touching the lake surface, the speed of his descent had caused waves to ripple out and the water under his feet to sink just enough to expose one end of the bamboo pole.

Jun Mo Xie eyes opened wide as he watched the figure sweeping down from the sky. Snorting in his heart, he suddenly straightened himself and rushed up towards the surface.

Hmph, don't worry; he would never rush up to fight. As he is now, a Gold Xuan peak expert was still an insurmountable mountain.

As his body shot upwards, his left hand suddenly punched out right as he was about to reach the surface to create a water arrow that exploded toward the falling figure in the sky. Simultaneously, his other hand grabbed the exposed end of the bamboo pole as he rapidly swam back into the lake. Circulating the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune at full strength, the bamboo pole was unexpectedly pulled into a crescent shape and continued to issue out cracking sounds that cause people's teeth to sour.

With the pole being bent as far back as possible, Jun Mo Xie had suddenly let go of the poles after exhausting his strength reserves, his naked body swimming away extremely rapidly far away.

The bent bamboo pole straightened out with tremendous energy, and a droning weng resounded out.

## Chapter 102: So White

---

Jun Mo Xie noticed a long time ago that, while this man had aimed to strike him dead with the bamboo pole, he had also held back so that he could use the pole as a foothold. This point is further supported by his diving position; he had kept both legs pointed down toward the lake during his descent. An ordinary expert in this scenario would typically dive head first which would more than double his current speed.

This exposes a critical weakness. This Lord Liu, this aloof and dominant peak Gold Xuan level expert, he...does not know how to swim!

Jun Mo Xie had figured out this point in that split second. Therefore, he immediately pulled back the bamboo pole. As long as he could pull apart the bamboo pole, that Lord Liu will have nowhere to find a foothold and would have to drown himself to try and catch him!

But Jun Mo Xie did not anticipate that the bamboo pole was not only very tenacious, but the lake bed was also very deep. Having pulled on the pole to no avail and realizing that the man is closing in, he was forced to give up. A stark naked body, resembling a big whitefish squeezing a bit of jet-black aquatic plants, swimming away...

Lord Liu had decided earlier that this cowardly eavesdropping individual would certainly not be a difficult opponent. Although he doesn't know how to swim, he can still attack, retreat, and defend with the aid of the bamboo pole. When the water arrow shot out at him, Lord Liu waved his sleeves and immediately swept it to one side. This revealed that his opponent's ability was not high, and became even more relieved. But when he neared the water, he discovered that the bamboo pole head that was recently just in front of him had unexpectedly disappeared!

Panic. Like a moth to the flame, he was unable to stop himself from plunging into the water. Before he had time to collect himself, he saw two big white buttocks not too far in front of him gently swaying toward the distance—and he couldn't help but become angry!

At this moment, the water in front of him churned with life and, with a droning sound, a long bamboo pole surge up violently, propelling a current of water at great speed!

If he knew how to swim, he would naturally evade in time. But he didn't know how to swim, was still panicking from the plunge, and was preoccupied with thoughts of drowning. How would he be able to pay attention to this "bang" sound?

The bamboo pole that had been haphazardly drawn back earlier was situated between his two legs. Striking hard and fast, a blood-curdling scream had not even been issued yet when his body instinctively folded forward causing his forehead to smash into the bamboo pole!

Letting out a pitiful cry, Lord Liu was sent flying and spinning like a kite with its string cut, losing so much blood that caused him to look like salted fish that's been dried in the sun. Flying towards the pleasure boat direction, the last memory before his consciousness faded was facing a pair of big white buttocks gently swaying...they were very white!

A quick and agile figure flew off from the pleasure boat, unexpectedly radiating brilliant silvery light. Lady Yue'er received Lord Liu's body in her arms before returning to the boat with the rope that she had tied around her waist earlier...

After landing back on the boat, Lady Yue'er had a complicated expression on her face as she looked toward the distance—the spy was long gone. In this pitch-black night and after this delay, there was very little chance she would catch up even if she had wanted to give chase...

The previously awe-inspiring Lord Liu was now lying at her feet, unconscious...

Hidden in a clump of reed on the other side of the lake, Jun Mo Xie still had lingering fear as he crawled ashore. He took advantage of the night to go streaking, all the while thanking his lucky stars. If he had not cultivated the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune to its current level, perhaps he would already have been severely injured if not dead! He truly must be blessed.

Knocking out a satisfied patron coming out of the brothel whose two legs were too weak to walk, Jun Mo Xie very nimbly pulled off his clothes and disappeared like a wisp of smoke.

On the ground, a stark naked and plump body splayed out in the shape of a Chinese character for the word 'big', facing the sky. A small, earthworm-like thing collapsed askew in his crotch area...

The eight Jun Family bodyguards were going insane looking everywhere for their family's young master. They are acutely aware that they were in a difficult situation.

If Grandpa Jun was to become aware of their negligence of duty to protect the young master, not only would they be unable to escape punishment. If this young master's grandpa creates havoc again...these men did not dare to continue this line of thought.

After searching late into the night, the eight exhausted bodyguards returned to the main gate of the Jun Residence. Suddenly, they caught a glimpse of a figure that looked very similar to their family's young master and hastily ran over.

Why were they not certain this was their young master? Because the man was wearing an extremely loose robe and his appearance was a total mess. Although Young Master Jun was a complete good for nothing debauchee, his appearance was always regarded as pretty good as he usually attaches great importance to how he looks. That is why they were half-determined that this sorry figure was not the one they are searching for. But how can two different

people look so similar?

So those eight bodyguards continued to stare intently, and simultaneously called out in a pleasant surprise, unable to contain their joy!

This looks very much like their young master but also appear to be just a dirty pedestrian.

That's just the way Young Master Jun is?

"What are the eight of you doing? I was scared shitless in the afternoon by that little girl Ling Meng's bullshit bodyguard. Hmph! Hmph! I called out to you all several times and to my great surprise, not a single one responded."

Young Master Jun hurried along while shaking his head, appearing to hate iron for not being steel — resenting them for not being there when he needed them.

"Was he not just a Sky Xuan level expert? Did you get scared just from that? I'm getting angry just looking your stupid expressions. You might as well go first!"

Uh? What?!

The eight men immediately recalled that after Ye Gu Han had bellowed out in extreme anger, they had been despondent for a split second. Could it be that the young master called out right at that moment but we did not respond, and so he ran away after panting with rage? They stared dumbstruck at Jun Mo Xie; their minds were all simultaneously confused.

They actually hadn't remembered to ask. Since you went off by yourself, why would we come back at the same time? We went to all four corners of Tianxiang City to look for you. Where have you been all this time?

Furthermore, why are you dressed in the loose-fitting, intolerably vulgar clothes that only the newly rich would wear? Furthermore, why does your hair look like it's wet?



"Don't be distracted and quickly give me the Blazing Heart Meridian." One of Jun Mo Xie's leg has already crossed the threshold of the gate and didn't even turn around before speaking. The bodyguards woke up as if from a dream, mechanically moving in step, to follow after the mysterious young master inside. Almost everyone was bewildered. How were the young master's legs moving so rapidly? Was he possessed?!

How unpleasant. The frigid wind blew inside Young Master Jun's current billowing gown as he hurried to change clothes. If people ever found out that he first swam naked, ran naked and then stripped another man of his clothes, then his entire life's illustrious reputation as an assassin would certainly be lost in the Spirit Fog Lake...

The Jun Residence's gate closed tightly shut behind everyone!

Deep into the night when the moon was high in the sky, Jun Wu Yi was still sitting in his wheelchair as before, absentmindedly drinking by himself and calmly waiting for his nephew to come. In the sky, the gentle moonlight spilled upon his steadfast face, light and shadow danced across his tranquil and esoteric expression.

A wishful gaze, a hopeful gaze, an expecting gaze, or could it have possibly been...

A desperate gaze!

A sound came from the courtyard gate as a Jun Mo Xie, dressed in his own gown, walked in with a grin.

Jun Wu Yi slowly turned his wheelchair unhurriedly and calmly examined Jun Mo Xie up and down to discover not a single problem, only then was he relaxed and said. "I heard you...created a large commotion in the afternoon at Magnificent Jewel Hall?"

"Yep!" Jun Mo Xie spoke bluntly. "Magnificent Jewel Hall is too arrogant!" But he suddenly sensed that something was wrong. When Third Uncle spoke about Magnificent Jewel Hall, why did he

pause in the middle? His tone was also not very suitable.

Jun Wu Yi had downcast eyes and was silent for a long time before slowly speaking. "Do you have any idea that I broke out in a cold sweat once I got this news. Your grandpa appears to be fine on the outside, but I know that he is scared! Mo Xie, uncle know that you have courage, but...unless it is absolutely necessary—a life or death crisis—never have any conflict with Magnificent Jewel Hall. Our Jun Family...cannot...afford to offend the Magnificent Jewel Hall, at least for the time being. Do you understand?!" He spoke this sentence very slowly, carefully pronouncing every word; it's hard to imagine that such words of resignation came from the mouth of such an unyielding, lion-hearted man.

Jun Mo Xie was stunned, slowly sat down in front of him and said, "Third Uncle, it's not like you to say these words. Is this Magnificent Jewel Hall really so frightening?! Even you are afraid of them!"

Jun Wu Yi turned his head away, wouldn't let him see the look in his eyes and replied in a cold, indifferent tone.

"If I were alone, I'd naturally not be afraid of the Magnificent Jewel Hall! Even if the Magnificent Jewel Hall were to be stronger by a hundredfold, what can they do? A man has but one life, grass has but one spring, so if death comes then so be it!

And I know you are the same, Mo Xie, I know that you fear neither the heaven nor earth and this Third Uncle is very pleased. But I always feel you don't have a strong sense of family, so I want you to promise me! To always keep in mind that you are the youngest generation of a noble family! That behind you, there is a large and deeply rooted Jun Family!"

"Most of the time, the family is your greatest support, but occasionally, it can also be your most significant setback!" Jun Wu Yi looked up. His eyes betrayed many things that he could not put into words. "As long as there is hope for the family, we...must not

give up! This is the glory of the family and also its tragedy and responsibility!"

Jun Mo Xie was silent for a long time before replying with a smile. "I understand!"

"It's good that you understand." Jun Wu Yi smiled mildly. "In this matter, I have been waiting for you all night. Since you understand now, have a drink with me."

"Drink? Let's postpone this for another time. I'm afraid Uncle will not be able to drink wine for the next fortnight. But first, I would like to congratulate Third Uncle because the five kinds of medicinal herbs are now in our possession."

Jun Mo Xie smiled.

"And I have already determined from checking your pulse that you are ready as early as a half month ago! Third Uncle, in another ten days, you can tear down the thing you are sitting on now and light it on fire. That day also happens to be when the restriction on your diet can be lifted!

# Chapter 103: Treating The Poison!

---

Jun Wu Yi's hands trembled causing the wine from his cup to spill. He silently looked at the wheelchair handle that was supporting his right hand. Although he remained completely emotionless on the outside, his heart was pounding, and his mind was reeling from the news!

Ten years as a cripple!

Now he was able to see a glimmer of light!

Jun Wu Yi remained taciturn and did not say a word before Jun Mo Xie left.

Three days later, Jun Zhan Tian directly sealed the main gates and made an announcement.

In the following days, no guests will be welcomed except by the royal decree of His Majesty! If anyone dares to take a step inside the inner courtyard without permission, he will be killed without question!

The oppressive atmosphere that enveloped the Jun Family was as if it were the eve of a great battle! The air was so thick and oppressive that some were unable to breathe!

The doors to the inner courtyard were securely closed. Two rows of guards stood at attention outside with their swords unsheathed. The blades of their swords were glistening with the reflection of the ardent sun in the sky. Human figures could be seen moving in the shadows. The might of Jun Family that had once shaken the capital was out on full display at this moment.

Moreover, these guards were all veterans who have served for decades as the backbone of Jun Zhan Tian's elite forces. Even if they have any personal misgivings, they will discard such thoughts when they are on assignment. Each and every one was loyal and worthy of trust!

Every possible and even impossible threat must be accounted for during this operation. Not a single thread or hair can be out of place!

On the other side of the four zhang tall perimeter walls, a massive iron cauldron was positioned in the center of the inner courtyard. The size of the cauldron was so great that it could have been described as a small-sized water reservoir.

It had been filled with water and was raised on top of a raging fire. Six burly men continuously added firewood as bubbles start to emerge on the water surface.

Jun Zhan Tian's entire body is dressed in black and was wearing a pair of strange gloves with long sleeves that completely covered the rest of his arms. A solemn expression appeared on his face as he paced anxiously back and forth in the courtyard.

In contrast, the white-clothed Jun Wu Yi's appearance was exceedingly tranquil. It seems that he had come to terms with his inner demons and cast off the shackles on his heart!

Jun Mo Xie was nearby organizing the Nine Leaf Grass, Common Heart Grass, and Persistent Severing Root on a table next to an oversized jade basin. Using both his hands to place the herbs into the basin, mashing them up to extract their juice, and collecting it in a wide mouthed jade bottle. His movements were swift but controlled and methodical.

Jun Mo Xie finally called out. "Third Uncle!"

Jun Wu Yi trembled from head to toe as a bright-yellow Earth level Xuan Qi rippled out and shredded the gown covering his body. Grandpa Jun flashed forward to support his son's body in a supine position. Jun Mo Xie promptly spread the dregs that remained in the basin on every inch of Jun Wu Yi's body.

The five medicinal herbs prescribed by Jun Mo Xie were all highly toxic weeds! Just one by itself was so lethal that a victim

could take no more than seven steps uphill, eight steps downhill or nine steps on level ground before dying.

Now with three of the herbs, Jun Wu Yi instantly felt as though he had been thrown inside a blazing inferno as searing pain spread from head to toe. He held in a groan and clenched his teeth as cold sweat dripped down from forehead! The kind of excruciating pain caused by applying three deadly toxins simultaneously on his body simply could not be put into words!

But this was only the beginning!

Without any hesitation, Jun Mo Xie swiftly snatched the jade bottle, pressed down on Jun Wu Yi's chin to open his clenched jaws, and poured the contents of the bottle down his throat!

The concentrated liquid had slid down Jun Wu Yi's throat before he had time to react, causing him to feel as if a ball of fire was burning him from the inside out. He couldn't endure the pain anymore and was just about to shout out in pain when Jun Mo Xie heartlessly stuffed his mouth with a balled-up piece of plain white cloth that he had prepared long ago.

Jun Zhan Tian shivered as he watched Jun Mo Xie work with such practiced ease that he was even beginning to suspect that his grandson may have tortured others before!

His expression became increasingly wretched; how can a father continue to watch his son suffer at the hands of his grandson?!

"This is something that had to be done. Even a person with a high tolerance will succumb to this extreme pain. It is highly likely that he would have bitten off his tongue if I did not intervene by stuffing his mouth."

In the time that Jun Mo Xie took to explain himself, he had already prepared the Intestinal Cracker Flower in the same way as the previous three herbs and even took a short break.

Suddenly, the three deadly toxins simultaneously flared up inside

Jun Wu Yi as his skin transformed to a shade of purple and black! The change had just appeared when Jun Mo Xie sprinkled the Intestinal Cracker Flower fragments evenly on his body. Moving at extreme speeds, Jun Mo Xie removed the gag in his uncle's mouth, poured the Intestinal Cracker Flower's extract down his throat, and stuffed his mouth once more before he was even aware of what happened! Jun Wu Yi let out a muffled scream as his bloodshot eyes bulged out.

The potent extract of the Intestinal Cracker Flower reacted explosively with the cocktail of poisons already inside his body and rapidly spread from his insides outwards. Jun Wu Yi could feel a wave of soul-searing pain rush forth from his dantian and frantically course through the parts of his body that had been severely injured ten years ago!

The four poisons did not exist in a state of harmony inside Jun Wu Yi's body and was constantly attacking and resisting each other. His bare skin transformed once again—this time to the colors of the rainbow—as an unbearable pain emerged from the parts of his body that he had once believed would be unable to feel such sensations again!

The deep-seated poison that had been hidden in his legs for a decade was finally being forced out!

Jun Mo Xie sighed in relief as he stared attentively at the crotch area between Jun Wu Yi's legs. At such a critical moment, Jun Mo Xie couldn't refrain himself from thinking in his mind.

It appears that mine is...bigger!

While this thought surfaced in his mind, his grandfather was having an emotional outburst.

"Stand up! I said stand up!"

The old man's white beard trembled as he vigorously pointed at his son's crotch. As if heeding the call, the little Wu Yi shook its

head before suddenly becoming a pillar that was able to support the sky! The movement was so sudden that it almost pushed against the bridge of the old man's nose as he had previously moved closer for a closer examination.

When Jun Mo Xie proceeded forward with the Blazing Heart Meridian, his grandpa jumped up in fright and almost fell over. Shaking his head, Jun Mo Xie reprimanded. "He needs to stand up. If he can't stand then what is the purpose of this treatment?! Is it worth making such a fuss over something so small?!"

Grandpa Jun repeatedly hiccupped, unconcerned about his grandson chiding him, as his face lit up with a hard to conceal delight. His disabled son has had finally recovered a man's basic function after ten long years. To speak of nothing else, the Jun Family was able to grow branches and scatter leaves\*. This was something that he had always brooded over and his son's recovery simply could not have arrived at a better time! This was great news!

[\*add to the family tree by having children.]

Jun Wu Yi's lips trembled and his face grimaced in pain. A warm sensation could be felt in his lower region followed by the stench of urine. In his mind, he had a thought, the once originally famous iron-blooded man, a veteran of a hundred battles, has now unexpectedly...

Only in his fading consciousness, he could make out two men — one old and one young — unexpectedly unable to take their eyes off his junk as he loses control of his bowel movement. Between the smell and the shame, he gave a pitiful groan before directly fainting!

What the eye doesn't see, the heart doesn't grieve over!

As to the pair of men doggedly staring at the middle-aged man's treasure? The old one wanted to reach out to fiddle with it! This isn't something an ordinary man can endure! Even if he was his



father, hasn't the Jun Third Master reached more than thirty years old of age?

The several men who had been maintaining the fire all poked their head up in succession to take a peep before quickly lowering their head in shame and returned to adding firewood. An impressive general is an impressive general. He can still be so awe-inspiring even after ten years of inactivity. We really are inferior...

After a while, every part of Jun Wu Yi's skin finished changing into a bright multicolored color—

"It's time!" Jun Mo Xie roared. His left hand swiftly pressed on Jun Wu Yi's chin while his right hand circulated the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune to break the skin of the Blazing Heart Meridian. A viscous black liquid gushed out and dripped into Jun Wu Yi's mouth before he gagged his mouth again, but he also used another strip of cloth to cover his mouth before tying a knot behind Jun Wu Yi's head. Even if he regains consciousness, it was simply impossible for him to spit out the white cloth!

Finishing up, Jun Mo Xie effortlessly discarded the skin of the Blazing Heart Meridian. His right hand continued circulating the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune as he firmly pressed against Jun Wu Yi's chest and directly injected his Spiritual Qi!

In the blink of an eye, Jun Wu Yi's body swelled up like a balloon at a speed visible to the naked eye. His meridians gradually appeared on the surface of his skin winding like countless purple earthworms, appearing sinister and extremely nauseating.

At Jun Mo Xie's prompting, Jun Zhan Tian reached out with one hand before an illusory tool formed from azure colored Xuan Qi materialized out of thin air. In no time at all, he had finished constructing a crude bamboo raft before throwing it directly into the large caldron. At this moment, the water temperature had almost reached the boiling point!

Jun Mo Xie leaped up into the air with Jun Wu Yi's body before

releasing him over the large caldron. Right before impact, his body slowed down before gently landing face up on the bamboo raft.

Jun Mo Xie followed soon after, landing as light as a feather on the raft and extending out both hands. Under the earnest gaze of Jun Zhan Tian, several dozen shimmering silver needles appeared out of thin air on both of Jun Mo Xie's hands!

A needle flashed as it inserted into Jun Wu Yi's Hundred Convergence point. His movement was direct and efficient and did not betray the slightest hesitation. Even the usually steady Jun Zhan Tian shivered from head to toe.

Just a single misplaced needle could hit a lethal acupuncture point and kill his son. But even his best efforts couldn't stop him from blinking and rubbing his eyes.

As he rubbed his eyes, the silver needles in Jun Mo Xie's hand rapidly issued forth and entered the rest of the acupuncture points on Jun Wu Yi. Jun Mo Xie kicked out with his tiptoes to flip Jun Wu Yi's body in the air before landing prone on the bamboo raft.

Jun Mo Xie extended out his two hands once again causing more needles to appear. After several more flashes, all the silver needles were inserted Jun Wu Yi's wide back! With a sigh of relief, Jun Mo Xie pulled the bamboo raft from under Jun Wu Yi and his body directly rolled into the steaming hot water!

The water surface constantly lets out "glug glug" boiling sounds as the water temperature steadily rose. Jet-black liquid continuously exuded from Jun Wu Yi's pores and the seven orifices of his head. In a moment, the large basin of water had been dyed pitch-black in color similar to ink!

# Chapter 104: Accidental Ecstasy

---

Jun Zhan Tian's eyebrows twitched violently, and his two eyes opened so wide they became perfectly round! He had never seen nor had he ever heard of this poison therapy, but the fact that Jun Wu Yi was still alive was already sufficient proof of the effectiveness of the treatment.

However, when the old man looked down at his body and then back up at the open caldron of water, he felt a chill run down his back. If he were to fall in, he estimated that he wouldn't last long even with his Sky Xuan Realm Xuan Qi protecting his body. Perhaps, it would only take a short period before he was cooked and ready to eat...

The men stoking the fire were also drenched in cold sweat; not because of the heat, but because they were terrified!

This is crazy...to actually cook a living person in boiling water?!

What if..what if he dies, then what?

With this temperature, it would rather have been more difficult to not boil something thoroughly!

Jun Mo Xie was firmly standing on the rim of the cauldron, his unblinking eyes watching Jun Wu Yi's body that was gently revolving in the water for any signs of change. Jun Mo Xie maintained a calm disposition; his face serene, expressionless, and unfeeling!

Suddenly, Jun Mo Xie extended his left hand in and out of the boiling water without hesitation and fished out Jun Wu Yi's body. Just that momentary exposure left large blisters on his hand; partly from the scalding temperature and partly from the corrosive effect of the toxin!

In contrast, Jun Wu Yi's skin had turned fair and white; the frightening and grotesque colors from earlier have all but faded.

At the moment his body flew down and landed in Grandpa Jun's hands, Jun Mo Xie already placed his right palm on Jun Wu Yi's dantian and unleashed the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune at full strength!

As time passed, Jun Mo Xie's complexion became increasingly pale while Jun Wu Yi's skin became increasingly rosy...

Finally—

A silver needle was slowly forced out of Jun Wu Yi's body—shaking and trembling — until the needle was fully expelled, triggering a spurt of black blood to fly out.

And following it, more blood flew out...until finally, the needle inserted into the Bai Hui point flew out, leaving a fine trail of six colored blood.

Jun Mo Xie let out a hum before he released his palm and quickly sat cross-legged; he calmly controlled his breathing—his face as pale as paper! Before he released his palm, Jun Wu Yi eyes had suddenly opened to issue forth an acute light! A light blue radiance!

Light blue! This meant?!

The deadly poisons, unsealed meridians, and Jun Wu Yi's ten years of accumulated Xuan Qi all exploded out at the same time! Along with the high efficacy of the Blazing Heart Meridian, he had directly broken through from Earth Xuan level to the Sky Xuan level!

Ascending three stages in the blink of an eye! Not only that, but Jun Wu Yi will henceforth be immune to hundreds of poisons after being refined by the Blazing Heart Meridian! A super-strong expert was born!

Seeing the light blue radiance, Jun Zhan Tian immediately jumped up high, exclaimed out loud, and his eye bulged out as if he had just seen a ghost! He had even unconsciously pulled out a tuft

of white beard with his right hand!

He had diligently trained for a greater part of his life and had only reached the Sky Xuan level. It had already been remarkable that his son had been able to cultivate to the Earth Xuan level at his age; all the more so when he had achieved this result in the space of ten years that he had been severely injured and bound to a wheelchair.

But to be able to ascend to the Sky Xuan Realm as if riding a rocket after opening his sealed meridians!?

Unbelievable!

The old man shook his head, his heart was torn; happy, grateful, excited, a little terrified, but mostly still questioning if this was actually happening! On the one hand, he was so happy that he wanted to sing and dance. On the other hand, he had a bittersweet feeling in his heart; bitter because this could all be a dream and sweet because he had not awaken from it yet.

Jun Wu Yi felt a tingling sensation surge from his two legs that have been paralyzed for past ten years. The Xuan Qi effortlessly coursed through his meridians. He was moved to tears!

I am finally able to stand up again!

Enemies of the past, I, Jun Wu Yi, vow that I will hunt you down soon enough, and you will pay for your sins!

He stood up with one swift motion to experience the sensation of using his two legs to walk again.

"Third Uncle, you still need to sit down for the time being. Please be patient and endure for a short while longer."

Jun Mo Xie's tired voice came from behind.

"It is imperative that you currently condense and circulate your Xuan Qi. The medicinal strength of the Blazing Heart Meridian is high, and it has already neutralized and flushed out the other

poisons from your body.

However, all of its therapeutic effects remain untouched within Third Uncle's body. If you do not absorb it as soon as possible, it will degrade and the benefits will be lost. Moreover, Third Uncle had not moved your legs in ten years so your blood vessels will definitely be blocked. You will require a long period of rehabilitation before you can make a full recovery.

Jun Mo Xie closed his eyes and slowly explained.

This unexpected breakthrough was a moment of ecstasy but also a major obstacle in one's path of cultivation! However, if one can seize this unique opportunity to meditate and strengthen their mind, there will be great benefits toward one's consciousness and future cultivation!

One has to know that the medicinal strength of a five-hundred-year-old Blazing Heart Meridian was extremely formidable; it can single-handedly fight against the poisons that were previously within Jun Wu Yi's body.

But other than the Blazing Heart Meridian's fierce toxicity, its therapeutic effects were also exceedingly outstanding. According to Jun Mo Xie's plan, he would borrow the Blazing Heart Meridian's potency to forcefully resist the other poisons' toxic effects and then he would utilize the boiling water and silver needles to expel the poison in one go.

There were no accidents when he was executing these steps as everything went rather smoothly without a hitch. Subsequently, he had intended to revitalize his uncle's body using the Blazing Heart Meridian's therapeutic properties.

So Young Master Jun then decided to modify his original plan and used his Xuan Art to nourish his Third Uncle's body after the poison had been neutralized. Not only had his idea worked out but the results had far exceeded his expectation; Third Uncle's body had been completely reborn within an hour of the treatment and

the therapeutic benefits of the Blazing Heart Meridian were not even needed.

Instead, its essence had entirely transformed into pure Xuan Qi and assimilated into Third Uncle's body. When this was combined with the Xuan Qi accumulated from Third Uncle's ten years of bitter closed-door cultivation, the amount of pure Xuan Qi was equivalent to the product of at least fifty years of ordinary cultivation. This explained why Jun Wu Yi could break through to become a Sky Xuan Expert!

All of this was credited to Jun Mo Xie's 'Fortune' Xuan Art; as the saying goes, when conditions are right, success will follow naturally!

Jun Wu Yi paused and did not dare to dismiss his nephew's instructions. Sitting cross-legged, he tried his utmost to clear his mind so that he could enter the state of cultivation as quickly as possible. Even so, it took a lot more time than usual for him to stabilize his consciousness. As the Xuan Qi finally began to circulate throughout his meridians, he slowly became unconscious to the outside world.

Jun Mo Xie had only sat down for a moment before Spiritual Qi had rushed out of the Honjun Pagoda and replenished the energy he had depleted from using the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune. Slow to his feet, he saw Jun Zhan Tian's meaningful glance and the emotions expressed in his eyes.

"Mo Xie..." Jun Zhan Tian stared blankly at his grandson for a moment before bursting into tears! This old-aged, white-haired Grandpa Jun was unable to say a word and wept bitterly.

A once-in-a-generation, famous general who have caused sovereigns to be stricken with fear and generals to flee at his presence, had unexpectedly lost self-control?!

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel pain in his heart as he solemnly lowered his head.

Who knows how much the old man had suffered over the years? What kind of torment had he endured?!

He originally enjoyed many descendants, joyous and harmonious, respected and revered, and served only one and had dominion over millions. Suddenly, two of his sons passed away in succession as casualties of war and his surviving son was crippled for life. How can any father bear such a burden?

An orphan in his youth, a widower in his middle-age, and bereaved father who lost his sons in his old age!

Jun Zhan Tian had reached the highest official position but had lost everything else!

But the heavens did not think he had been punished severely enough. The two grandsons that he had put his heart into nurturing, where he had placed all his hopes and dreams, would never return from their military expedition on the eve of their weddings. Even their bodies were never recovered.

Before the news arrived, Jun Zhan Tian was in the midst of ordering people to decorate the bridal chambers, looking forward to his grandsons' return to get married and the day he can hold his great-grandson. He believed from the bottom of his heart that this moment would be the happiest in his life.

When Jun Zhan Tian received the news, his hair and beard turned white overnight! The former days of a loving family sitting in a circle cheerfully talking and laughing were gone forever! Besides himself, such a big family had been reduced to a handicapped son and a disappointing grandson!

Despair filled his eyes!

As a result, Jun Zhan Tian's spirit continued to go lower; he had already fallen into depression and lost all hope!

But in his moment of absolute despair, his once incomparably disappointing grandson, Jun Mo Xie, had an unexpected change of



heart; gone was the debauchee, replaced with a lofty and unyielding character who acts with according to propriety—profound in his schemes, flexible in his thoughts, and circumspect in his attitude. This had already brought comfort to Grandpa Jun's heart and had raised his spirits immensely! But he didn't expect that the biggest surprise was yet to come...

All the renowned doctors from the Kingdom had diagnosed his son's disability as impossible to treat, yet his grandson had now achieved the impossible!

Heaven is merciful! Jun Zhan Tian's tears fell unhindered as he cried tears of joy! All of his sorrow and anxiety these past ten years have been swept clean. Heaven's mercy allowed his Jun Family to grasp today and have hope for the future!

Jun Family had not only gained a capable heir, but the student had also surpassed the master. The old man closed his eyes at this moment and did not have any regrets! He could proudly face the ancestors of the Jun Family! The old man was deeply moved and remained speechless, but his body continuously trembled...

After a long time...

A deep, low, and clear hum were heard as Jun Wu Yi's black hair flew up; light burst forth from his eyes as he slowly got off the ground—this was the first time in ten years that he had relied on his two legs to stand up!

## Chapter 105: Grand Preceptor Li and the Jade Sea Coral

---

Slowly lowering his head to inspect his now healthy and strong legs, he slowly moved a few times before kicking a few times as his confidence grew. Suddenly, he broke out into laughter and smiled from ear to ear until he was in tears. This general who had once shaken the world, an iron blooded man who did not shed tears when he suffered a plot against him, had broken down in tears when he had recovered!

He saw, with tears in his eyes, the affectionate moment between his father and his son. A surge of emotions overwhelmed him and, with a quick two steps, suddenly plopped down on his knees.

"This unworthy child pays respect to father!" It's been ten years... ten years where he was unable to give such a gift to his father!

Jun Zhan Tian was trembling from head to toe as he faltered. "My son...stand up. Quickly. Quickly stand up..."

"Mo Xie!" Jun Wu Yi stood up and stared deeply at Jun Mo Xie. "You have given me back my life..."

Before he could finish, Jun Mo Xie's laughter interrupted him.

"Third Uncle, you speak as if you were not already alive and well. Besides, I'm your nephew; could it be that we have to write out two 'Jun' with one brush? There's no need for petty distinctions between family members. Not to mention that this is part of my duty as the younger generation."

Jun Wu Yi let out a deep, hearty laugh and stared deeply at his nephew; he had made a wholehearted decision at this moment.

Since I can stand, I'll bear Jun Family's heavy burden upon my shoulders!

My, Jun Wu Yi's, long sword that had been covered in dust for

ten years is once more unsheathed; not for king and country, and not for the common people! But for the Jun Family, and for—Mo Xie!

"Third Uncle." Jun Mo Xie suddenly started laughing uncontrollably; it was rather strange as if he harbored mischievous intention. The two men were at a loss and looked at him in confusion.

"Third Uncle, your asset is quite something, but..." Jun Mo Xie was now shaking all over from laughing, "...this valiant and spirited bearing; although grandpa definitely won't mind, your nephew is still a little embarrassed. You should...cover up, Hahaha..."

Jun Mo Xie winked as he lowered his gaze toward Jun Wu Yi's lower half. Jun Wu Yi had been stark naked during his treatment and subsequent meditation. After he had discovered his complete recovery, he had completely neglected this point under his emotional state of mind. Up until now, he still was still exposed, wagging his lower head in a high-spirited manner.

Ten years he had been waiting for this day and yet, he did not know when to test his gun?!

Jun Zhan Tian was prompted by Mo Xie's words to look at his son's majestic thing and also couldn't help blowing his beard as he burst into loud laughter.

Jun Wu Yi's long face immediately turned purple like an eggplant, indignantly gnashing his teeth.

"Little brat, wait a minute just a minute, I'll right back to teach you a lesson!" He barely made a sound as he disappeared; leaving behind a grandfather and his grandson holding their stomach, laughing without any restraint or regards to their image.

A short while later, Jun Wu Yi reappeared dressed in black, rolling up his sleeves as he said.

"Boy, have some guts and don't flee."

Jun Mo Xie jumped out of his skin and screamed. "Save me! I will not fight..." turned around and ran away. But how can his speed compare to Jun Wu Yi who had recently advanced to Sky Xuan expert?

The sound of buttocks being struck echoed out around the courtyard.

Jun Mo Xie was laughing one moment then begging for forgiveness the next as he ran for dear life. Jun Wu Yi completely ignored him and continued to beat his ass. Seeing no other choice, Jun Mo Xie suddenly stopped to change direction before taking a big leap forward to hide behind Grandpa Jun. Jun Wu Yi snorted in exasperation and continued to chase and strike.

Even though Grandpa Jun had the strength of a Sky Xuan expert, he still became dizzy and light-headed from these two people running circles around him. However, he was not upset at all but rather enjoyed this moment as he continued to laugh. It had been a very, very long time since this scene of family love and joy had appeared in this household.

Seeing the six burly men who had tended to the fire preparing to tip over the giant iron cauldron, Jun Mo Xie hastily shouted out. "Stop! I still have a use for that so do not dump it!"

When he yelled out, Jun Wu Yi and Jun Zhan Tian were simultaneously flabbergasted. Jun Wu Yi wasn't seriously disciplining his nephew; all three men had been grinning from ear to ear. He had long since forgotten about the awkward situation.

"How can you dispose of it so casually? This is incredibly valuable." Jun Mo Xie drove away the men by iron cauldron and picked up a leather bag that was off to the side. He poured its content into the pitch-black water, and the surface exploded just like pouring water onto hot oil.

Jun Mo Xie quickly backed away after he emptied the bag, only to see the black water splash out from the cauldron onto the ground.

The ground where the water landed immediately turned jet-black!

Jun Wu Yi and Grandpa Jun were dumbstruck. This poison is too...malicious!

"What did you add? How can it be so tyrannical?!"

Grandpa Jun did not feel ashamed from asking and learning from his grandson; the old man had understood that his grandson had lots of strange tricks up his sleeves and anything that he does would not be ordinary.

"It was just snake venom, but there were many different kinds." Jun Mo Xie explained unhurriedly. "There are thirteen kinds of viper venom altogether." Jun Mo Xie pointed at the big iron cauldron. "Grandfather, Third Uncle, take a look. The bath water in the cauldron is comprised of six highly lethal poisons, but their overbearing properties perfectly complement and subdue one another causing them to exist in harmony. Adding the snake venom disrupts this precarious balance and converts the water in the cauldron into the deadliest poison known to man! If we soak the weapons from our family's armories in this solution for several days, then the soldiers under our command will be able to wield weapons that will cause our enemies' heart and lungs to fail. If this is deployed during wartime, hehehehe..."

Too cruel! Too malicious! Too despicable! Too shameless!

If such weapons were used against enemy soldiers..., just a small cut on the skin would be capable of killing a man!

Even Grandpa Jun with his Sky Xuan level cultivation might not necessarily survive past an hour if he was afflicted by this ultimate poison!

Horrifying! It really made one's hair stand up!

Both of Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi stretched their necks with their eyes wide open, staring at Jun Mo Xie like they were looking at a demon that had escaped from hell and simultaneously broke into cold sweat...

...

Compared to Jun Family's harmonious joy and jubilation, a cloud of anxiety hung over the Grand Preceptor's manor at this moment!

Even though Li Zhen and Meng Hai Zhou were driven out of the Magnificent Jewel Hall, and the Li Family had been prohibited from returning to the auction house, it was only a minor inconvenience so long as they still have access to the Meng Family's box.

Moreover, the two of them had successfully bidden on the Jade Sea Coral and brought it back to the manor without incident. Just this point is already a great achievement—it would be fair to say that this is their biggest achievement to date!

But after Li You Ran saw the Jade Seal Coral, the smug smile that Li Zhen had kept concealed was replaced by fear and trepidation as he recounted the events at the auction house. Li Zhen had thought that Li You Ran would punish him in anger and waited on tenterhooks until Li You Ran gently said one line.

"Oh? Only a measly 5 million taels of silver? That's not bad considering you were able to obtain the Jade Sea Coral even with the Tang Family's interference. Little Brother Zhen, you can go to Accountant Li and receive payment for of 3 million taels of silver." Li You Ran unexpectedly did not mention the shame and humiliation of having their access to the Magnificent Jewel Hall revoked. It was truly baffling.

Li Zhen and Meng Hai Zhou could hardly believe what they were hearing and were almost convinced that the person standing in front of them was not Li You Ran but a body double—when did the young master become so nice?

The two of them were staring blankly for half the day as if they had just woken up from a deep sleep. They were trying to understand what happened but couldn't come up with anything. In the end, they couldn't help but let out a deep sigh and thank their lucky stars.

Li You Ran was calmly sitting with a faint smile on his face as he looked at the sparkling and translucent Jade Sea Coral in front of him. After a while, he deeply exhaled and thought to himself.

"I was almost too careless not to have considered that old man Tang would also want this item. If I had let this great opportunity slip, it would certainly have been due to my negligence.

If I had not sent these two who had nothing but being born with a gold spoon but sent someone else, wouldn't the latter be intimidated by the exorbitant price and give up on bidding for the Jade Sea Coral? This may be the only good quality of being born in a wealthy family. As the saying goes, every dog has its day. Everyone will have good luck or success at some point in their lives. This is probably what that means..."

Having thought up to this point, he chuckled softly before circulating Xuan Qi through his palm into the Jade Sea Coral. A golden aura had flashed across his whole body before he pulled back his hand, a cheerful expression on his face.

The rumors were indeed true; there was an extraordinary amount of pure energy inside this treasure! If his grandfather can absorb this energy, it would still easily extend his life even if he cannot cultivate Xuan arts again.

Gracefully standing up, he walked toward Grand Preceptor Li Shang's study while holding the Jade Sea Coral.

Inside the study, Grand Preceptor Li narrowed his eyes as he examined the Jade Sea Coral in front of him. A happy expression soon revealed itself on his face, not just because of the benefits to his health, but more so because of his grandson's filial piety. Grand

Preceptor Li suddenly felt blessed to have such a grandson in his life; what more could he have asked for?

"Grandfather, the matter should not be delayed. A long night has naught but trouble—we do not know if the others will catch on. Why don't we follow the method that my master had previously disclosed? Let me promptly draw out this pure energy, and then grandfather will absorb this treasure as soon as possible." Li You Ran smiled with poise.

Li Shang chuckled and then pondered. "That is also good. Go and get your men to come here so that we can start cultivating."

Li You Ran nodded in agreement before clapping his hands twice; the footsteps of someone approaching was heard moments later. A respectful and sincere voice reported.

"Lord, Young Master, we have already cleared the area thirty zhangs surrounding the study. Is this adequate?"

Li You Ran gently said. "Enough."

The people outside responded without a sound.

Li Shang looked at his grandson with satisfaction and asked. "Your seniors have already returned?"

Li You Ran replied. "Yes. They have already returned to the mountain and had a pleasant if not uneventful journey. I will certainly convey Grandfather's concerns on your behalf."

Li Shang coughed twice, smiled and said. "Why are a grandfather and grandson talking about this? It's unfortunate that your master could not take action personally. If he could have come over, our Li Family would have much more assurance." He heavily sighed as he reached his main point.

"Master is already preparing for the appointment in three years at Qi Tian Peak; I fear that he absolutely cannot be distracted for the time being. But with the assistance of these several seniors, I believe we can still easily deal with the internal affairs of



Tianxiang Kingdom. So long as it is not a major military campaign, there is nothing for us to worry about."

Li Shang gave a noncommittal nod, deeply exhaled a breath, and said encouragingly. "Since there is no time to lose, let's commence now."

# Chapter 106: Some Families Celebrate, Some Worry

---

"Yes." Li You Ran replied. He gently placed the Jade Sea Coral in front of Li Shang and then reached out with one hand to firmly press down on one side of the coral. He then closed his eyes before deeply exhaling a breath; a golden aura burst forth from his body, evidence that he was circulating his Xuan arts at full strength!

A ringing sound came from the Jade Sea Coral; what was once sparkling and translucent as jade was now radiating a faint and subtle light. An almost imperceptible blue Qi slowly rose up from its surface, and the entire body of the Jade Sea Coral transformed into a strange blue color.

The time has come.

A glint of desire flashed across Li Shang's eyes, but his state of mind quickly became calm. He slowly extended his dry and thin right hand and lightly placed it on the other side of the Jade Sea Coral. The moment his palm made contact with the coral, the fine strands of Qi aroused by Li You Ran avidly rushed up Li Shang's arm at a speed that can be seen by the naked eye and into his body.

As the blue Qi entered his body, a heartfelt happy expression flashed across Grand Preceptor Li Shang's formerly stoic face. He distinctly felt a soothing sensation in his meridians as more and more blue Qi rushed in; Li Shang's body responded by becoming more and more relaxed, almost as if his spirit was shaking in joy...

His dantian that had been severely injured all those years ago by one of Jun Zhan Tian's explosive punches and he had lost the ability to feel in that region ever since. But currently, he could feel a slight sense of pain before the mild and gentle blue Qi soothes it.

His dantian and meridians that have been damaged for so many years were finally recovering...

Both men had their eyes closed, but they could clearly sense a genuine joy exuding out. Both men did not realize that during their moment of intense excitement and happiness, the Jade Sea Coral had abruptly changed into a pure white color.

The blue Qi had originally enveloped the frenzied white Spiritual Qi such that the white Qi was unable to rush out. But in the wake of Li You Ran's prompting and Li Shang absorbing, the density of the blue Qi became more and more sparse as the white Qi became more and more concentrated. Under this condition, the strength of the guest gradually overwhelmed that of the host...

There is only one last step for the dantian to recover fully!

This decades-old infirmity that had bothered Grand Preceptor Li for half his life will recover very soon. How can he not be emotional? And not wild with joy? Even if Grand Preceptor Li was accustomed to strong winds and big waves, he still felt his heart stir at this moment...

Li Shang felt a sense of exultation in his heart as he uttered quaveringly. "You Ran, my dantian should recover at any moment."

Li You Ran ecstatically exclaimed. "Grandfather, from now on, the shackle that Jun Zhan Tian had placed on your body can be eliminated! Our Li Family will be able to move unhindered! Haha..."

Both grandfather and grandson simultaneously broke out into a sincere smile filled with hope and dreams for the future...

Suddenly!

In the midst of their joy, an unexpected change occurred—

During the most critical moment of recovery inside Grand Preceptor Li's dantian, the entirely incompatible Spiritual Qi Jun Mo Xie previously injected suddenly broke free of the blue Qi's constraints like an evil dragon that struggled free of its chains.

Lightning burst out from the past spiritual qi with irresistible force and followed the direction of the blue Qi.

A wisp of exceptionally frantic and violent Qi streamed like a loose demon and entered Li Shang recently restored meridians, bashing sideways and colliding straight on, before squeezing like a hot knife through butter into his dantian that was on the verge of a complete recovery!

Caught off guard, Li Shang only managed to feel an explosive rumble in his dantian as his complexion instantly became deathly pale. The nearly recovered dantian suddenly collapsed and broke apart like shattered porcelain. The cracks were crisscrossed like tree roots and spread in all directions through his meridians...

Li Shang violently sprayed out a mouthful of blood; having already lost consciousness sometime earlier, his limp body fell backwards.

"Grandfather!" Li You Ran cried out, confused and distraught.

At the same time that Li Shang collapsed, the Jade Sea Coral exploded into pieces without any warning under the intense reaction between the two types of Spiritual Qi. Li You Ran had been extremely worried and had stretched himself over the Jade Sea Coral to examine his grandfather. The fragments directly exploded across his whole face; a single miserable scream, a single bloody head, and a single bloody face...

"What had happened? Why? Why did this happen? Who can tell me what is going on?!"

Ah, Li You Ran couldn't keep his usual poise as he howled up at the sky. At this moment, the typically peaceful and always steady Li You Ran had a face contorted with panic, helplessness, anxiety, hideousness, and blood — looking very much like a monster!

"Jade Sea Coral! The Jade Seal Coral was obviously working fine so why did it explode?! Master had promised! He had promised!" Li

You Ran, completely disregarding the grievous injuries to his face, tearing his hair as if he had turned completely insane!

To be honest, even Jun Mo Xie himself did not know that such an accident would occur. He did not expect that the stream of Qi he had poured on a whim would achieve...such an excellent result! His original intention was only to sabotage the Jade Sea Coral and make it unusable since he could not stand Li Zhen's face and nothing more.

Jun Mo Xie certainly didn't anticipate that the mixture of his Spiritual Energy and the pure energy of this word would trigger a formidable explosive reaction not inferior to a land mine! This explosion had utterly cut off Grand Preceptor Li's hope to restore his Xuan Qi. Even if a deity descended upon this world, he might not be able to restore Li Shang's dantian! Not only that, the damage to Li Shang's already feeble body was like adding oil to fire such that he's was almost at death's door!

This is like casually planting flowers but inadvertently growing a willow! This was really akin to using a single dollar to win a million dollars!

Not only that, Li You Ran's once handsome and confident face was now covered with seven or eight scars! But these seven or eight scars have completely disfigured his face! If Li You Ran did not instantly react by closing his eyes, perhaps he would have already become blind!

But even so, Li You Ran would have to wear a veil for the rest of his life...

This explosion really was...succeeding without the use of any effort.

Some people will be happy, and some people will be full of worry.

Compared to the joy and jubilation of the Jun Family, a cloud of anxiety and misery hung over the Li Family, and the Dugu Family

was actually about to explode like a volcano!

Ever since Princess Ling Ming paid a visit, the Dugu Family was like a massive barrel of gunpowder that just detonated. Dugu Xiao Yi had been discreetly shuttled away under the arrangement of her grandmother.

Dugu Zong Heng pointed at Dugu Wu Di's face as he let loose a torrent of profanity for two entire hours, sporadically letting loose extremely angry kicks and punches. Great General Dugu Wu Di grimaced in pain but did not dare to fight back as he continued to agree obsequiously; the anger in his heart was not any less than his father's.

"You're a pig!? You are a useless son of a bitch! I let you look after your daughter! Is this how you look after your daughter? Huh? Damned good for nothing! You are nothing but a useless pig!"

Grandfather Dugu was infuriated.

"But compared to a pig, it will still be better to look at than Jun Mo Xie! Fuck! Do you know who that Jun Mo Xie is? How could your eyes be so blind?"

Dugu Wu Di's face was covered in spit, but he didn't dare to wipe it off. He stammered with some difficulty. "I also didn't know about this. If I had known earlier..."

This led to another round of raining curses.

"Pui! You didn't know? You didn't even know this much, and you call yourself a father!"

Grandfather Dugu almost went insane with anger.

"That Jun Mo Xie is the capital's infamous debauchee; respectable people stay three houses away from him, and even villains stay clear of him! Which daughter of a respectable household would be willing to marry him? And you say that she happens to be our family's, Xiao Yi?! Is the inside of your head stuffed with tofu or is it filled with water? Or do you just want to

get your ass kicked?! Bastard! Good for nothing! Idiot! How did I, your brilliant father, raised you into a spoiled and rotten pig?!"

Dugu Wu Di submissively endured the torrential rain of sputter and could not even open his eyes. "Father, please calm down. Xiao Yi's indiscretion had started just recently. We can assume that the relationship between the two hadn't made much progress. There is still time..."

His words thoroughly stirred the hornet's nest.

Dugu Zong Heng stood up in a fit of violent rage and let loose a flying kick that launched Dugu Wu Di's tall and sturdy body into the air. He stomped his feet and let out a rain of curses.

"YOU! I can't believe the words that are coming out of your mouth! What do you even mean that they haven't made much progress? Do you have wanted them to have made progress? Not too late? Does your daughter have to be pregnant for it to be too late? You don't think Jun Mo Xie that son of a bitch can't make it happen?!"

The more he talked, the angrier he became. Dugu Zong Heng grabbed his son and beat him up!

His mother normally would have intervened long ago, but she actually stood to the side and hadn't made any indication to step in. Instead, she fanned the flames and said. "You deserve this! How did this old woman give birth to such a dim-witted son??!"

Dugu Zong Heng finally vented some of his anger after beating the living daylight out of his son. He said with a dark expression on his face. "We must put an end to this. Use this time that Xiao Yi is accompanying the princess in the palace and handle this affair in a satisfactory manner! If I hear something like this happen again, I'll personally kick the ever living shit out of you! Why haven't you left yet? Do you want this old man to go personally?!"

A bloody-nosed, swollen-faced Great General Dugu Wu Di hastily

scrambled up off the ground, turned tail, and ran.

Once Dugu Wu Di returned to his courtyard, it immediately devolved into panic and chaos. He first vented his frustrations by yelling at his wife and concubines before passing down an order: Dugu Ying, Dugu Xiong, Dugu Hao, Dugu Jie, Dugu Chong, Dugu Shang, and Dugu Qian are to return immediately from the army camps outside the city! There must be no delay! If they are even late half a step, then they will be punished by martial law, no... family law!

Great General Dugu wanted to behead Jun Mo Xie! That abominable little brat dared to seduce my daughter and caused I, your father, to suffer my father's outburst and abuse! Are you bored of life? You think I, your father, won't dare to move against you because of your grandfather? I won't be satisfied until I skin you alive just for beating I suffered today, not mentioning teasing my baby Xiao Yi! Humph! Humph!

The seven men identified by Dugu Wu Di were all precisely the younger generation of the Dugu family. Dugu Zong Heng had chosen their names in such a manner that the seven men's given names would combine to mean [Heroes and legends bravely rushing forward](#)! A truly imposing name.

Their given names are Ying, Xiong, Hao, Jie, Chong, Shang, and Qian "英雄豪杰冲上前," which translates to "Heroes and legends bravely rushing forward."



# Chapter 107: What's The Plan

---

The seven men identified by Dugu Wu Di were all precisely the younger generation of the Dugu family. Dugu Zong Heng had chosen their names such that the combination of the seven men's given names meant "Heroes and legends bravely rushing forward"! They were truly imposing names.

Dugu Zong Heng had originally meant this to be the first line of a couplet, with the second line being "dragons, tigers, leopards, and wolfs flying through the heavens!"\* He had been waiting for his three sons to work hard to complete the couplet, but he didn't expect that after the birth of these seven grandsons, only one precious granddaughter, Dugu Xiao Yi, was born.

The old man decided to keep his hopes up, but alas, it was just not meant to be. This made Dugu Zong Heng endlessly depressed, and he was forced to put the second line in the back of his mind. Whether the "Storm Riding General" will complete his couplet has become a moot point; such a beautiful line will never have an opportunity to be used

For this reason, it was only natural that the greatly disappointed Dugu Zong Heng would have directed quite a few scowls, stare downs, and curses at his three sons for not being more productive, failing to live up to expectations.

Although the old man may be rude and excessive, he also did not casually scold his daughter-in-law's, and thus directed his wrath at his sons.

Only Dugu Wu Di, the eldest of the three sons, is currently residing in the capital. The other two, Dugu Wu Shang and Dugu Wu Tong, were defending the Kingdom's southern and eastern borders and had made no plans to ever return; the direct result of the old man's abuse over the years.

A general also needs a little face. Having earned distinctions for

defending the borders, they obviously will not return on their own volition!

The eldest brother had also wanted to leave home to avoid the old bag; unfortunately for him, his younger brothers had been deployed, and he was not allowed to leave. Other than returning for their parent's birthdays each year, the two of them would play deaf-mute even if the old man ordered them to return.

The two times they do come home, they normally did not wait for Dugu Wu Di or the old man to sober up before they were already gone without a trace.

The other two borders of the Tianxiang Kingdom are defended by men under the old man Jun's personal command and had no connections with the Dugu Family. This state of affairs made Dugu Wu Di feel wronged in his heart. I'm the eldest brother! Why was I born under such an ill-fated star?

A tirade of abuse every three days and violently assaulted every fortnight. How long do I have to endure this? When all is said done, I am still a great general, a government official, and a forty years old father...

At this time when a cloud of misery hung over the Li family, and a conflagration raged in the Dugu Family, the source of one family's woe and another's fury, Jun Mo Xie, was happily indulging in excessive drinking with his grandfather.

The black-clothed Jun Wu Yi was sitting to one side and could only watch, but not partake; his Adam's apple repeatedly moved up and down as he swallowed his saliva. This was in accordance with Young Master Jun's prescription—since your injury had just healed, you can not drink wine for the time being.

Unfortunately, this pair of grandfather and grandson was smacking their lips as they savored the wine, an extremely satisfied appearance; with the sweet fragrance of the wine assailing his nostrils, Jun Wu Yi couldn't take it anymore...

"Mo Xie, your grandpa is very curious about your Xuan art and strange cultivation method."

Jun Zhan Tian asked while pouring himself another cup of wine. Even Jun Wu Yi's eyes opened wide and his ears opened wide when this question was asked.

That was because Jun Mo Xie's Xuan Art really was too inconceivable. The two men could be considered to have extensive experience, but they have never seen nor have they heard of a Xuan Qi capable of such effects. It could not only heal and dispel poisons, but it also does not emit any light! Its power can only be matched by its abnormality.

This kind of miraculous Xuan Art ought to be extremely famous throughout the Xuan Xuan Continent, but there had never been any such rumors, which was extremely baffling.

Jun Mo Xie remained silent for a while before he replied. "Grandfather. Third Uncle. Do you have to ask me about this? I would rather not lie to you."

"Ah, this old man understands." Jun Zhan Tian came to a sudden realization. "Did the expert that taught you this Xuan Art ask you to keep it a secret? Haha, these people tend to have eccentric dispositions. It would do you more harm than good if news of this miraculous Xuan Art spread. The fewer people that know, the better! Haha, this old man will not ask further, yes, will not ask further."

"Yes, we will not only stop asking about Mo Xie's miraculous Xuan Art, but we must also do our utmost to keep this a secret." Jun Wu Yi nodded. "Who would not drool over such a Xuan Art? Just a small rumor could lead to unthinkable consequences."

"Correct! All that matters is that Mo Xie is a member of our Jun Family. That is already more enough!" Jun Zhan Tian laughed to his heart's content. He gave Jun Mo Xie a meaningful glance, and his affection for his grandson grew.

Jun Mo Xie only returned a blank stare; who could have thought that before he could even fabricate an explanation, these two men had already convinced themselves with their own flawless reasoning...

"Mo Xie, your Third Uncle is now recovered. What do you intend to do next? Tell your grandpa!" Jun Zhan Tian was in a very good mood. He looked at his grandson with satisfaction as he ran his hands through his beard.

"Plans? What plans would I have? Am I not free now that Third Uncle has recovered?! I will just continue to act as a debauchee."

Jun Mo Xie drank some wine and started digging into the wild boar meat on the table with two greasy hands.

"As to what happens next, I'll just follow Grandpa's directions. In the meantime, Third Uncle's recovery cannot be known by others. His advancement into the Sky Xuan level, in particular, must remain in the utmost secrecy for us all. Hic. This will depend on your performance, Grandpa. You will have to continue to be miserable when you leave."

Jun Zhan Tian furrowed his brows at this proposition. He drank some wine and said.

"Nonsense. I've already worried more than enough because of you two bastards. Now that Mo Xie is working hard to improve himself and Wu Yi has also fully recovered, what is there for me to worry about? How can you ask me to pretend when all of my past frustrations are gone?!"

He sighed deeply after finishing speaking. It's not that he isn't capable, but the old man is rather tired of those miserable days. He had no choice but to worry in the past, but he still can't be happy now that all his worries have been resolved? Now that is depressing!

"What to do?" Jun Mo Xie licked his greasy hands. "You're saying

that you are now worried that you are currently worry-free? You bring up a good point. Just leave it to your grandson to make you worry again. Do you want me to cause trouble at the Magnificent Jewel Hall, kidnap the three princes and give them a beating, or bring home a few commoner girls?

"You're looking for a spanking!" The old man was aware that it was only a joke, but he still got angry nonetheless. "I hadn't even reprimanded you for the incident at the Magnificent Jewel Hall the other day, but you brought it up yourself! Understand that there are powers such as the Magnificent Jewel Hall that are above even nation-states. You cannot provoke the Magnificent Jewel Hall no matter what! They are not an organization you can afford to offend even when you advance to the pinnacle of the Supreme Divine Xuan realm! Are we clear?" The old man's voice immediately became solemn, and his expression was quite severe.

"Just what is the Magnificent Jewel Hall's origin?" Instead of fear, a strong curiosity arose in Jun Mo Xie's heart. "Even a peak expert at the Supreme Divine Realm can't provoke? More powerful than nation-states?!"

"I can only tell you that the Magnificent Jewel Hall is as large and powerful as an iceberg. Just the tip is already enough to force the world to cower at their feet. There are even a few Supreme Divine Xuan experts among their ranks! This old man can't even begin to fathom the depth of their spy network, but I do know for certain that we must not provoke them." Zhan Tian sighed, looked at the Jun Wu Yi, and regrettably sighed again.

Jun Wu Yi's face twitched, anguish apparent in his eyes as if his entire spirit suffered a deep stab of pain at this moment! But he calmed down immediately and sat peacefully, if only just a bit more quiet than before.

"In that case, the family's secret forces will henceforth be placed under Wu Yi's control! As for you, Mo Xie..." Grandpa Jun muttered to himself, undecided for a long time before finally

giving up and said. "You just do what you do best and help your uncle whenever you have time."

Jun Wu Yi and Jun Mo Xie nodded in agreement before Jun Mo Xie called to attention. "Grandpa, Third Uncle. Before Third Uncle officially take over as the head of the family's secret forces, we must first thoroughly eliminate any enemies within our ranks!"

Pausing, Jun Mo Xie stared fixedly at the two men.

"Third Uncle's full recovery is naturally a momentous occasion for our Jun Family but becomes an additional threat to outsiders. Especially..." Jun Mo Xie faintly smiled as he pointed his fingers upward.

The meaning is self-evident.

"Grandpa had probably already purged our family's secret forces of any agents from the other major families. I am convinced of this point. However, there must still be agents of the imperial family within our family! And Grandpa, you should have already identified these men, but you have just turned a blind eye so far, correct?" Jun Mo Xie smiled. "However, this is now a critical moment. Therefore, they must be removed!"

Jun Zhan Tian looked at his grandson in shock. Every point Jun Mo Xie made had hit the mark! His deduction had no mistake!

For a long time, an expression of agony appeared on Jun Zhan Tian's face before he said. "Correct. There are men in our midst that were dispatched by His Majesty, and they had already infiltrated our family for more than a decade. But they have never acted against our Jun Family..."

"Since our Jun Family never act against the imperial family and have always been loyal and devoted subjects, they naturally never had the reason to make a report! But things are different now! Even though we are still loyal, if our secret is leaked, I suspect it is enough to exterminate our entire family!"

Jun Mo Xie's eyes shined brightly and carefully said each word. "At the moment, even if they have already betrayed the imperial family and have genuinely turned into loyal men of the Jun Family, we still cannot afford to take this risk. This is not the time to be soft-hearted! He who hesitates loses!"

Jun Zhan Tian sighed, deep wrinkles appearing on his aged face at that moment. After a long time, he said. "You're right. In a moment, I will hand over a list of names to the both of you. As for what to do, I'll leave it to you two to decide. You do not need to keep me informed!" Standing up, he slowly walked away with heavy footsteps.

"Mo Xie, isn't doing things this way too cruel? Your grandpa cannot bear such a thing! Is it possible..." Jun Wu Yi frowned, an expression of struggle appeared on his face. Jun Wu Yi would not hesitate to act against his enemies, but he didn't have the heart to act against people who had distinguished themselves by outstanding meritorious service to the Jun Family. Even though he is fully aware that they were undercover agents dispatched by His Majesty to spy on the Jun Family, but they have been through thick and thin with the Jun Family many times!

## Chapter 108: Clash Of Grandpas!

---

"It's not like I want to do this. These men were all veterans that have served under you and Grandpa—even comrades that had experienced life and death together. However, we cannot risk the lives of the entire Jun Family on an uncertainty. If we are not merciless in this present moment, then others will be merciless to us in the future! Third Uncle, this is not just one man! Would they all betray the Imperial Family and follow the Jun Family? That is just wishful thinking!"

"If our secrets are exposed and we arouse the Imperial Family's suspicions, then the several hundred members of the Jun Family, the thousands of commoners living in the Jun Family's fiefdom, and even the all the high-ranking military officers serving the Jun Family's faction will be guilty by association! That is tens of thousands of lives! As for what to do next, I believe that Third Uncle should know better than me. Third Uncle had once told me what it meant to be part of the younger generation, so why are you so sentimental now? Third Uncle, you are now responsible for the lives of the entire Jun Family; don't tell me you are willing to shirk your duty?!" Jun Mo Xie's calm analysis was terrifying, his expression was somewhat cruel, and his tone was rather fierce.

"If that is the case, is it possible that we will have to carry our secret to the grave?" Jun Wu Yi frowned.

"Third Uncle, your foresight is lacking! Take a look at the Magnificent Jewel Hall..." Jun Mo Xie chuckled nefariously before leisurely continuing, "...currently overlooking the whole world. Which emperor dares to move against the Magnificent Jewel Hall?"

Jun Wu Yi was overwhelmed in shock!

It turned out that his nephew had such incredible ambitions!

The Magnificent Jewel Hall achieved its current success through



the effort of countless generations of people, yet our Jun Family..."

Jun Wu Yi deeply furrowed his brows.

"The Jun Family has me! It has you! It has Grandpa!"

Jun Mo Xie grunted, gently swirling the wine in his cup.

"The three of us are more than enough! The day will come when our Jun Family will be stronger than the Magnificent Jewel Hall!"

The calm expression on Jun Mo Xie's face revealed an unsurpassed confidence!

Jun Wu Yi dazedly looked at his nephew and suddenly felt a surge of pride well up in his heart! His nephew's words almost convinced him that these events will necessarily happen. He wanted to believe in this future, because if these words came true, then there would be hope for his redemption!

"Things are different now that your health has returned. Your priority in the coming days will be to allow your body to recuperate and to make sure you do not recklessly activate your Xuan Qi. Although you have advanced into the Sky Xuan realm, your foundation is unstable because you had primarily relied on the medicinal strength of the Blazing Heart Meridian and not bitter cultivation for the breakthrough. I have already instructed the kitchen staff to prepare a specialized medicinal cuisine for Third Uncle. For the next ten days, you can only nurture your Xuan Qi in your dantian and continue until you have gained complete control. No matter what, you absolutely cannot take rash actions. When you are free, just use the power of your body to move a little. Exercise restraint. I think Third Uncle understands my meaning!" Jun Mo Xie gave Jun Wu Yi a profound look. "I believe that Third Uncle will discover a pleasant surprise in your body after these next ten days."

"I have waited for more than ten years; a mere ten days is nothing!" Jun Wu Yi nodded.

"The three hundred guards have not returned from their training?" Jun Mo Xie asked rather casually as he swirled his cup of wine. After three hundred house guards have reached an acceptable level of physical conditioning, Jun Mo Xie moved forward with the next phase of their death training regimen.

The three hundred men had proceeded to the Heavenly Tribulation Forest to hunt low-level Xuan Beasts for their Xuan Cores and pelt. With the goal of obtaining ten or more rank 5 Xuan Beasts; the higher the level, the better and the lesser needed, for the lower level, there more needed.

They were not to return until they have completed the mission!

Jun Mo Xie gave a stern warning before their departure. "This training exercise to the Heavenly Tribulation Forest will be left completely in your control and this includes your lives! I expect that less than half of you will return alive! This is where the path of the strong begins! Failure is not an option; for that is the road to the Yellow Springs!"

Jun Mo Xie also used this as an opportunity to weed out any spies within these troops. After the troops entered the Heavenly Tribulation Forest, Grandpa Jun's main forces were dispatched to guard their path of retreat. Anyone that turned back was killed without exception! Any birds that flew out from the forest were similarly shot dead! They followed up by entering the forest and killing anyone they suspect were sending out a message.

This operation was carried out by Grandpa Jun's secret forces of Jade Xuan experts so the outcome was uneventful.

"Twenty-seven men have already been exposed so far; all of them have been executed! No information on this operation had leaked out as of the latest report."

Jun Wu Yi appeared exhausted.

"It did not occur to me that the Jun Family had sheltered these

many enemy spies. Could it be that my Jun Family is easily bullied?!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled and said.

"We can assume that most of the spies have been eliminated given that no messages have been sent out for such a long period of time. I'm not too worried about the remaining men. Anyone that is able to return had earned the right to live."

Jun Wu Yi slightly nodded before standing up. He had taken one last look at the wine cup in Jun Mo Xie's hands before he returned to his courtyard.

Jun Mo Xie sat quietly for a while before he too stood up and left toward his courtyard; the second batch of fine wine ought to be ready at any moment. That batch will be the real deal.

A disturbance suddenly broke out in the capital and then subsided. A fast horse galloped post-haste to the main gate of the Jun Residence. The rider, who wore a yellow eunuch outfit, was precisely a messenger from the imperial palace. Shortly thereafter, Grandpa Jun hurriedly left the residence and rushed toward the imperial palace.

At the same time, the physicians of the imperial palace seemed extremely impatient as they hurried to the Li Residence.

The Dugu Family's pair of father and son similarly dropped everything at hand and rode their fastest horse toward the imperial palace.

Members of every major family and cabinet ministers of comparable status continuously rallied in the direction of the imperial palace.

In the eyes of the onlookers, a major incident had undoubtedly occurred—an incident capable of shaking the Tianxiang Kingdom from top to bottom.

As a matter of fact, a major incident had indeed happened. The

Grand Preceptor and Chancellor of the State, Li Shang, suddenly contracted a grave infirmity and had been unconscious ever since, leaving his life uncertain. Grand Preceptor Li was the highest-ranking official in the imperial court in the Tianxiang Kingdom. His unanticipated collapse had thrown the imperial court into disorder and confusion.

His Majesty, the Emperor was furious!

Sitting on the imperial throne, he slammed the table with both hands. "...a perfect healthy civil official cultivates his Xuan Qi behind closed doors, but instead of restoring his Xuan Qi, he squandered away what remains of his old life!...For a long time, since I was in power. The entire imperial court has been paralyzed with his collapse today! How can we not grieve under such circumstance? And you all, you..." After His Majesty said up to this point, he immediately fell silent. He massaged his temple as if to soothe a headache and sighed helplessly.

When he had looked up earlier, His Majesty realized that he had done something stupid! Something incredibly stupid!

Of the several people below, Jun Zhan Tian wore a long face as he stared vacantly ahead at nothing in particular, completely spaced out and apparently did not hear a word.

Dugu Zong Heng was grunting and sighing while using a thick carrot-sized finger to dig at his nostril and nonchalantly flicking his finger from time to time. What kind of demeanor is this...

Tang Wan Li frowned as he watched Dugu Zong Heng from the corner of his eyes. His lip trembled, and he angrily cursed in his heart from having to frequently dodge errant balls of snot. Tang Wan Li looked disdainfully at the Meng Family and arrogantly at the Li Family, but he did not dare to show his discontent against the big boss, even if he dared to curse in his heart.

The master of the Meng Family had a serious and solemn appearance, sitting quietly without looking sideways as if in

meditation.

Murong Fengyun's back was leaning against main hall pillar. Something that looked suspiciously like saliva appeared on his white beard...

The old fool from the Song Family had his head drooped down as if he was trying to figure out if he can insert his head in the crotch of his trousers...

His Majesty suddenly woke up from his daze and wished he could give himself two slaps. Would expressing my anger mean anything to these old bags of bones? Was that any different than casting pearls before swines? Was it even worth a fart?! Eventually, he impatiently waved his hand.

"Leave. Everybody leave now! It was our mistake! We were wrong to inconvenience esteemed elders such as yourselves. Just leave and quickly go back home to your beds since you all seem too tired to be here!"

As if waking from a dream, the old men started blaming each other and then proceeded to thank His Majesty as they made their exit. Dugu Zong Heng was just about to leave before he turned back and kicked Murong Fengyun's body with a bang. "Wake up. Go home to sleep."

Murong Fengyun mumbled incoherently, sleepy eyes unclear before loosely standing up, seemingly at a loss for what to do, "Your Majesty, this old official is guilty. This official must be going senile from old age to actually fall asleep in Your Majesty's palace. This..."

"GET OUT OF MY SIGHT! GO BACK HOME AND [SELL YOUR RICE CAKES!](#)"

The Emperor's bellow frightened the many court officials waiting in the side chamber. The old men all appeared to be battered, exhausted and even scared witless as they exited the main

hall. However, once they left the imperial palace, these crafty old men looked at each other with evil smiles before parting ways and leaving abruptly.

His Majesty's thunderous bellow that shook the heaven had already echoed from the palace...

"Jun you old fool! Stand right there!"

Jun Zhan Tian had only taken a few steps and was just about to mount his horse when he heard someone calling his name behind him. When he turned around, he saw the dark expression on Dugu Zong Heng as the latter charged over.

"You want a beating?"

Jun Zhan Tian furrowed his white brows. "You got some balls you little shit to have the audacity to bark like a dog in front of me, your father? I'll turn you inside-out you old monkey!"

"F\*ck you! Who do you think you are? When did I bark like a dog?"

Dugu Zong Heng snorted.

"I need to help you teach that grandson of yours a lesson! I'm going to beat him until his skin peels off! What do you have to say for yourself?!"

"What?! What did you say?!" Jun Zhan Tian was about to turn and leave, but his eyes flashed like lightning when he heard what was said. "You want...to berate... my grandson... on my behalf?" His voice continued to get louder with each word as a blue aura dramatically exploded out from his body causing a tyrannical pressure to emanate out. His blood orchid cloak fluttered wildly.

The old man was obviously infuriated! There are very few people in the capital that have the courage to stand face to face against Jun Zhan Tian in this kind of situation, but those few people are precisely from the Dugu Family: Dugu Wudi, Dugu Xiao Yi, and the one standing before him, Dugu Zong Heng!

And Dugu Zong Heng was a person that had always followed through with what he had said!

Rice cakes and old age have the same pronunciation

# Chapter 109: Trouble Has Arrived

---

Dugu Zong Heng suddenly felt like he was suffocating as the surrounding air completely stopped flowing. In front of him, Jun Zhan Tian was currently giving off an enormous pressure!

He never imagined that Jun Zhan Tian would make such face over for his waste of a grandson.

Hmmph!

He opened his eyes wide as an aura erupted from his body to counter the overbearing pressure exuded by Jun Zhan Tian, not moving back even half an inch. Are you going to treat that trash like some treasure? Damn it! If I, your father, want to teach him a lesson, then consider it your grandson's good fortune! Ptui!

Jun Zhan Tian looked at him with a stern expression. "Dugu Zong Heng, what did my grandson do to offend you? You actually had to personally get involved? You must give me an explanation for this!"

Dugu Zong Heng snorted. "I wouldn't care if he had only offended me. I've always been a magnanimous old man; I'd just consider it as childish nonsense. At most I'd just smack his butt once and let him go! But the one thing your grandson really should not have done was to tease my baby Xiao Yi! And that little shit was brazen enough to do it! I'm telling you, Jun Zhan Tian, that your grandson is lucky that nothing has happened yet. But if something were to happen, I'm afraid that you won't even be able to find your grandson's corpse when I'm done with him!"

"If there is even one hair missing on Mo Xie, Dugu Zong Heng, I can guarantee that your Dugu Family will regret it forever!" Jun Zhan Tian glared at him with a dark expression for a long time before he spoke up.

"If anything happens to my family's Xiao Yi, Jun Zhan Tian, I can



promise that your Jun Family will be worse off than my Dugu Family!" Dugu Zong Heng said coldly. He did not intend to back down and stared back at Jun Zhan Tian.

The two military big shots were standing toe to toe outside the Imperial Palace; two pairs of perfectly round eyes glared at each other as if a fight will break out at any moment. The two families' personal guards were all sweating profusely as they milled about in desperation and at a complete loss as to what to do.

Not even the Emperor himself will be able to stop them if these two begin to fight!

Right at this moment—

"I was just asking myself who was causing such a ruckus, and it turned out to be you, two geezers, fooling around." The sound of Tang Wan Li's candid laughter rose up. "Don't you two feel ashamed? Both of your ages add up to 156 years old. Look at you two. As people with one foot in the grave, are you not afraid that you will be laughed at by the younger generation?!" Tang Wan Li carried himself haughtily. "You two really lack elegance compared to me."

The two old men standing opposite one another simultaneously spit in contempt; the clouds all over the sky instantly dissipated.

Jun Zhan Tian snorted coldly. He looked at Tang Wan Li and Dugu Zong Heng with an expressionless face, and, without saying a word, turned around and left.

"It's already too late for you to go back." Dugu Zong Heng snorted twice. "My seven grandsons have already arrived at your residence by now. Old man, you had better buy some ointments on your way home to treat your grandson's injuries." Dugu Zong Heng was laughing heartily but was actually regretting quite a bit in his heart.

Who would have thought that Jun Zhan Tian cared so much

about his thoroughly disappointing wastrel of a grandson? If his seven grandchildren had senselessly beaten up the brat, what is to be done?

Those seven youngsters had always treated Dugu Xiao Yi like a precious treasure. They had all been in an uproar once they heard about what happened to their sister and had swarmed around pushing and shouting to get out of the house. After that, he had received news of Li Shang's accident and had to make haste to the imperial palace. Although he had only left instructions to capture Jun Mo Xie before he left, it is very likely that the latter would suffer grievously at the hands of his grandsons.

Jun Zhan Tian abruptly stopped and leapt up not to mount his horse, but directly circulated his Xuan Qi and disappeared in a flash of blue light. In mid-air, a bellow echoed out. "Dugu Zong Heng, I'm not finished with you yet. It's already too late for regrets!"

Grandpa Jun was absolutely livid and had unexpectedly burst out in a storm of obscene language.

"Old Dugu, why are you pissing Old Jun off? To go as far as to be at daggers drawn?" Tang Wan Li was just watching curiously from the sideline without any idea what was going on.

Dugu Zong Heng had a belly full of anger. Upon having heard what was said, his eyes flashed as he cursed. "Fuck off motherfucker! It's none of your fucking business?"

Swish. He swiftly mounted his horse and left.

His words had caused Tang Wan Li to look as though he would choke on anger. It had taken a long time before his boiling anger was able to calm down a little, his fingers still shaking uncontrollably.

If it weren't for me, you two would already have come to blows. I had intervened out of the goodness of my heart, but

unexpectedly...unexpectedly blew up on me! Just remembering how one had ignored him and the other had not appreciated his kindness, Tang Wan Li's white beard trembled and felt like he had been slapped in the face. Next time I will be nice, I will eat a hat before that happens.

He suddenly went all out and angrily roared. "I am a dumbass son of a bitch!" The sound of his voice shook like thunder and echoed into the distance.

The old men from the major families who still had not left yet all stumbled at the same time. This sounded like the voice of that old geezer Tang Wan Li. What the hell is he doing now? Has he gone mad to unexpectedly declare to the world that he is a dumbass son of a bitch? Don't tell me that he got his head kicked in by his horse?!

Their curiosity was growing and all of them thought that it would be a pity not to look. An opportunity like this only knocks but once!

The old men talked it over and all decided to head to the Tang Family full of expectations, each one faster than the last as if competing with one another; the lethargy from earlier in the imperial court had already disappeared without a trace. Even able-bodied young men would not be able to compete with their current ferocity.

If this scene was beheld by the Emperor, he might just be so angry that he would vomit blood!

Still unaware of the impending disaster, Jun Mo Xie directed a few strong women to carry several large jugs of water. After casually inspecting the transparent, pale yellow foreshot that was collected from the filtration apparatus he designed, he slowly filled up each and every water jug. Jun Mo Xie was bursting with joy as he breathed in the rich wine fragrance wafting in the air. He was still able to pick up the distinct smell of the wine lees.

Jun Mo Xie was never fond of drinking strong alcoholic drinks. The sole purpose of distilling this batch of wine was to exchange it for a very, very large sum of money. With his current understanding of what this world considered as wine, he was confident that he would be able to sell each jug for ten thousand taels of silver! Of course, it wasn't just for money. It was also to let these country bumpkins experience what true wine really taste like!

Chinese wine!

The wine that I don't approve of is trash and only wine that I approve of can be considered good wine!

And the price will be ten thousand taels of silver for each jug!

I won't lower the price even if my whole family is beheaded! Damn it! You really had the decency to say you have lived without having tasted my wine? Why don't you just wipe your neck clean and end your miserable life?!

In fact, Jun Mo Xie's actual goal was to sell off this batch and not sell anymore! Then, he would only vinify ten or twenty bottles each month, just enough for his family to drink. As for other people...hmph...even if was the Emperor who had wanted to drink, this Young Master Jun will only stick out his neck. If I said there's none for sale, then there's none for sale! What can you do?

I'll first make you all addicted, and then I'll cut off the supply! I, your father, will not sell any more wine! Then, when all of you are left with no choice but to return to drinking that garbage, it would be hard not to choke on your tears!

Jun Mo Xie was looking forward to this moment; the facial expression of these wealthy nobles will be priceless! Just thinking about it already warmed his heart...

Your father will wait for your wonderful gift!

Jun Mo Xie hummed a little tune; the expression on his face

could no longer be that of an "Evil Monarch," but rather that of an "Evil God." He had to admit that the person who had originally thought of this insidious idea really was evil to the utmost degree.

A booming explosion rocked the main gate and echoed into the distance. Interrupting Jun Mo Xie's devious thoughts and surprising him. Could someone actually be so foolhardy as to cause a disturbance at the Jun Residence in broad daylight?

Isn't this too ridiculous?!

Before he can gather his thoughts, the main gate exploded open. Shortly, he heard the sound of heavy footsteps storming toward his direction aggressively.

Peng!

The gate to his courtyard splintered into pieces as a loud voice roared.

"Jun Mo Xie, get your ass over here right now!"

Doesn't this familiar scene look as if the criminal underworld had come to get him? For a brief moment, Jun Mo Xie thought that he had transmigrated back.

Thud! Thud!

Jun Mo Xie stretched his head to take a peek and saw seven herculean figures that looked more like bears than men; each one had a sinister countenance, swinging their arms as they stormed in like a gale of wind.

Saving a life is more praiseworthy than building the Seven-tiered Pagoda...is the Seven-tiered Pagoda as thick as these seven individuals? The legends did say that Buddha was also a pagoda...

Jun Mo Xie immediately gave out orders.

"You, go find Third Uncle and tell him that he must not come over. Just leave everything to me and I'll take care of it. You, go find sister-in-law, and tell her that she doesn't need to come over!"

Jun Mo Xie's only worry was that Jun Wu Yi would be unable to resist coming over. It really is rotten luck. Although Jun Wu Yi's present strength has advanced to the Sky Xuan realm, the Xuan Qi in his body is still too unstable and was not completely under his control. If he does not take his time to stabilize the Xuan Qi and rashly misuse it, it will definitely rupture all of his meridians, and his situation will become a truly hopeless.

As for Guan Qing Han, she was still too young and her experience shallow. She wouldn't be of any help if she came over. Jun Mo Xie saw with a glance that Guan Qing Han could only handle one of these seven individuals at most and would lose to their numbers in the end.

Grandpa went to the imperial palace, and there weren't any servants at home who would be able to challenge these seven devils in human form. Besides, every major family had a mutual understanding that the elders would not intervene in the matters between the younger generations, so they have free rein to torment anyone...

It seemed like he could only rely on himself to single-handedly go into battle.

Jun Mo Xie naturally recognized them. Dugu Family's 'heroes and legends bravely rushing forward' were prominent personages in Tianxiang City; their reputations far exceed that of Jun Mo Xie. Although they aren't at the level of being friends, they are at least acquaintances.

Jun Mo Xie was currently hesitating, but not because he was worried about getting abused by these seven black bears. Rather, he had a headache. How would the Dugu Family react if I accidentally killed these seven people? This question was driving him insane! Would the Jun Family be able to withstand the repercussion?

# Chapter 110: Heroes and Legends Bravely Rushing Forward

---

Other than being slightly older and somewhat naïve, these guys fundamentally had an upstanding moral character. They were like a septuplet of calla lilies; each and every one had a large stature, a fierce leopard-like face, and a thick tiger-like beard on both cheeks. The seven brothers almost looked a bit like a bunch of rectangles on the ground.

Holy cow! What did they feed these guys? This whole family was like the spitting image of Zhang Fei. If they were auditioning for a modern reenactment of the Romance of the Three Kingdoms; none of them would need to put on any makeup and still be better than the rest.

They would have been more authentic than the real thing, and manlier than Zhang Fei himself.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly had a scary epiphany in his heart. What type of talent and chemistry must the three Dugu brothers have? How could they have given birth to such similar and virtuous sons?

This was far too talented...

"Jun Mo Xie! Where are you running to, you little brat?!"

Dugu Ying's sharp eyes discovered Jun Mo Xie with a glance and roared out like thunder. His six brothers behind him displayed uncanny coordination and simultaneously echoed.

"Jun Mo Xie! Where are you running to, you little brat?!"

This scene was like a thunderclap from the Ninth Heaven, striking fear into the hearts of men!

Even the plants and flowers inside the courtyard trembled in fright.

At this moment, Jun Mo Xie praised in his heart for the mysterious ways in which the gods work—in this world anything can happen! Everything before his eyes suddenly grew dark; the seven looming faces were as black as the bottom of a pot, and their fourteen malicious-looking eyeballs opened perfectly round to glare down on Jun Mo Xie—even the shortest brother was taller than Jun Mo Xie by half a head.

People who didn't know might think that the Young Master Jun had owed these men a lot of money!

Snow White and the Seven Dwarves had been a popular children's fairy tale in the past.

Today I will personally unravel the amazing tale of Jun Mo Xie and the Seven Giants...

As Jun Mo Xie let his mind wander, he took a step back to look at the seven brothers in their eyes. He didn't have a choice; if he did not take a step back, he would have to look up to them to look into their eyes. He wore a pleasant smile on his face and said.

"If it isn't the seven elder Dugu brothers! Sorry, Sorry. Uh. Let me go find someone to prepare tea."

"Don't even think about slipping away. In front of this senior, your trick is far too soft!"

Dugu Ying's face turned savage as he clenched his fists and cracked his knuckles. "Jun Mo Xie, you've certainly grown a pair; unexpectedly daring to bully my little sister! How gutsy! I will make sure to see whether if I don't beat your pretty boy face into a shape third uncle won't even recognize!"

"What? Bullied your little sister? Dugu Xiao Yi?! Who started this rumor?!" Jun Mo Xie scratched his head as he said in a somewhat bewildered manner.

This was not an act as he had felt that it was him who had constantly been abused by her. When did it start going the other



way around? How come I never knew?

It was a common saying in the streets, under the heavens, the Dugu Family is the most unreasonable.

It was clearly your little sister that bullied me every day. Even if you want to call black white and vice versa, you shouldn't be so proud and open about it. I haven't even complained to my grandfather about this, yet you guys started complaining first? That's just unreasonable!

Is there anyone in this world who would dare to bully that little girl Dugu Xiao Yi with the overbearing Dugu Family behind her? That will happen when the sun rises from the west!

"Don't you still dare to not admit it! Are you trying to dodge responsibility after doing the deed..." The Dugu Xiong on the side roared with a booming voice, but he fell silent halfway through the sentence and suddenly looked up with a puzzled expression. His two large nostrils rapidly sucked in two deep breaths before he blinked several times and stared out in astonishment. "What is that aroma? How could it smell so fragrant? It is far too fragrant!"

The other six truly deserved to be called family as they all were aware that something was off at almost the same time...

The aroma was too tantalizing; they had all lost themselves in the moment and had only awakened when Dugu Xiong spoke out. Completely disregarding Jun Mo Xie, they sniffed the air to try and find the source of the aroma; seven pairs of nostrils had such a crazy suction that a vacuum had been formed in the surrounding area.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt as if he was suffocating. Hm, as if there was not enough oxygen in the area? What kind of monstrous lung capacity is this?

"It smells incredible. Why does it remind of wine." Dugu Ying closed his eyes and sniffed through his nose with confidence.

"Nonsense! How can there be wine this fragrant? I feel like I am becoming drunk!" Dugu Xiong still had his head raised up to the skies with an intoxicated look on his face.

"This isn't just wine, but the wine of immortals." Dugu Hao had the bearing of an expert, shook his head as if drunk.

"Screw your old man! What wine of immortals? With such lacking knowledge, you still dare to speak..." Dugu Jie mocked vehemently.

"My old man is your father; you still want him to go screw himself?" Dugu Hao's face turned beet red as he snapped.

"Could this be bewitching gas?" Even as the words escaped Dugu Chong's mouth, his nose was still violently inhaling the air.

"Even if this was bewitching gas, your little brother is willing to become bewitched every day! Heaven, please let me be bewitched forever! What would I do if this fragrance goes away in the future?!" Dugu Shang looked as if he was drunk; he had the loudest voice among all of them.

"Useless!" Dugu Qian was extremely reproachful of his six older brothers' conduct and let out a scornful curse, while he appeared to be happily intoxicated himself.

The seven of them were all facing the sky with their eyes closed, wildly sniffing to and fro, and haven't paid the least bit of attention to the ten extremely conspicuous wine jugs arranged not even ten feet away from them. The glistening yellow wine inside was releasing an intoxicating fragrance and was directly sucked into their nostrils.

Jun Mo Xie was stupefied. I can't believe such a person like this actually exist— much less seven of them, no less! Nature is incredible...He couldn't bear it any longer and coughed loudly.

It was only after hearing the coughing that they finally recovered their senses. The seven brothers looked slightly embarrassed as

they opened their eyes. Seeing Jun Mo Xie in front of them, they immediately remembered their mission to grab this little brat and hand him over to their grandfather. Not a moment to spare, the seven men suddenly stomped their feet, fourteen eyeballs simultaneously fixated on their target—

At some time unbeknownst to them, a table had appeared out of nowhere with Jun Mo Xie was calmly sitting beside it, completely without a care in the world. In his hand was a transparent, white jade wine cup, filled to the brim with an aromatic, pale yellow liquid.

With his eyes closed, he slowly brought the cup up to his mouth and gently took a small sip; an infatuated expression gradually appeared on his face as he let out a sigh of satisfaction, following which he followed up with an orgasmic moan like voice to sing out. "Delicious~wine~ah~~~"

That liquid was wine! But how can wine be so clear and transparent? How can there be wine in this world that produces such an intoxicating aroma?!

"Big Brother, is that...really wine?" Dugu Jie swallowed his saliva. "It smells fucking good."

"No kidding! If not wine, then what? Vinegar? Does vinegar at home smell like this? This wine is extraordinary, but how is it possible that I have never seen such exquisite wine before?!"

A stream of saliva was flowing out of Dugu Hao's mouth and steadily dripping onto the floor, but he did not miss his chance to ridicule him back.

"Let alone see; I've never even heard of wine like this! I want to get a taste!"

Dugu Chong wiped his mouth with his sleeve, and only patted his lips twice, but his sleeve became completely drenched.

"You don't say! Who wouldn't want to try some?!" The other six

brothers said mockingly at the same time.

"JUN MO XIE!" After an earth-shattering roar, Dugu Ying immediately lowered his voice such that it even became somewhat tender. "What is that in your hand?"

It was hard to imagine that such a manly man that resembles Zhang Fei was capable of making this gentle and soft sound!

"I don't understand? It's a wine cup, what else could it be?" Jun Mo Xie mindlessly swirled the wine cup, causing a few drops to spill out. For a split second after the wine was spilled on the floor, the rich aroma became even stronger by at least one fold.

Seven pairs of eyes bulged out at the same time as they lowered their heads and stared at the damp spot on the floor, flames erupting in their eyes. Wasting this unprecedented, never before seen, priceless fine wine in this way is practically a cardinal sin! This cannot be tolerated! Even if uncle can endure, I cannot...we cannot endure!

"I knew it was a wine cup! I wanted to ask you, what is in the wine cup?" Dugu Ying held back the low growl in his throat.

"This is my home! I can put whatever I want in this wine cup. It could be vinegar or it could be soy sauce." Jun Mo Xie did not bat an eye, just crossed his legs, and leisurely continued. "Naturally, it can also be wine."

He took another sip from the wine cup when he arrived at this point, clicking his tongue twice, then suddenly opened his eyes as if waking up from a dream.

"Oh, that's right, what are you all doing here? Hurry up and tell me. If it isn't important, then you may leave whenever you please."

The Dugu brothers' line of sight never left Jun Mo Xie's hands. Every time the latter swirled his cup, their hearts cried out for fear that even more of this priceless wine would spill out.

It was simply a reckless wastage of a gift from the gods!

"We received orders to come and grab you..."

Dugu Xiong responded without thinking. But before he could finish, Dugu Hao had ferociously stomped down on his foot causing him to jump up and down from the pain.

"We received orders to come and invite Young Master Jun to our residence for a chat in order to promote the deep friendship between the Jun and Dugu Families."

Dugu Hao put in a great amount of effort to present an elegant appearance, being overly pedantic with his wording, and nodding his head priggishly as he spoke; unconsciously flinging saliva everywhere from the corners of his mouth causing Ju Mo Xie to have no choice but to use his hand to cover the cup of wine.

The nearby Dugu Ying caught on rather quickly and drew back the corners of their mouth into a big grin. He was just about to speak but was unable to talk due to the saliva in his mouth. Only after swallowing his saliva was he able to say. "Exactly, that was my grandfather's intention. Our two families' relationship could be considered to be deep! There's no need to make distinctions between what's ours and what's yours. The best things in life are meant to be shared! Ha ha ha..."

The remaining six people nodded in concert. Six large smiles broke out on their faces.

"Haha, Lord Dugu is too polite."

Jun Mo Xie had an impatient expression on his face as his hand "accidentally" knocked the cup over and spilt the wine. This foreshot has not been diluted, so its alcoholic content was too high; Jun Mo Xie naturally was not willing to drink it. It's not like it was anything special to him anyway. He swiftly stood up and said.

"If that is the case, let us be on our way so that Lord Dugu would not have to wait too long."

"Careful!" The seven brothers watched as Jun Mo Xie had

unexpectedly spilt a big cup of priceless fine wine and had simultaneously opened their mouths in protest.

"Hmm~~?" Jun Mo Xie's voice got slower and more dragged out.

"Hahahaha..." The seven brothers all gave a hollow laugh. Dugu Ying said he wiped the saliva from his chin. "Young Master Jun, given the close relationship between our two families, we brothers have a humble request for Your Grace. Is it possible that we can have a small taste of your wine?"

Jun Mo Xie had a begrudging look on his face as he shook his head like a rattle-drum.

"That's out of the question. I don't have much myself. This is a priceless fine wine that has never been seen before; just a drop is already too strong! Even I had to take my time to savor this drop that is worth its weight in gold."

He swiftly pointed and added with a regretful tone. "I only have these jugs left. Once they are finished, there will be no more."

This is a critical situation! As the seven brothers' gaze finally rested upon what he was pointing at, they suddenly couldn't look away!

# Chapter 111: Superb Alcohol Capacity!

---

This was an extremely critical situation! As the seven brothers' gaze finally rested upon what Jun Mo Xie was pointing at, they suddenly couldn't look away!

All of them silently cursed at him. You still consider this a shortage in supply? There are eight large jugs filled to the brim; even with a conservative estimate, there were at least 50 jins of wine in each jug for a grand total of several hundred jins of wine! And we pitiful brothers could only smell and did not even have the opportunity of tasting a single drop.

A thousand jins of gold for a drop? That's daylight robbery... but, it might worth it based just on this fragrance!

"Brothers, are we not going to leave? I thought I was supposed to meet with Senior Dugu?"

Jun Mo Xie took a few steps forward before looking back, only to see the seven individuals still rooted to their original position and staring at the several earthen jugs.

Was there glue sticking their legs to the floor?!

No, rather than glue, it was the magical power of this exquisite wine!

"Oh, so that's it! Your little brother appreciates seven brother's silent reminder."

Jun Mo Xie swayed to and fro as he walked back and shouted out.

"Attend to me."

Several middle-aged servants immediately appeared at his side. "Young Master, what are your instructions?"

"This Young Master may have been careless but how could you be so thoughtless? Hurry up and seal these jugs of wine. If it weren't for the reminder of my elder brothers, the wine would have turned

to vinegar! Afterwards, help me move them..."

Jun Mo Xie paused for a moment.

A happy expression spread across the faces of the seven manly brothers from the Dugu Family. They had put two and two together and thought that Jun Mo Xie wanted to bring the wine as a gift for their grandfather. Once they thought of how they will be able to drink to their heart's content, their faces could not help but light up with delight.

"...move them to my private warehouse. When I return tonight, I need to hold a family feast with Grandpa and Third Uncle!" Jun Mo Xie unflinchingly continued. "I might as well invite a few guests, but I fear that there wouldn't be enough wine to go around...Yes, you will prepare some other wine and reserve it for our esteemed guests."

The servants bowed all together before walking in front of the jars and were just about to seal the jars.

"Stop!" Dugu Ying's movement was incomparably quick as he took a sudden stride forward and shot in front of the earthen jugs of wine, thrusting his arms out at his sides and directly blocked the servants from getting any closer.

His voice was as deep as the ocean and as steady as a mountain. People who were unaware might think that the owner of this voice was a peak level expert!

The middle-aged servants were somewhat dumbfounded. Was the Young Master confused? Hadn't you just instructed us to seal up the jugs? Are you trying to give us a hard time?!

The rest of the brothers were startled awake and immediately surrounded the earthen jugs like a wall of iron towers, standing shoulder to shoulder as if awaiting the arrival of their mortal enemies!

So this wine was prepared for the Jun Family's feast later



tonight, but there still might not be enough...doesn't this mean that after this evening, the wine would be gone? It never occurred to them that Jun Mo Xie's words had glaring inconsistencies; he said earlier that he wanted to save the wine for himself, but now he said that he planned to finish all the wine during the feast tonight.

They had become unable to think properly once hearing the wine would be gone soon.

"Elder Brothers, what's the meaning of this?" Jun Mo Xie frowned and asked, puzzled. "My grandpa will be waiting tonight so let us be on our way so that I can hurry back."

This one sentence instantly dispelled any ideas to steal the wine. The Grand Duke Jun knows about this wine.

"Haha, uh, hehe..." Dugu Ying wasn't laughing anymore but babbling incoherent noises before suddenly giving the signal with his eyes.

The remaining six people immediately pounced like crouching tigers, first to subdue Jun Mo Xie, and then using misdirection and attacks from all directions to knock out the four servants in a flash. Dugu Ying repeated shouted. "Gently! You must not injure anyone!"

Dugu Qian stormed into a room like a gust of wind but came out empty-handed a long time later. Dugu Xiong vehemently lambasted. "Dumbass! Go to the kitchen to get some bowls!" Dugu Chong and Dugu Shang rushed out without hesitation. It didn't take long before they came back laughing heartily with several large bowls in their arms.

"Be careful not to spill the wine." Dugu Ying warned with a solemn expression on his face.

"Carefully pour a little bit of the wine from each of the jugs. Do not drink too much and just quickly drink a few bowls to satisfy

your craving. After we are done, we will take Jun Mo Xie away without delay. Don't get drunk. I'm talking to you Old Six, you always binge when you drink. Remember to drink in moderation."

It seemed that they have a lot of experience drinking secretly when they were at home.

"That's obvious." The rest of them had long reached the limits of their patience and had rushed to the earthen jugs like a swarm to ladle out the wine; following which they had cautiously brought it back and formed a loose circle around the stone table like a group of migrant workers.

With the bowl of wine in Dugu Ying's hands, he fondly smelt the aroma before he opened his mouth wide and took a large gulp, only to feel an ice-cold sensation flowing down his throat. As the wine made its way into his stomach, a burning sensation like a blazing fire exploded out. His body instantly heated up from head to toe as an enraptured expression appeared on his face like he had ascended to heaven.

He then exclaimed in a loud voice. "Flawless wine! This is the taste of perfection! Even the wine produced for the imperial family is utter trash in comparison! I must ask that little brat Jun if the wine is for sale!"

The remaining six effortlessly took a swig at the same time, and then let out a sigh of satisfaction; eyes wide open with their heads thrown back, clutching their bellies, swaying their heads back and forth, and moaned comfortably at the same time. "Ah~~~Ah~~~~~"

Seven principled and usually forthright men were moaning and groaning as if they were patrons of a brothel, and then moved out at the same time like a mighty flood...Jun Mo Xie quivered as a chill ran down his back. He felt the sweat pores throughout his body open up and his hair stood up on end as if he were taking a midnight stroll through an unmarked graveyard.

Shortly after that, the seven people rushed to ladle out more wine in rapid succession. Sounds of dispute echoed out from time to time.

"Eldest Brother, you already had two bowls, and I've only had one!"

"Go to hell Old Seven, trying to steal from me!"

"So delicious...W-Why are you pushing me?"

"Careful! Old Three had sneaked in his third bowl! This guy is shameless!"

"Brothers...let's take a break."

It never even crossed the seven brothers' mind that none of the Grand Duke's household guards have come to investigate from the time they had kicked down the main gate until now! This was extremely unusual! Such unbridled, devil-may-care carouses caused even Jun Mo Xie to be somewhat stupefied...

This was like a gang of robbers had brazenly broken into someone's home and to not just drink, but drink to the point of being completely wasted, all the while completely disregarding the fact that the owner had sounded the alarm a long time ago...

Appearing without a sound, Jun Wu Yi smiled and winked at Jun Mo Xie before silently disappearing. Outside the courtyard, several hundred Jun Family guards quietly dispersed...

This was just unprocessed wine; it hadn't even been blended nor has the flavor been adjusted! The wine would have at least seventy to eighty percent alcohol content using the measuring methods from his previous life. It wouldn't be a stretch to say that this was pure alcohol!

One large bowl was at the very least, half a jin of wine! Jun Mo Xie had actually taken pity on these brothers.

Jun Mo Xie appeared to have been thrown on the floor with his

Xuan Qi suppressed, and the brothers never bothered with him from the start for fear that the others would take advantage of their absence to drink more wine. Naturally, the restraint was useless against Jun Mo Xie.

In the beginning, he had remained motionless for fear of being discovered by these clowns but afterward, had sat straight up to stare blankly at the seven brother's fierce competition. Finally, he no longer pretended to care as he stood up to stretch his limbs, folding his arms across his chest and continue to watch from the side, without anyone the wiser.

Only after a moment, a really long moment...

"Thud!" Dugu Qian was the youngest, had the lowest tolerance, and lost control the earliest; unable to prop himself up any longer, he fell headfirst into the ground. The sound of even breathing revealed that he had fallen into deep sleep.

Dugu Hao got annoyed by him and let lose an angry kick, sending Dugu Qian flying into the air; after that, he quickly proceeded to ladle out more wine.

"Thud!" Dugu Chong stumbled and fell on his way to the wine jug.

"Thud!"

"Thud!"

"Thud!"

"Thud!"

"Thud!"

The seven brothers had all fallen on the floor, laying this way and that.

There's nothing to be done. The alcohol content was way too high! Even knock-out drops would not be this effective!

Although there were differences in alcohol tolerance, there were

also differences in alcohol; these guys were so wasted they can't even tell which foot was forwards and backwards!

The wine Young Master Jun had fermented this time was simply too strong, and the foreshot had an even higher alcohol content as compared to the wine itself.

Although these seven individual's capacity for liquor were not shallow, they had still never drunk wine this frighteningly strong before. It was as if a person who had drunk nothing but beer being introduced to sorghum wine.

It wouldn't seem that strong at first, and one might be able to drink several bowls. But when the alcohol finally kicks in, it might take several days to wake up from this intoxicated dream, and even then one would not be completely sober, not even saying about these seven younglings of the Dugu Family who had drunk close to four king-sized bowls of wine.

For the moment, thunderous snoring echoed out from Jun Mo Xie's small courtyard. Even though he had smoothly de-escalated the situation, Jun Mo Xie's body was still twitching unceasingly because of these seven brothers.

If you're going to sleep, then go to sleep, but you have to snore! Alright, I can let that go, but some of them aren't just snoring: grinding their teeth, whistling, farting with everything they've got...to an actual rhythm!

‘Whoot whoot’

Just as Jun Mo Xie was getting vexed, Dugu Ying had started whistling again.

Letting lose a flying kick right up his ass, Jun Mo Xie fumed as he cursed. "I dare you to let out a single fart again!"

The whistling stopped, but Dugu Ying was flipped over by the kick. Facing the sky, he mumbled to himself. "Great wine..."

High up on the walls of a neighboring courtyard, Guan Qing Han

was hidden among the foliage of a nearby tree like a sentinel in a brilliant snow white dress. An incredulous expression across her ice-cold eyes!

She had received a note from a capable servant warning her not to come!

But yet, she still came!

Ever since the seven brothers from the Dugu Family stormed the main gates, Guan Qing Han had already readied her sword and hid here. So long as Dugu Ying and his brothers show any indication of attacking Jun Mo Xie or try to take him away, Guan Qing Han would immediately take action. Even though she was fully aware that she was not their opponent, she would still spare no effort to fight!

Although she had never looked favorably upon Jun Mo Xie, he was still Jun Family's only descendant of the third generation. He was still her nephew-in-law. No matter what, she couldn't sit idly by and watch him fall into danger. Especially since this brat had started looking more like an actual human recently...

But as time passed, Guan Qing Han's eyes gradually grew wider and wider at every new scene, and even started to develop a begrudging admiration.

Jun Mo Xie had remained calm and collected since the very beginning. This caused Guan Qing Han no small amount of shock. The Jun Mo Xie from her memories would have already turned into a sorry mess; it wouldn't even surprise her if he'd pissed his pants. But he was vastly different today; slowly but surely, he gave the Dugu Family's seven brothers courtesy at first in order to completely ensnare them in his trap. Not only had they been willing to cooperate, they had even impatiently drunk themselves into a deep sleep.

Although these seven individuals were so thick-headed they could not be any more thick-headed, this kind of outcome still

made Guan Qing Han endlessly amazed—is this still the same utterly gutless nephew-in-law, Jun Mo Xie?

Sighing lightly, Guan Qing Han silently slipped away.

# Chapter 112: Dugu Pays A Visit

---

A sharp whistling sound was heard as a blue meteor flew through the sky and landed directly inside Jun Mo Xie's small courtyard. Jun Zhan Tian has arrived!

Once he returned, the old man was immediately taken aback. He had been all but certain that his grandson would be captured if not tormented during the time he had been delayed.

Although his grandson had made tremendous progress as of late, in the end, he still had not broken through to the Ninth Level Xuan Qi. Getting beaten and captured was to be expected; he had already steeled his heart to see his grandson missing and have made plans to vent his wrath on Dugu Zong Heng. How could he have anticipated that he would see this kind of situation?

Delight? Astonishment? Horror?!

Isn't this too surreal?!

His grandson was sitting there safe and sound, but the seven pups from the Dugu Family were lying unconscious on the floor...Well, the old man realized that that wasn't exactly right; the seven individuals weren't unconscious but were rather completely wasted.

Jun Zhan Tian rubbed his eyes, still not quite convinced by what he's seeing, and he understood even less. He was curious as to how his grandson had achieved such a flawless victory; not only did he get his captors to drink, but he also got them all drunk...

Although the old man knew that his grandson's wine was strong, he realized that he had still underestimated just how strong he was was based on the scene before his eyes.

Seeing that his grandchild was alright, Grandpa Jun said a few words before he leisurely walked away with his hands clasped behind his back. Remarkably, he did not have to get personally



involved...

When Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di returned home, sure enough, they were informed that the seven grandsons had long since left in a fit of rage to find Jun Mo Xie and became even more regretful. Seeing Jun Zhan Tian that way, if those seven grandsons had really gone overboard, the Dugu Family and the Jun Family might really have to fight to the death.

Sigh. If I hadn't been so impulsive and had first found Jun Zhan Tian to vent my anger, maybe...

Father and son looked at each other in dismay, as if the pair was sitting on pins and needles. In a contest of strength, the Dugu Family would naturally not fear the Jun Family, but they still would not be able to afford the two families becoming irreconcilable enemies!

Besides, Jun Zhan Tian already had nothing left to lose, and would not go down alone even in death. If the two families enter a blood feud, not only will the Dugu Family suffer Jun Family's wrath, but the entire Tianxiang Kingdom will be embroiled in the conflict...

The situation had really gone to shit!

Dugu Zong Heng paced back and forth inside the main hall like a cat on a hot tin roof. Standing to the side, Great General Dugu Wu Di's eyes blurred from watching, but he did not dare make a sound.

The uneasy father and son pair finally felt something was wrong when they saw the sun setting in the west. How come they still haven't returned? These kids couldn't have possibly been so tactless as to have crippled Jun Mo Xie during his capture, and then run into the old codger, who in a fit of anger...

Oh my god! Jun Zhan Tian wouldn't have lost his sense of reason, right?

As both father and son had reached the same conclusion, they

exchanged glances and saw the same fear suddenly filled each other's eyes.

Just then, pounding footsteps were heard as a bodyguard hurriedly ran over. "Reporting to the master, Jun Family's Jun Mo Xie had sent someone to make a delivery."

"Bring it forward!" Dugu Zong Heng had a sense of foreboding. However, since Jun Mo Xie had sent this item, it meant that the youngster didn't experience any major mishap. Feeling slightly relieved, he spun around and sat down on a wooden chair.

What Jun Mo Xie delivered was a very small bundle wrapped in cloth. Dugu Zong Heng lightly squeezed the package in his hand before his complexion rapidly changed, swinging his arm back and swept various items off of the side table.

"Wastes! A bunch of useless wastes!"

Dugu Zong Heng violently jumped up before delivering a flying kick to Great General Dugu Wu Di's body.

"Look at this troop of monkeys you've raised up!"

The old man pointed with trembling fingers.

"It was seven against one, but they had somehow managed to all be captured! Even the family's jade pendants have been sent back! Shameful! What a shameful display"

Caught completely by surprise, Dugu Wu Di clutched his buttocks and howled in pain, cursing in his heart.

What do you mean 'I've raised a bunch of monkeys?' Aren't those seven also your grandson?

The items Jun Mo Xie returned were precisely to Dugu Family's hereditary jade pendants that the seven Dugu brothers carried on their persons and served as a symbol of their identities. They were also accompanied by a small note.

"The seven Dugu brothers are staying as guests of my Jun Family,

Since we're getting along so well, the brothers will return in two or three months. Senior Dugu and Great General Dugu, you can rest assured."

"Guests? Return after two or three months? Rest assured?"

Dugu Zong Heng was so angry that his nose was crooked.

"Wu Yi! Head out immediately and bring those good-for-nothings back for me! I'm going to skin each and every one of them alive!"

Dugu Wu Di moved as if he had received a pardon and shot out of the door like an arrow. Immediately after, a cacophony of hurried movement came from the courtyard before the sound of a horse galloping was heard fading into the distance.

When Great General Dugu Wu Di and hundreds of guards arrived at the Jun Family's residence, he had unexpectedly kept with formalities and requested an audience. His seven sons and nephews could thoughtlessly force their way in without the slightest scruple; young men will naturally act willfully, and this could be chalked up to youthful indiscretion. However, Dugu Wu Di cannot be that impudent; even if he was known as a rude and unreasonable pain in the neck, he is still the foremost general of the Tianxiang Kingdom.

He had one of his own men take out his great general's jade slip to hand over to the gatekeeper along with a request for an audience with Senior Jun Zhan Tian. The gatekeeper had politely received the jade slip but informed that the old master was not present and had just recently left to visit a friend.

Dugu Wu Di suddenly flew into a rage. You had clearly returned not too long ago after almost coming to blows with my old man and I had immediately came after. But you are actually saying that you went to find a friend at this time? If my sons and nephews were not being detained by you, would you have been this carefree?? Who are you trying to fool?!

Of course, after thinking for a bit, a person must lower his head when he stands under the eaves. In that case, I'll ask for Jun Wu Yi.

Your son cannot walk; he wouldn't also be visiting a friend, right?!

The gatekeeper did not head inside to herald Dugu Wu Di's arrival, but showed a meaningful smile when he heard the request.

"So it really was Brother Dugu. Wu Yi is overjoyed that you honor us with your presence.

How could I be so inconsiderate? Please make yourself at home—there's no need to stand on ceremony."

Dugu Wu Di focused his eyes and saw a wheelchair slowly roll out from the courtyard. Sitting calmly in the wheelchair, Jun Wu Yi was dressed in a cyan colored gown and had a serene smile on his face as he stared intently at Dugu Wu Di.

The man in front of him looked no different than before, but Dugu Wu Di's time on the battlefield had tempered his intuition, and his instincts were screaming at him that things were not as they had seemed!

Calm!

Yes, he was far too calm! It's precisely this extraordinary calmness that makes him feel a sense of foreboding, a sense of fear! A ghastly and chilling sensation!

Dugu Wu Di could distinctly perceive that underneath Jun Wu Yi's sword-like brows, piercing eyes, and placid face was a proud man who had not accepted his lot in life; a man that's pointing his sword defiantly towards the heavens!

It almost seemed as if this peerless warrior, who had been gathering dust for all these years, was about to unsheathe his sword and reveal his brilliance, rising above the world once more amidst the roars of dragons and tigers!

At this moment, Dugu Wu Di no longer saw the handicapped Jun Wu Yi in front of him, but the mighty general dressed in white from all those years ago! Laughing in defiance of the heaven and earth, the eternal soul of the army who had led forces to trample all over the Xuan Xuan Continent, Jun Wu Hui! He was Jun Mo Xie's father, an iron-fisted commander that had once emerged victorious in every battle, the indomitable god of war!

At this moment, Dugu Wu Di felt an ineffable sense of veneration!

Jun Wu Hui! He was the only person who Dugu Wu Di had revered in his life, a mountain he had held respectfully in his heart, and his greatest goal in life! Having served under Jun Wu Hui, Dugu Wu Di would often recall those vivid memories of those battles fought in those extraordinary years!

"Wu Di, wait for my return after I have triumphed over our enemies. We brothers will join hands and ride through Yu Tang and Shenci! Ha ha ha..." Dugu Wu Di, who had not been able to go to battle, had made his way to bid farewell that fateful year Jun Wu Hui went on his military expedition. Jun Wu Hui had reached out to clasp Dugu Wu Di's shoulders and said these words.

This also happened to be the last time Wu Hui and Wu Di would ever see each other again in this life! Furthermore, this was also what Dugu Wu Di would repeat every time he got drunk in the past ten years!

"Big..." Dugu Wu Di emotionally took two steps forward, and was just about to blurt out "Big Brother" like in the old days but suddenly awoken from his daze. It was clearly still Jun Wu Yi before his eyes! Jun Wu Yi, who was sitting in a wheelchair!

The Jun Wu Yi who had been disabled for over a decade!

Dugu Wu Di seemed to have entered a trance at this moment; moisture could be seen in his tiger-like eyes...

"Brother Dugu?" Jun Wu Yi looked at him with an indifferent gaze, staring at this brother-in-arms who had once campaigned alongside him. His sharp eyes seemed to contain no emotions at all; they were tranquil, detached, and aloof!

After the Jun Family's most powerful duo died in battle, Jun Family still managed to retain significant influence in Tianxiang, but the difference was night and day when compared to before. On the other hand, the Dugu Family had risen to prominence during this period and, in one fell swoop, taken away half of the Jun Family's military power. Although this turn of events was by the order of His Majesty and there was no one at fault, Jun Wu Yi still felt bitter in his heart.

He was aggrieved at the fate of the Jun Family, aggrieved at his father's suffering, but most of all, he was aggrieved for his late older brothers!

He even felt regretful that his elder brother had taken Dugu Wu Di under his arms all those years ago! During these years he had been disabled, Jun Wu Yi's anger had long since fermented to a frightening level. Therefore, he didn't even pretend to act friendly in front of this person who had once been a brother-in-arms and a good friend!

Besides the heads of the major families, there was rarely any man in the capital that did not fear Great General Dugu Wu Di. But Jun Wu Yi had never feared him! Not only was he not afraid, but he had also given Dugu Wu Di the cold shoulder every time they met. Dugu Wu Di was unable to respond in turn, unable to look him in the face.

"Third Brother, your stupid brother has stopped by to check up on you. Your body's been feeling a lot better, right? Haha...haha."

There are few people in Tianxiang City that Dugu Wu Di was hesitant to cross, and Jun Wu Yi is undoubtedly the one he wanted to avoid the most. If today's matter had not deteriorated so

suddenly, thus requiring his presence, he would not directly meet his former friend.

Great General Dugu calmed his mind with difficulty and managed to squeeze out a smile before he continued.

"I heard the seven little brats from my family did not know how to behave themselves and have created no small amount of trouble for your Jun Family. I have come to take them back and teach them a lesson! I'll be sure to find out who ordered them to act so impudent, and I'll make sure they give Brother Jun a satisfactory answer in time!"

Even though Jun Wu Yi remained outwardly unflustered, but he wasn't smiling.

Who ordered them? You really have the nerve to say that?!

"Oh? There was such an incident? I had no idea." Jun Wu Yi smiled faintly, turned to the side and asked. "Did the Dugu Family's seven young masters come over?"

# Chapter 113: Extortion

---

The gatekeeper stood at attention and replied. "Yes. The Dugu Family's seven young masters have indeed come to find the Third Young Master. As for other occurrences, this subordinate does not know."

The gatekeeper had served under Jun Wu Yi in the army years ago. How could he not understand the latter's intentions?

"So that's what happened. It sounds like the kids were just playing pranks on each other. Why should we get involved?"

Jun Wu Yi asked as he looked indifferently at Dugu Wu Di.

"Brother Dugu, I'm embarrassed that an esteemed individual such as yourself had to make come here for this matter between the younger generation. Haha, I can tell that you really do dote on your children."

Dugu Wu Di's long face suddenly flushed red as he said. "I don't really care about these kids myself, but my old man was worried and forced me to come over and take a look. It would be extremely unfortunate if the seven kids get carried away and cause any inconveniences for the Jun Family."

"Yes, haha, that would be unfortunate."

Jun Wu Yi smiled lightly and continued.

"But we elders of the Jun Family never interfere in matters between the juniors. If Brother Dugu needs to look for your sons and nephews, then you should talk directly to my nephew, Jun Mo Xie. My body always has aches and pains; I'm already starting to feel unwell from our short conversation. This is a little embarrassing!"

Dugu Wu Di's face turned purple; he hummed and hawed for a long time, but remained speechless. Was there a need to talk to Jun Mo Xie? Are you kidding me? Do you know who I am? Who he is?



Not to mention that I'm also an elder.

But, everyone knows that Jun Family's third master's body and health are not in the best of conditions; taking the time to speak with me was already giving face. I just couldn't bring myself to ask him to do anything!

"You, quickly lead Great General Dugu to the young master's courtyard." Jun Wu Yi smiled as he cups his fist. "Brother Dugu, please make yourself at home. I assume you should still be familiar with the Jun Family's residence. Your little brother is a bit tired, so I'll take my leave first."

"Third Brother don't have to worry about me. Just take care of yourself." Dugu Wu Di forced a smile, feeling entirely awkward and uncomfortable. Although his Dugu Family were only carrying out the Emperor's orders all those years ago—they had still made their move on the Jun Family at an incredibly awkward time when the latter had only recently suffered a tragic loss of their two great sons in battle. That's why Jun Wu Yi was always prejudiced against him.

Over the years, Dugu Wu Di had always wanted to resolve this misunderstanding. Although his conscience was clear, he always lowered his head unconsciously every time he had to face Jun Wu Yi. Because of his honest and upright nature, he had always regretted not standing by Jun Wu Yi when he needed him most. And then his family...

Although the Dugu Family had always wanted to help the Jun Family, Jun Mo Xie on the other hand—beating up the kid eight or ten times still wouldn't be enough! He almost felt like it was his duty to act in Jun Wu Hui's stead and teach his son a lesson...

With a deep sigh, Dugu Wu Di walked inside the Jun residence; his overwhelming aura had already greatly diminished. He knows that Jun Wu Yi was essentially advising him to let the children work things out by themselves. As an elder, it would be

inappropriate for him to involve himself in their affairs.

Dugu Wu Di roared in his heart. I don't want to get involved either! However, an inexplicable feeling overcame him when he saw Jun Wu Yi's placid face; that striking resemblance was as if he was seeing his most respected older brother from all those years ago. Any anger quickly dissipated in his heart.

Seeing Jun Mo Xie standing in the distance, Great General Dugu's imposing aura couldn't help but emanate out once again.

I might have felt guilty in front of your Third Uncle, but how can this general not get angry seeing how you've played fast and loose with my daughter? Just wait and see how I sort you out, you little brat!

Eh? Where is the gate to the courtyard behind Jun Mo Xie?!

The gate? The gate had obviously been destroyed by Dugu Ying and his brothers, yet Young Master Jun remained very courteous and bowed as Dugu Wu Di approached. "So it turns out Uncle Dugu has honored me with a visit. Seeing you has had made your little nephew's day. Please quickly come in."

He waved his hands in a welcoming gesture.

Great General Dugu was not reserved as he walked straight in, sweeping a glance at the interior of the courtyard behind Jun Mo Xie.

Dugu Wu Di sucked in a breath. How did everything fall apart like this!?

"Those seven sons of a bitch did this? They all will be in a world of hurt!"

Dugu Wu Di was furious. He had made it explicitly clear that they were to snatch Jun Mo Xie without causing any damage to the Jun Family's property. How did everything turn out like this! How can this be good? What else can be said but that it's those seven bastards' fault! His imposing aura inevitably deflated somewhat.

"The seven elder brothers saw that my family's wine collection was pretty good and drank a little too much, haha." Jun Mo Xie smiled, but his facial expression gave others an uncomfortable feeling. "They all fell asleep."

"Good wine? Drank a little too much? Is this their first time drinking?! They got so drunk they fell asleep? Pui! Is this how I raised these good-for-nothings!"

Dugu Wu Di's face immediately darkened.

"Show me the way!"

He did an about-face and was raring to go, abruptly turned around again, pointing at Jun Mo Xie with his carrot-sized finger.

"Kid, I'm warning you to stay away from my daughter! I'll let you get off lightly this time out of respect for your father and your Third Uncle. If there is a next time, I will tear you to pieces and feed you to the dogs!"

Jun Mo Xie gave him a deep look with a beaming smile on his face. A harsh light flashed across his eyes as he slowly reached out with his hand and thrust a finger at Dugu Wu Di.

"Old man! I don't care if you are the imperial court's infamous pain-in-the-neck; do not act so brazenly in the Jun residence. I won't stand for this kind of behavior! And I might as well warn you now; do not let your daughter bother me again! I won't pursue the matter further on account of our two families' friendship. If there is a next time, I will be sure to make you my son's maternal grandfather!"

Dugu Wu Di almost blacked out from anger. It's not like he wasn't aware that others gave him the nickname of "pain-in-the-neck," but no one dared to say it to his face—this guy was the absolute first person to do so. How could he not be furious? He raised his open hand up, ready to strike down.

Jun Mo Xie did not back down, but instead straightened his back

and raised his face up defiantly.

"Humph!"

Dugu Wu Di could not hit the Jun Mo Xie in the end. He was still Elder Brother Wu Hui's son no matter what; it's already enough that his own sons and nephews had given him a beating. His attack would unavoidably have been heavy-handed.

Swallowing his anger, he followed after Jun Mo Xie to the doorway of a side room and heard the heaven-shaking wheezing and snoring coming from within. Hearing the measured beat of the snoring, he couldn't help but begin to feel rage rise in his heart.

Bang!

He kicked open the door to the room and roared out.

"Get your sorry ass over here right now!"

The snoring continued.

A strong smell of alcohol rushed out from the room.

Dugu Wu Di's nose couldn't help but twitch. "What kind of wine is this? How could it smell so fragrant!"

Coming back to his senses, he saw that not one of his sons or nephew had stirred and were still fast asleep! Great General Dugu's fury exploded in his heart as he quickly made his way inside and proceeded to punch and kick like he was hitting a punching bag!

The snoring continued!

Dugu Wu Di was stunned.

Young Master Jun snickered. You think the wine I've distilled is just your common garbage? Right now, they won't be able to wake up even if you beat them to death. With how much they drank, I wouldn't even be surprised if they had drunk themselves to death. The best part has yet to come!

"Someone come and carry these seven brats out!" Dugu Wu Di

wanted to crawl into a hole and die! This had turned out to be the most humiliating day in his life, but little did he know that his day was only going to get worse...

"Wait a minute!"

Jun Mo Xie laughed coldly.

"Did Great General think you can come and go as you please? What kind of place does the Dugu Family think the Jun residence is?"

"What do you want?" Dugu Wu Di turned around, his face savage, looking as if he was barely able to keep his anger under control.

I had already let you off earlier for fooling around with my precious daughter but you still dare to have something to harp about? You must be tired of living!

"It's quite simple really. The red sandalwood main doors that the Dugu Family's seven young masters demolished once they arrived at my family home will cost one thousand taels of silver to repair. The injuries to three of our servants will cost five hundred taels for medical cost. The gates to my courtyard will cost three hundred taels..."

Jun Mo Xie counted along with his fingers.

"...what's more, they restrained me by force and pilfered my high-quality wine. On the account of the history of our families, I could look the other way and excuse their behavior if you pay 25 million taels of silver. Great General can naturally collect the seven young masters at that time!"

"What?!"

Dugu Wu Di roared, shaking the guards behind him and sending them reeling.

"25 million taels?"

"Correct! I've already done you a favor and rounded down to an

even 25 million taels of silver!"

Jun Mo Xie did not bat an eye and even carried himself with a magnanimous air.

"I spit on your dogshit face! Twenty-five million taels of silver! I'd like to hear how these kids managed to drink twenty-five million taels worth of wine. If you do not provide a proper explanation, I'll will see just who you inherited your extortionist schemes from!"

Dugu Wu Di was so angry that he let out a laugh.

Jun Mo Xie remained unmoved and gave a frosty smile.

"If it had been just some normal wine, the price would have no been so high even if they had drunk themselves to death. But I can guarantee that the wine they had drunk is the only one in this world! Not even mentioning the fact that what your precious sons and nephew drank was the priceless foreshot! In a jug there would be only fifty jins of it, and in a single jin, only fifty cups could be made. Each cup of foreshot then could be made into a jug of wine that would be worth ten thousand taels! Adding it all up, the total will be 25 million tales. I will dismiss the rest of the damages I had given out earlier on behalf of the friendship our family shares!"

"That is why each cup of wine is priced at ten thousand taels of silver. I'm not ripping anyone off. This is the best bargain around!"

Jun Mo Xie kept a straight face without a single hint of a joke.

"Screw your Third Uncle!" Dugu Wu Di blurted. "Drinking your lousy wine can send one to seventh heaven?"

General Dugu was about to explode from anger. Tianxiang Kingdom's annual military expenditure was thirty million taels of silver. His three sons and four nephews had run a tab that almost equaled the kingdom's annual military spending?!

"Isn't this just blatant extortion? How is this not ripping anyone off? And you dare say I'm getting a bargain!?"

"Please watch what you say, Great General. You do not need to involve my Third Uncle! As the saying goes, the rarer something is, the greater its value! This wine is something that only I possess! If I say it's ten thousand taels per cup, then it's ten thousand taels per cup. If it was anyone else, I wouldn't even sell it for that price."

## Chapter 114: Insane Decision

---

Dugu Wu Di panted as he sat down, conveniently grabbing a cup and threw it back, swallowing the wine in one gulp. His tiger-like eyes suddenly opened wide as he involuntarily exclaimed.

"Exceptional wine! It is truly a wine never seen or heard before!"

"That is wine that had just been made." Jun Mo Xie smiled slyly. "May I ask Great General if it is worth ten thousand taels of silver?"

Licking his lips, Dugu Wu Di blurted out without thinking. "Worth it! Extremely..." His gaze suddenly turned into a glare. "...Extremely...not worth it. Not worth a fart! Selling a jar of wine for ten thousand taels of silver, why don't you start robbing instead?!"

"If I say it's ten thousand taels then it's ten thousand taels; that's the final price! If the Great General is able to lie through your teeth, then there's no helping it." Jun Mo Xie gave a contemptuous look, swiftly retrieving a cup of foreshot.

"This is the foreshot of the alcohol. Does the Great General want to experience the taste of a cup of foreshot costing ten thousand taels?! Little nephew will present this cup as a gift out of respect to an elder!"

Dugu Wu Di snorted twice and was about to reject the offer, but he couldn't resist this type of temptation in the end. He gritted his teeth and said.

"This wine is indeed not bad, but it is definitely not worth ten thousand taels a cup no matter how it tastes!" His lips twitched as he snatched the cup and rapidly poured it into his mouth.

"Whoa..." As an ice-cold sensation slid down his throat, Dugu Wu Di felt as if a volcano erupted in his heart as fiery blood coursed through his veins. Right, when the wine hit his stomach, he had already felt somewhat muddle-headed and did his best to control himself; his eyes bloodshot.



"That was incredible! Definitely worthy of being a foreshot!" Dugu Wu Di craned his neck, raising the empty cup over his mouth to sip every last drop before slamming it down on the table with a bang. "Another cup!"

"Ten thousand taels per cup! It is not open to discussion." Jun Mo Xie snorted. "General Dugu, you had just drank ten thousand taels of silver! But you still want another cup even though you said the wine is overpriced?! The cup before was a gift from me to you, but even I cannot afford to gift you another if you want more!"

"The wine is certainly of a very high quality, but it's still not worth such an exorbitant price when all is said and done!" Dugu Wu Di's eyes looked greedily at the jug of wine in the room and thoughts of stealing flashed across his mind, but he was still not willing to admit the truth.

You've got to be kidding me! This is a matter of principles! If I admit this cup is worth ten thousand taels of silver, my Dugu Family will go bankrupt here and now...

"Great General Dugu, don't tell me you plan on not paying this debt?" Jun Mo Xie laughed coldly and said. "The Dugu Family had ransacked my home, insulted me, and even robbed my family's short supply of this one of a kind type heavenly wine. Should I just let this slight go just because you said so? I'm supposed to drop the subject and pretend that everything is fine? My Jun Family can't even afford this level of respect? Should we just let your Dugu Family bully and insult us in this way?"

"Those are your words, not mine!" Dugu Wu Di jumped up. This accusation was simply too much; even Great General Dugu Wu Di will not be able to bear the consequence.

If that's the case, does that mean that Great General Dugu agrees that your Dugu Family will compensate my Jun Family for this matter?"

Jun Mo Xie said patiently and systematically.

"Of course, there will be compensation! Although our Dugu Family..."

"Then we don't have a problem. Please pay 25 million taels." Jun Mo Xie interrupted him with a beaming smile.

Fuck! Son of a bitch! Dugu Wu Di was stunned speechless. He paced around three times and continued scratching his head, holding back for a long time until he could hold back no more.

"This wine of yours hadn't even been sold before. How are you so certain that it's worth ten thousand taels of silver? How is this letting my family off lightly? Do I have to accept any outrageous price that you name for your wine? Is this what you call reasonable?!"

"If I understood your point correctly, you will agree to the price that I will be able to sell a jar of wine for?" Jun Mo Xie asked?

"Correct! No, it's not! What I meant is if you can blend the same jug of foreshot into wine and name a price in which everyone is willing to pay for, then my Dugu Family will recognize this debt!"

Dugu Wu Di smiled proudly.

At last, I found a way to get the better of this brat. Your wine is indeed of high quality, but a jug would only be sold at 180 taels in the end, even if it is not a small sum, it is still less than 25 million taels of silver!

"Good! That's settled then! But before that happens, your Dugu Family is prohibited from causing me trouble again!" Jun Mo Xie immediately agreed.

"Good! However, you must do this within three months! If you tease my daughter during this time, make no mistake, I'll still tear you into pieces!" Dugu Wu Di snorted twice, looked at this debauchee in front of him, and thought of another daring scheme.

"If you are not able to reach 25 million taels in sales, you will henceforth be required to supply my Dugu Family with wine free

of charge supply! How about it? Do you dare to accept this stake?"

After biding his time for so long, Great General Dugu finally revealed his true intentions.

"I have full confidence in my wine. It's a deal! But you need to watch your own daughter; I'm not responsible for what's going to happen if she comes on to me again!"

Jun Mo Xie snorted twice in his heart.

Just wait until your Dugu Family have to carry this mountain of a debt on your back! I'll make you all vomit blood! What about ten thousand taels for a jug? I can sell it for even more and it wouldn't be difficult. You will regret the day you started this deal!

Jun Mo Xie sent for a carriage while Dugu Wu Di shouted out orders; guards carried the seven brothers who were like dead pigs and threw them onto the carriage. Great General Dugu had turned back repeatedly at every step with reluctance to part with the heavenly wine.

This brat was too stingy, only giving a small amount of a single cup.

Jun Mo Xie watched him leave before turning around with a smile and returned to the room. He did not take this matter to heart but stroked his chin in contemplation nonetheless. The Jun Family is currently too weak.

Although he used medicine to promote Third Uncle's Xuan Qi to the Sky Xuan realm, he had still only just barely broken into the Sky Xuan realm. By his estimate, their current strength is still far from equal to the Magnificent Jewel Hall...

Perhaps he ought to promote his grandpa's strength as well. Does he not have a ninth level Xuan Core in his possession? If he was able to bring out the full potential of this treasured cultivation item, he should be able to promote his grandpa's strength halfway into the Spirit Xuan realm! But the problem is that he had no idea

how to actually use this item.

Thinking about exactly how to solve the problem had given Jun Mo Xie a headache. He had previously wanted to leak this information out to attract powerhouses from around the continent, but he was still hesitating.

A ninth level Xuan Core's appeal is more than enough to even attract the attention of a Spirit Xuan expert. It may be more accurate to say that it would be difficult for any individual with sufficient power to not be tempted!

But that would be playing with fire, and the Jun Family currently could not afford to take such a risk.

Even if the Jun Family currently had two Sky Xuan experts, they still cannot afford to take unnecessary risks!

Reality is cruel. While it's true that a Sky Xuan expert is already approaching the peak of this world's strength, they are still powerless when confronting an even stronger level of existences!

Tianxiang Kingdom's territorial area could not be considered small; there are only eleven nation states of comparable size across the entire continent.

Even so, it could be said that the number of crouching tigers, hidden dragons are as numerous as the clouds! Although the number of powerhouses that had revealed themselves in the open was not many, Jun Mo Xie knows that many remained hidden among the common people, up in the mountains and deep within the forests! Even if Grandpa and Third Uncle are not weak, their strength is not sufficient to rely on!

He was convinced that if the right catalyst is introduced, these hidden experts will all come out of the woodwork!

And the ninth level Xuan Core in his hand would be the best catalyst!

Regardless of whether one was at the Earth Xuan, Sky Xuan or

Spirit Xuan, there will not be anyone who did not want to obtain this item. If this information was leaked, every powerhouse will undoubtedly gather here.

It wouldn't be unreasonable to say that the slightest carelessness would send not only the Jun Family but all of Tianxiang Kingdom to its destruction!

But how am I supposed to obtain the best methods and conditions for cultivating a Xuan Core if we don't draw these people in? How am I going to increase Jun Family's overall strength? Does he really have no choice but to hold onto the treasure that's all but useless? This is really frustrating!

Jun Mo Xie frowned as he pondered about this for a while. He had a hard decision to make; should he put his own safety above all else or take a risk?! Looking up at the sky, he couldn't help but recall his previous life; a solitary figure travelling around the world, laughing fearlessly all across the land! Why have his hands become tied once he had transmigrated to this world?

At this point in his thinking, a surge of domineering air suddenly burst forth from his heart; he couldn't help but laugh out loud as he instantly made up his mind!

Isn't this what people called 'nothing ventured, nothing gained'?!

Even if my decision today attracts the unwanted attention of Spirit Xuan experts, why should I be afraid?!

Xuan Qi was not of importance at all; all I had really needed to do was to pick apart everyone's brains!

Who would he be afraid of with his schemes?

I still have several tricks up my sleeves for dealing with these Spirit Xuan experts even if they are as numerous as the clouds.

Jun Mo Xie made up his mind and finally smiled in relief, unconsciously rubbing his chin with his right hand.

If his fellow apprentices from his previous life can see his current facial expression and this telltale chin rub, everyone would immediately run away as far as possible. That is because Jun Xie had already come up with an extremely brazen...no, one should instead say a completely insane idea. More importantly, whether his idea succeeds or not, it will still end up shocking the world!

Looking out of the window, the sun had already begun to set.

Little Ki came in extremely quiet and made a report. "Young Master, the Old Master had asked you for dinner."

Jun Mo Xie cried out in alarm.

"Why is Grandpa in such a cheerful mood today? Is there some sort of special occasion?" Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but ask after seeing Jun Zhan Tian's delighted expression of schadenfreude.

"I almost laughed to death. I don't know where that old bastard Li Shang got his prescription from but the Jade Sea Coral which was said to be able to restore his shattered dantian so his grandson bought it at 5 million taels. After a few days of preparations, they were unable to wait any longer and started cultivating with the Jade Sea Coral. Guess what happened?" Grandpa Jun smiled as his eyes formed crescent moons, twitching all over from impatience.

"What happened? Don't tell me it didn't work? Did they end up buying a dud?" Jun Mo Xie followed along with his grandpa's charade. His grandpa currently needed someone to play the foil for the big reveal, and his Third Uncle deliberately remained silent.

"Wahahaha..."

Grandpa Jun slapped one hand on the table and the other on his thigh, laughing until his tears were basically flowing out.

"It wasn't just rubbish! And it's not that it didn't work, but that it worked too well! It was too effective! Haha...in the end, in the end, I can't breathe...I'm dying here."

The old man drank a mouthful of water, choking and coughing

for a while before speaking again.

"I have heard that just at the most crucial moment, the Jade Sea Coral unexpectedly detonated! It really was too effective! Wahahaha..."

# Chapter 115: The Man from Magnificent Jewel Hall

---

"Puff!" Jun Mo Xie was drinking a mouthful of wine when he heard that, and started to choke. He unintentionally sprayed out the entire wine on uncle Jun Wu Yi, who was sitting opposite him, and started coughing.

"Wow...haha....Li Shang, that old self-defeating bastard's Dantian was so badly damaged that it seemed like he was taking his dying breaths. Even his beloved grandson Li You Ran was also badly affected." It had been many years since the old man had laughed in such a carefree manner: "That pretty boy's face was so badly disfigured...haha..."

Jun Mo Xie was holding his wine cup with a flabbergasted look on his face.

[I,I,I had only intended on doing minor damage to them. I had never imagined that it would bear such splendid results ah... I only wanted the Jade Coral to be a little damaging, that was all I wanted to do....]

[As for the imperial teacher Li Shang's injury, and Li You Ran's disfiguration, I really hadn't planned on it! I'm innocent in this regard, but then I guess that if I knew that this would happen, I would have made it even viler.... So I believe that this situation is working out well for me now, just good luck I guess....]

"We shall toast to this! Let's get drunk today!" Grandfather Jun burst out laughing, as he reached for his glass.

"Well, this affair has provided a lot amusement to people, but if the imperial teacher Li Shang is really incapable of being cured at this point, then we'll have to be on the lookout for Li Family's movements. Li Shang and his family have always been known to be very arrogant, and they consider everyone to be beneath



themselves. If he dies, then they will look to vent their anger on others, and if that happens, their first target will be our Jun Family! We will not be able to protect ourselves easily, so we must make our preparations in advance." Jun Wu Yi smiled, even though he had the intention of doing so.

"You're right." Grandfather Jun stopped drinking: "If that old wreck really dies then the Li Family will no longer be what it is today, but still, the death of a senior member of their family will certainly cause chaos. Even if he doesn't die, there will still be a lot of confusion. Wu Yi, at present, the main strength of the Jun Family lies in your hands, what's the best way of dealing with this matter in your opinion?"

Jun Wu Yi tensed his eyebrows and said: "If we start preparing while taking Li Shang's death as a precondition, then all our preparations will go to waste if he survives. The best countermeasure to cope up with this entire situation will be to build up a strong backbone, and not give the enemy any chance to attack us. The best policy would be to tactfully convince them that the Jun Family is strong enough to defend itself. The only thing that worries me is that this will only deepen their hatred for the Jun Family, and they might attack us in the future, someday, at a time when we might not be expecting it."

Jun Mo Xie smiled: "Third uncle's words are indeed very wise and thoroughly considered, but I feel that these generals are iron blooded men.... How else could they have survived so many battles? As soon as they find out about the news of these recent affairs, their first response will be to ensure their own safety.... If their own safety isn't assured, then why will they go into the battle to kill the enemy?"

Then, Jun Mo Xie smiled again and said: "Even if they are not very skilled, our clan members can be used to protect us in the battle, otherwise what use do these wasteful people have? Even if they are injured or killed, it won't count as a heavy loss...."

Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi were both stunned momentarily, and looked at each other in dismay, not knowing how to respond to Jun Mo Xie's statement. They had both been in command of armies in the past, and had always considered the soldiers under their command to be their sons, and had always treated them like brothers. Naturally, Jun Mo Xie's argument was not acceptable to either of them.

"Mo Xie, are you saying that we simply abandon the men who have been following our Jun family for generations?" Jun Zhan Tian was quite angry, but reconciled to just stroking his beard in displeasure: "This is a matter of personal integrity and ethics, we share trials and tribulations, whether in life or in death, so you might as well give up that idea! Your idea....." Grandfather Jun didn't say it directly, but the criticality of his statement was evident.

"Grandfather, I understand that you don't approve of my opinion, but I'd like to ask, if you're preoccupied with these highly incompetent people, then this might cost the lives of countless soldiers due to their incompetence. Given the situation at hand, wouldn't it be better to weigh the pros and cons here? Over the years, the border has been becoming increasingly unstable, and wars are being waged perennially, and Third Uncle previously mentioned that these generals are veterans and are likely to lead their armies to confront the enemy, which means that thousands of soldiers are likely to die! For me, if a person is truly incompetent, then it's better to renounce the same, otherwise, they will falter at a crucial moment when burdened with a heavy responsibility, which will result in a defeat! In some key moments, it might even affect the fate of the entire country! How can this be considered a trivial matter? How is my opinion heartless in this perspective?"

Jun Mo Xie proudly retorted: "I suggest that we round up the so-called incompetent and reckless soldiers and use them as meat

shields. Their sacrifice will help us prevent this country from the defeat that we might otherwise have to face at the hands of the enemy, and if that happens, then the entire country will set on the path of annihilation! And this is the hard truth Grandfather, Third Uncle, even if you refuse to admit it. At a crucial moment, it might be painful to make such decisions, but the price we may have to pay for this softheartedness will be far too great!"

"They are servants, and must be used in a time of need! We will have to refrain from acting emotionally, and concentrate on the welfare of the majority of our command. As a leader, if you start acting emotionally, then you've already failed! Grandfather, Third Uncle, if my words offend you, then please forgive me, but the gravity of this matter surpasses principles and I cannot compromise on this!"

Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi were both silent. They were both sensible and intelligent men; they simply couldn't ignore the hard reality, even if these words weren't very pleasant to hear. But for a leader, compassion and leniency are the biggest taboos.

Although they acknowledged that Jun Mo Xie's words made sense, the idea was still against their character, and they wouldn't agree to it. They deserved their venerable status, even though they were slaves of their pedantic thoughts, but were still admirable men!

Or perhaps, this too was an embodiment of their glorious nature!

Jun Mo Xie chuckled and said: "Naturally, we are still just speculating the course of this matter, and the reality might turn out to be an entirely different affair, but I just wish to remind you Grandfather, Third Uncle, that we must renounce our emotions since we will need to act decisively when the time comes!"

Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi inadvertently glanced at Jun Mo Xie and were shocked to see the fierce expression on his face. Jun Wu Yi tensed his eyebrows thoughtfully, and couldn't help but

anticipate that Jun Mo Xie would likely forge his path in this world with his skills. But his heart shuddered at the coldness of his nephew. He was aware of his nephew's position in the family, but as a military leader, it was awfully hard for him to part with the affection he felt for his comrades, but Jun Mo Xie was certainly right!

Jun Zhan Tian stroked his beard as his eyes and mind saw the transparency in Jun Mo Xie's character, even though he was fiery but his political prowess was evident. However, too much ambition would end up flooding his hands with blood! [Is this a blessing? Or a curse?] Grandfather Jun couldn't resist the thought, and sighed as he lowered his head.

The old man was born into poverty and had worked his way through the world to achieve success, which is why he was extremely affectionate towards his soldiers, especially the ones who had worked their way up like him.

[In my sixty years of military experience, stricken with wars and politics, I have settled many disputes and taken many lives.... Even those of young children. When I look back on the number of bodies that I've put on the funeral pyre, Jun Mo Xie's idea is quite acceptable, in fact, I have to admire my grandson's vision.]

Jun Wu Yi unintentionally arched his head and addressed Pang: "Uncle Pang, this matter is very important, and you must ensure that the necessary actions are taken, this matter takes precedence over all other matters."

Old Pang was a housekeeper for the Jun residence. Even though Old Pang was a servant, everyone knew that he was very close to Jun Zhan Tian, so much so that he'd follow him to the gates of death and beyond. Jun Zhan Tian had never looked down on Old Pang, and had always treated him like a brother.

After his numerous years of selfless service in the past, Jun Zhan Tian had once decided to reward Old Pang with the title of a

warrior, which would allow him to avail the riches and pleasures of life. However, Old Pang knew that he wouldn't be able to accompany his elder brother if he accepted this title, and refused even though Jun Zhan Tian insisted, and hence still continued to serve as a housekeeper.

Jun Wu Yi had always treated Old Pang as an Uncle since he deserved the respect.

Old Pang nodded as he smiled, and then walked out.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but think: [The Jun Family might be bold, heroic, and iron-blooded, but their hearts are heavy with emotions, and righteousness. A righteous reputation is a great advantage, but as an influential family in a political scenario, an emotional heart, and a righteous mind are very unsuitable.]

Just then, a sonorous voice sounded: "Brother Wu Yi, it's been a decade; I trust that you've been well since we last met?" The air vibrated under the effect of that powerful voice.

Jun Wu Yi's face suddenly became pale, his lips started trembling, and he almost jumped up from his chair.

Jun Mo Xie gently extended his hand and placed it on his Uncle's lap and shook his head to give an indication. Jun Mo Xie had heard this voice before; the voice belonged to the man who had blocked his way at the auction. This man was the Magnificent Jewel Hall representative who was opposing the Jun Family!

# Chapter 116: Battling with a Sky Xuan

---

This was definitely an enemy disguised as a friend!

This man was Jun Wu Yi's second cousin, so obviously the two men had shared several of their adventures in the past.

At this point, it was important for Jun Wu Yi to control his emotions, otherwise, their plans could fail.

Jun Zhan Tian glanced over at Jun Wu Yi and could tell from his expression that there was cause to worry.

"Indeed, it's been many years since we last met. Please excuse me for not being able to step outside to greet you. Please come in." Jun Wu Yi sat there motionlessly, as he greeted the man in an honest and deep tone, which sounded quite sincere and heartfelt. In a split second, Jun Wu Yi had calmed his mind down, and the tension on his face had given way to a serene and calm expression, while his eyes were splendidly concealing his true feelings. Jun Wu Yi turned to Jun Zhan Tian: "Father, you need not engage in this affair personally, I can answer for myself here..."

Jun Zhan Tian slowly, but critically, nodded.

Jun Mo Xie smiled and stood up, he gently walked over and stationed himself behind Jun Wu Yi's wheelchair: "Third Uncle, I'll keep you company."

He gently pushed the wheelchair outside the dining area. He couldn't help smiling coldly in his heart: [The Magnificent Jewel Hall and Jun Family indeed have some grievances!]

There were two middle-aged men standing in the courtyard, dressed in white, both men looked quite elegant by their appearance. But Jun Mo Xie could tell that even though these two men were standing shoulder to shoulder, in a similar stance, their adjacent hands were seemingly too loose for comfort....

In addition, it seemed as if both the men were watching each

other from the corner of their eyes...

Jun Mo Xie immediately understood that even though the two men seemed on friendly terms by their appearance, they were on guard against each other in reality! Although these two men belonged to the same family, they weren't on harmonious terms, in fact, it appeared as if they were on the verge of killing each other!

[No wonder that the bids from the Magnificent Jewel Hall were so odd the other day! It seems as if the problem lies between the two men!]

"Dear Brother, several years may have gone by but you're still as graceful as ever ah." Jun Wu Yi's face seemed to be welling up in joy, but in the pretext of sad memories. One of the men smiled back, but the other simply ignored the greeting.

One of the men stepped forward, carefully examined Jun Wu Yi, and his face seemed somewhat excited to see Jun Wu Yi: "You haven't changed one bit in all these years, if the Miss knew about this then she'd certainly insist on coming here..." he stopped abruptly in the middle of the sentence, and his face revealed an apologetic smile: "Wu Yi, you've advanced from Earth Xuan to Sky Xuan in these last ten years? That is indeed very commendable."

As a matter of fact, it was rather rare to reach the Earth Xuan level at an age as young as Wu Yi's. However, instead of receding due to his disability, Jun Wu Yi had even managed to advance to the Sky Xuan level, which was even rarer. However, Jun Wu Yi was a cripple, and even his cousin couldn't overlook that fact, and was admiring him even more now.

The moment he heard the word 'Miss', a wave of sadness washed over Jun Wu Yi's face, and it took a while for the muscle spasm on his face to return to its normal state. The other white-dressed man's face suddenly became queer, while his eyes glared at Jun Wu Yi in a murderous manner.

"Jun Wu Yi, although your lower body is crippled and completely

wasted, it seems that your upper body is still fully functional. Plus, you seem in a very good mood right now." The other man laughed as he verbally mocked Jun Wu Yi. This man's attitude was poles apart from his companions, and it was evident that he was a sworn enemy of Jun Wu Yi.

"Indeed, you're right about that. My Third Uncle's lower body might be useless, but I'd like to see your distinguished head ending up the same way." Jun Wu Yi hadn't responded, but Jun Mo Xie, who was standing behind his uncle, opened his mouth and said. Even though his tone was fairly normal, the man's face was now as pale and white as his clothes.

"Jun Mo Xie! You ignorant child, do not forget that I'm older than you! You need to watch your mouth and do not disrespect me again. You think that I can't slaughter you because this is your house?" The man in white looked at Jun Mo Xie with murderous intentions, while the corners skin of his eyes were already beginning to converge, as his face became a bit grim, and a bit scary.

"Ha ha, sire, right now, you're standing in the Jun courtyard, not the Magnificent Jewel Hall's courtyard. And, standing in the Jun courtyard, you first insult a master of the Jun Family, and then you dare to threaten the young master of the Jun Family? Do you actually believe that if the young master of the Jun Family ordered it, then our men won't cut you to pieces?"

Jun Mo Xie leisurely looked at the man and watched as his expression turned even graver.

"Ha ha ha ...." The man looked skywards and laughed for a while, and then he addressed Jun Wu Yi: "Jun Wu Yi, he's your nephew, so I'd really appreciate if he keeps his mouth shut, unless of course, he wants to get beheaded by my blade.... Ha ha ha ha Jun Wu Yi, and you should also tell him to not mention the strength of the Jun family again, and then he threatens to kill me? Ha ha ha ha.... His ignorance is funny, he dares to be ignorant in front of a man who is



far more powerful... his attitude is admirably pathetic!"

"Xiao Han, this is indeed the Jun Family's residence, so you better watch your arrogance!" The other man in white berated furiously: "If you do not wish to stay here with me, then please leave before making any more irresponsible remarks."

"Mu Xue Tong, you say that this is Jun Family's residence?! So then, even you're not qualified to shout at me!" The white-dressed man named Xiao Han stated without looking at his companion, and was still eerily staring at Jun Wu Yi.

"Ha ha ha, this is such a funny thing about this world, so many people think that they're highly important... it's just so interesting to watch." Jun Mo Xie laughed out: "Brother, don't give yourself so much importance. Touch your conscience and ask yourself, what good would you be to your family if the Jun Family slaughtered you here today? You'd just be another dead man. Do you really believe that they would go to war with the Jun family for this?"

Jun Mo Xie continued to look at the man as he continued to mock him: "Pitiful child, let me tell you the truth; even if a man dies, the sun and the moon will still rise in the east, and set in the west. Do not take yourself too seriously, because once you neglect this point, you'll certainly suffer setbacks, and you'll end up falling a long way. This is my sincere and earnest advice, free of charge ha ha ha.... I'm nice that way!"

The man's shadow flashed, making a 'pop pop' sound.

The white-dressed man furiously rushed over and raised his hand to slap Jun Mo Xie in the face. Jun Mo Xie was in the middle of laughing but was forced to retreat to dodge the incoming strike. He slanted his body backwards but was unable to avoid the hand, which ended up hitting his shoulder. But simultaneously, he also managed to extend his elbow and raise his knee.

'Puff puff' the man uttered, as he his face went green, while his steps retreated and his body's posture became very uncomfortably

unnatural. His two red eyes were flaming with rage as he continued to painfully glare at Jun Mo Xie, and it seemed that he was angry enough to swallow Jun Mo Xie alive.

Even if Jun Mo Xie was being rude, he was still younger than the man. The man only wished to teach him a lesson and hadn't intended on killing him. Therefore, the man had only attacked half-heartedly, just to put Jun Mo Xie's rude mouth in its place.

Otherwise, as an accomplished Sky Xuan expert, a young boy like him could have never matched his skill, let alone beaten him.

But the man had never expected that Jun Mo Xie's counter attack would be so sharp, quick, accurate and fierce!

The elbow had pounded the man's throat, while the knee had sharply hulled his crotch! The man had grossly underestimated his enemy, and went in completely unguarded, and had fallen prey to a crafty, precise, and well-timed counter, which he was unable to block.

Unexpectedly, this kid had torn a hole in his defense!

If he hadn't crossed into the Sky Xuan level, then these two strikes would have killed him on the spot, twice! Even in this case, the man's throat was sore with pain, while his crotch was practically scorched, so much so, that the man was unable to endure the suffering, and his exhausted body constantly exhaled in discomfort.

Xiao Han groaned furiously, while his whole body went blue with rage. He recklessly charged again to dispose of that vile youngster! Mu Xue Tong hastily darted across and blocked his companion's way, and rebuked: "Haven't you already disgraced yourself enough by attacking this young child?"

Jun Wu Yi coldly glared at Xiao Han and decided that if the man attacked Jun Mo Xie again, then he'd reveal his real strength without caring about the consequences, and would kill the man!

Xiao Han was gasping, his voice had become hoarse, it was apparent that Jun Mo Xie's two strikes had shaken him to the core: "Today you're getting away with this kid!" He stated as he stared at Jun Mo Xie: "But boy, you better start praying that I don't get my hands on you again!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled and said: "I wouldn't worry about that. But I pray that the next time we meet, no one is there to save you from me!"

"You will kill me? Ha ha ha....." Xiao Han laughed hysterically in his angered state of mind: "Never in this lifetime!"

"Is that so? How's that crotch of yours feeling, still hurting?!" Jun Mo Xie mocked coldly.

Xiao Han opened his mouth to express his anger but didn't actually say anything. Xiao Han was a Sky Xuan expert and didn't feel that he needed to bicker unnecessarily with an ordinary kid like Jun Mo Xie anymore.

He obviously knew that he hadn't applied his full strength in the attack, and not even being at Silver Xuan level, Jun Mo Xie was nothing more than an ant in his eyes. In fact, even a Jade Xuan expert was no match for a Sky Xuan master. Even a Jade Xuan level expert wouldn't be able to take his strike, and would fall to his death in no time. If a learned man had attacked his throat and crotch in this manner, then he would have been apologetic and would have been scared to death by now for the fear of the consequences; but instead of being scared, Jun Mo Xie was gloating about it!

Jun Wu Yi asked coldly: "Brother Xiao, don't tell me that you've come this far to argue with my nephew ah?" Xiao Han snorted but didn't say another word in reply.

Mu Xue Tong smiled and said: "Wu Yi, I have come to see you after ten years, and so, I've gotten you a present."

Jun Wu Yi's heart started to beat faster: "Is it from her?"

# Chapter 117: The Life doesn't go in Reverse

---

"Yes! It's from her!" Mu Xue Tong nodded as he replied. He reached into his breast pocket and pulled out a piece of cloth.

"She gave this to you for him? Why didn't I know about this? Why didn't you tell me earlier?!" Xiao Han was suddenly very furious. The veins in his bloodshot eyes were clearly visible and his fists were clenched.

"As you said earlier, you work with me. What is your status? And what's her status? Does she need to notify you of her wishes and actions? You're being ridiculous now!" Mu Xue Tong looked at his companion contemptuously.

"Give that to me!" Xiao Han's body flashed towards Mu Xue Tong's, and he tried to snatch the cloth. Mu Xue Tong promptly put the cloth back in his pocket. Their bodies became shadowy, and a hint of blue light started to emerge from their bodies. Their silhouettes appeared to be forming a circle, as the two men started to kick and punch each other. Their collisions were producing loud sounds, while the underlying strength of their strikes was giving rise to sharp and turbulent winds.

Their speed was so alarmingly fast that even Jun Wu Yi, a Sky Xuan expert, could barely distinguish between the two men. However, this didn't mean that Jun Wu Yi's strength was beneath these men, and on the contrary, now, he was a lot stronger than them. As for why he couldn't clearly see their movements, he had been a cripple for the last decade and had only reached the Sky Xuan level due to the five herbs imbued into his body, and it would take a while before his Sky Xuan strength attained stability.

As for Jun Mo Xie, even though his strength was far lesser than the two men, his vision was sharp enough to clearly distinguish their movements. He could easily tell that even though Xiao Han was a Sky Xuan expert, his strength was fairly inferior to Mu Xue

Tong's, and if the latter had any misgivings against his companion, then Xiao Han would have already been dead!

But even then.....

"Bang!" Xiao Han was sent flying into the air. He coughed and choked in the mid-air, and spat out a bit of blood. He landed on his feet, and in a few hops, distanced himself from the others, but his resentment filled voice sounded at a distance: "Mu Xue Tong, I will remember this, and you will pay for this later. Jun Wu Yi, I will kill you!"

The smoke and dust cleared revealing Mu Xue Tong's white-dressed figure, standing calmly, but staring at Jun Mo Xie in a bizarre manner. He suddenly laughed: "Wu Yi, your nephew is indeed a remarkable fellow! His strikes actually managed to inflict serious damage to Xiao Han, and took out at least twenty percent of his combat power; otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to win so easily today. Had I not seen him in action in person, I would have never believed that a boy who hasn't even attained the Silver Xuan level could injure a Sky Xuan expert in battle!"

Jun Mo Xie humbly smiled and said: "I believe that once a man is injured in that manner, a downgrade in combat ability is only a natural side effect. However, I was lucky, since he considered me to be an ant, and forgot that ants can sting. Otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to injure him."

Mu Xue Tong smiled: "Perhaps that's the reason...I've never seen him struggle in this manner in our companionship of over ten years, and nor have I ever been able to oust him this easily. It's funny that the first time this happens is the day I first meet you, right?"

Jun Mo Xie chuckled: "That's because he's never looked down on you, but he thought that I was too small and weak to hurt him."

Mu Xue Tong glanced at him profoundly and stated in a serious manner: "Well, I guess that's the case. But now I know that even

weak people can be very dangerous, and I will remember to not neglect your ability."

Jun Mo Xie smiled but decided against commenting on it and said: "This.... I believe my Third Uncle has been waiting very anxiously."

Mu Xue Tong laughed, and then he took out the cloth from his breast pocket once again and handed it over to Jun Wu Yi.

Jun Wu Yi's body was faintly trembling while his hands were tightly gripping the handrail of his wheelchair. The rosewood flooring made a slight 'click' sound as he slowly extended his hand and took the small cloth. He held it gently but firmly with both hands as if holding a very precious and fragile treasure in his hands.

Mu Xue Tong looked at Jun Wu Yi, bowed his head and said: "The Miss has been waiting for you all along!"

Jun Wu Yi suddenly looked up: "Are you saying that she.....?"

Mu Xue Tong nodded gravely: "The Miss is still longing for you!"

Jun Wu Yi's face was somewhat emotional while his eyes were glittery, as his trembling hands slowly and carefully opened the cloth, layer by layer, for he feared disturbing its contents...

The small cloth slowly unfolded into a handkerchief. A few strands of jet black hair lay in its center...

The delicate embroidery in one corner of the handkerchief read:

[I haven't crowned my hair in ten years, and every night I look at the moon and hope to come to Tian Xiang, but I know that the life doesn't go in reverse!]

Jun Wu Yi's body trembled like dried leaves shuddering in the wind, and slowly, he lowered his face and pressed it to the handkerchief..... he pressed his head against the hair in the cloth, and didn't raise his head up for a long while.....

Mu Xue Tong sighed deeply and said: "Miss is preparing to break into the Spirit Xuan...." Jun Wu Yi's entire body shuddered! But he still didn't look up. His face refused to part with the handkerchief and it appeared that those strands of hair had become his entire universe in that moment.

Mu Xue Tong stood silently and calmly for a long while before he said: "Brother Wu Yi, I came to narrate this affair to you, and will take my leave now. Brother Wu Yi, I hope that you can understand the Miss's situation, and I pray that these hard times come to an end one day... don't lose hope Brother! There will come a day!" Then, he folded his hands and turned away.

Jun Wu Yi didn't look up until the man had covered a few feet, and he said in a hoarse voice: "I was too moved and forgot my manners. I apologize for not being able to visit your home, but please convey my regards to Miss Shao Qian." Shao Qian was Mu Xue Tong's lover.

Mu Xue Tong didn't turn around, but smiled as he said: "Shao Qian is now your sister-in-law, next time I visit you, I'll bring her along."

Jun Wu Yi's words were heartfelt and honest: "Congratulations!"

Mu Xue Tong smiled, a bright azure light flashed from his body, which was followed by a cold autumn breeze, and just like a leaf, his body gently drifted away, and soon disappeared into the infinite horizon.

The distance between the heaven and earth became hazy as the curtains of the night began to descend.

Jun Wu Yi remained seated in his wheelchair, while his face was still pressed against the handkerchief and hair that lay within. The scene remained motionless in the windy background, as the shadows of the night slowly dimmed the skylight.

Jun Mo Xie stood quietly on one side and didn't make any sound,



as he quietly kept his uncle some company. The duo didn't even look at each other but knew each other's feelings...

The moon slowly circled in the sky, and the stars were shining brightly. Jun Wu Yi's heart finally emerged from the memories of the past. The ten years of suffering and torment that his heart had endured was evident from the hoarse voice in which he narrated the tale to Jun Mo Xie.

Twelve years ago, the Jun Family was in its prime, and Jun Zhan Tian was invincible in battle. Everyone feared his reputation on the battlefield, and no one could defeat him!

Out of the three male heirs of the Jun Family, the eldest, Jun Wu Hui, was known as "The White Commander!", he could change the course of any battle with a wave of his hands. He was close enough to the Emperor of Tian Xiang to influence his Majesty's decisions.

The second son, Jun Wu Meng, excelled in combat and his superior intelligence ousted any general in battle! The Jun Family was in its prime... the entire Xuan Xuan continent was impressed with their prowess.

Jun Wu Yi was only nineteen at the time and was in the prime of his youth. Young, handsome, talented, exceptional in martial arts, extraordinary temperament and confident, he attracted the fantasies and affection of countless minister's daughters.

Jun Wu Yi ventured into an auction of the Magnificent Jewel Hall to amuse himself, as is the temperament of youngsters. But inside the auction, he encountered a flowery young maiden. The two exchanged a few words and imprinted a favorable impression with regard to each other. Soon enough, the two of them were touring around the Tian Xiang country, hand in hand.

Free birds, Jun Wu Yi and the maiden, Han Yan Yao, would often travel outside the country together, and their feeling for each other deepened over time. Eventually, the two fell in love, and naturally, the news broke out.

After a while, a few mysterious men appeared in Tian Xiang in search of Jun Wu Yi. Jun Wu Yi was traveling abroad with Han Yan Yao, but these people attacked the Jun Family without taking note of it! It was obvious that these men weren't afraid of the Jun Family, even though it was in its prime.

The Jun Family suffered heavy losses in the battle that followed. These men killed off several of the Jun Family's experts since none of these mysterious men were below the Earth Xuan level. Moreover, these dozen or so men had several tricks up their sleeves.

Jun Wu Yi was obviously quite shocked when he found about the incident upon his return. The maiden, Han Yan Yao, explained to Jun Wu Yi that this incident had been caused by her antecedents. She hailed from a mysterious place, and her family could best be described as one of the most powerful and secretive families of this world, and perhaps the most mysterious organization!

Blizzard Silver City! Han Clan of Blizzard Silver City!

Blizzard Silver City!

This, one name, was mysterious enough to intimidate anyone! Thousands of years of accumulation had made it a formidable power!

And Magnificent Jewel Hall was only Blizzard Silver City's subsidiary. The so-called 'Magnificent Jewel Hall' was just the agent, and the Blizzard Silver City was the real master, and they were only given the leftovers! Meaning, that once the Blizzard Silver City had discarded something, the item would be handed over to the Magnificent Jewel Hall for auction, and even these items fetched amazing prices.

The Magnificent Jewel Hall would sell these articles for a huge amount of money, and would use this money to buy some more fantastic items from the Blizzard Silver City. Whether it was an ordinary immortal technique, or a power-boosting martial skill, or

a rare type of Xuan Beast Dan, it could be said that all these items were extremely rare in the human world, and very hard to obtain, but the Magnificent Jewel Hall was able to procure them from the Blizzard Silver City, and were willing to pay any price.

Han Yan Yao was the daughter of Han Zhan, the master of Blizzard Silver City.

Of course, Han Yan Yao's origin wasn't necessarily a bad thing, even if Han Yan Yao was the daughter of Blizzard Silver City's master, Jun Wu Yi was also the son of Jun Family. The Jun Family wasn't comparable to the Blizzard Silver City but was still a super-power in its own merit.

But the biggest problem was that Han Yan Yao was already engaged to Blizzard Silver City's most influential elder, Xiao Hui Feng's grandson, Xiao Han, and the two were set to be married upon reaching the appropriate age!

After the two of them returned, they tried to stay together, but the Xiao Family threatened to turn the Jun Family's life upside down. Han Yan Yao reluctantly agreed to return to the Blizzard Silver City, and once she left, she never came back!

# Chapter 118: His Deep-rooted Hatred

---

Before leaving, Han Yan Yao had told Jun Wu Yi that if Jun Wu Yi was able to break into the Spirit Xuan then the two of them might have a chance of being together. At that time, Jun Wu Yi wasn't even thinking about making the leap to Spirit Xuan since he was only half-way through the Gold Xuan! The distance between Gold Xuan and Spirit Xuan was no lesser than the distance between the Earth and the Heavens.

In the two years that followed, the Jun Family suffered several defeats in the Tian Xiang monarchy's expeditions and Jun Wu Yi's both elder Brothers, Jun Wu Hui, and Jun Wu Meng passed away, along with countless faithful soldiers of the Jun Family. Under these circumstances, Jun Wu Yi was asked to take charge, and unwilling to accept defeat under such harsh circumstances, he ended up getting crippled.

Mu Xue Tong was one of the several people who were close to Han Yan Yao around that time, and the only one inside the Blizzard Silver City who liked Jun Wu Yi, apart from Han Yan Yao, of course. In fact, the two men were like Brothers.

After his lower body was disabled, Jun Wu Yi went into a depression since he knew that he no longer had a chance of being with Han Yan Yao. Time flew by, and ten years passed in a flash. Jun Wu Yi would look at the mid night moon and pray to meet his lover one day, but had never thought that he'd actually hear from her again!

At this moment, several thoughts were surging through Jun Wu Yi's mind, causing a tsunami of emotions in his heart.

Jun Mo Xie listened very quietly, without making any sound. He knew that Jun Wu Yi wasn't just saying these words for the sake of it, but actually meant them from the bottom of his heart. He had locked these emotions in a forgotten corner of his heart for the last

ten years, and now that he had unexpectedly received a word from his lover, he simply couldn't control his excitement and his desire any more. Right now, all he needed was a casual listener so he could vent his emotions out. He probably didn't care who the listener was, or even if he understood the emotions... he just needed someone to listen!

Jun Mo Xie listened to these words like a stone wall, but knew that it would still be helpful to Jun Wu Yi.

Jun Wu Yi had been holding these depressing emotions for too long now.

The cold night was covered with fog and smoke, and Jun Wu Yi's whispered his tale in low and grave voice. He would stumble, stutter, but continued to narrate his story slowly.....

"The Jun Family was slipping from its place of glory, and then my second Brother died in a mysterious manner. I suspected that the Blizzard Silver City could have been behind it since they were known to work in the shadows, and so I immediately launched an investigation into the matter. But my military accomplishments were meagre, whereas the Blizzard Silver City was too secretive, and I never got anywhere with my investigation. Eventually, I was asked to go to war with the Yu Tang Empire and managed to gain the upper hand, and it seemed as if I would win if I pushed them just a little bit more! But just at the crucial moment, some very advanced Xuan experts mysteriously appeared in the Yu Tang Empire's ranks, and led their cavalries to confront us in battle, and my whole army was sent into a state of chaos!"

"I had a lot of advanced Xuan experts by my side, including a Sky Xuan expert named Chen Er Mazi...I remember him shouting: 'Hurry, Run, Third General, Run!' and then I remember an azure blue light flashing across the battlefield, and his bright red blood started to flow. Several men surrounded me to protect me, and formed a protective section..... and they all died in front of me... one by one.... Just before they died, they would look at me, and

their eyes would scream at me to save myself. I ran over and hugged a dying man, his whole body was completely broken, I could hear his bones as they shattered, and he kept vomiting blood. He growled at me 'Hurry, run.....' "

"It was like... I was in a nightmare! Their blood was splashing across my face, wet, red, very sticky; warm...the blood of my Brothers...."

Jun Wu Yi lowered his head in pain as he frowned. When he was narrating Chen Er Mazi's last words, his voice had suddenly and unwittingly switched to high pitch, but had reverted back to a whisper soon after. He was already wiping his face with his hand, almost as if he was trying to wipe the memory of his comrade's blood splashing across his face.....

"But I had already lost my mind, these people were my Brothers, I had grown up in their company, we had shared numerous drinks together, we had sung songs together, we had hunted together, we had travelled together, we had fought the enemy together.... celebrated together, and now they were all dying in front of me!"

"Dead! Dead in front of my own eyes! My Brother! My Brothers! They were all gone!" Jun Wu Yi was unintentionally screaming at this point, in fact he was almost roaring. He closed his eyelids tightly, and two huge tears slowly oozed from his eyes...

"This was my fault! This was all because of me!!!"

"I was desperate, I wanted to kill them all! All of them!" Even though Jun Wu Yi was shouting, his voice wasn't backing him, and one could tell that he was feeling very weak inside: "I was too weak and too slow. Those people caught me, and stuffed some drugs inside my body, which dispelled a mysterious gas inside my Dan Tian, and closed off my lower body's meridians! I couldn't even scream, but I kept watching their veiled faces and the way they blinked their eyes, I think one of them was a woman, but as long as even one of them appears in front of me, I'll immediately be able to

recognize the person!"

"I knew that these people were from the Blizzard Silver City! These people had come straight from hell; they were so cold that I felt like I was being attacked by the devil! I will always remember the sounds of their pleased laughter as they tortured me, he he he...." Jun Wu Yi's eyes had become red.

"..... and since then, no matter how much I tried, I could never stand up; my heart was full of hatred, but I couldn't say it....Blizzard Silver City was too strong, and if father found out, then he would certainly tried to take revenge..... but even a hundred Jun Families aren't strong enough to match the Blizzard Silver City! I wanted to discard my life as well, but if another heir of the Jun Family died, then the whole family would have been obliterated...."

"My elder Bothers died because of me, but I'm still alive and healthy. My soldiers died for me, and in front of me, but I was allowed to live this humiliating life..." Jun Wu Yi's face revealed a sad smile, as more tears streamed down his cheeks: "Soon enough, two of my nephews died for my cause, but I managed to survive.....Mo Xie! Don't you think that your third uncle is useless? Really useless? A complete f\*\*king waste?!"

Jun Wu Yi's face had a smile of misery on it, whereas his chest was rhythmically rising and falling; the sea of hatred inside his heart had, at last, found a way to pour out its resentment.

Jun Mo Xie had been listening very quietly, with a calm and cool look on his face. He was quite mused by Jun Wu Yi's story, and slowly opened his mouth: "In that case, dying would have been too easy for you, but to live such a life would have sure been very difficult. Death would have been a very cowardly choice, but having survived such a blow is the sign of a true warrior!"

"Death would have been the end of your suffering, but to live and bear so much without actually losing your mind, Uncle, you're

truly extraordinary!"

Jun Wu Yi smiled sadly: "Who says I want to die?... I cannot die, I mustn't die Mo Xie.... Your grandfather had three sons, but now two of them are dead, and if I also died?!!! Your grandfather will collapse, and the Jun Family....finished....."

Jun Mo Xie remained silent.

These affairs had been simmering inside Jun Wu Yi's heart for too long now, and today he had met an old enemy and an old friend from the past, post which he had received a token from his sweetheart, which had completely destabilized his mind. All this, coupled with the fact that his body had just been restored, Jun Wu Yi had gotten too excited, and emotional, and was unknowingly saying these things since he had lost control over his mind.

"Over the years, when I closed my eyes, my brothers would ask me: 'Why haven't you taken revenge for us?' The blood of my brothers would be staining my face as they would ask 'Third general, why haven't you avenged us? Take our revenge! Avenge our deaths!' " Jun Wu Yi clenched his fists so hard that blood started to drip from his palm.

"Even in my dreams, I can feel the blood of brothers, hot, fresh, and it just wouldn't stop flowing...." Jun Wu Yi leaned forward, and covered his face with his hands, and his whole body started to tremble again....

Jun Mo Xie took a deep breath, and looked up at the night sky. Suddenly, a wave of energy surged through his body, and that long-dormant desire to kill started bursting out of his body again!

He smiled coldly: [Blizzard Silver City? Xiao Family! You think you're good ah? You think that you have the strength to do whatever you please? Ha ha, maybe for the time being, but now you're my targets. I intend on climbing up the power ladder of this world, and I don't mind using you as a stepping stone!]



[Since I am Jun Mo Xie now, then I will bear the glory and the shame of the Jun Family as well! Blizzard Silver City's Xiao Family? Hum hum, just a few years' time, and this evil monarch will turn your Xiao Family to a mouse's leftovers!]

Jun Zhan Tian was standing a fair distance away, staring at his only remaining son, and only remaining grandson, and his heart was brimming with mixed emotions.

[The pain that my youngest has had to bear these years, how silly was I to not know it? Why haven't I taken revenge against the Blizzard Silver City? Did you really think that I wouldn't have found out, did you think that you could have actually fooled me forever?]

[How did I not know about this feud for so many years? But the Jun Family has acquired tens of thousands of followers from all generations! If the Jun Family decided it, then we could even impulsively dethrone a small king, and if the whole Jun Family came after you, then we'd uproot you, but it will be a very bloody incident....]

He stood his ground silently for a while, but then old man Jun quietly disappeared into night winds.

The uncle and nephew duo remained out in the open, listening to the sobbing of the wind, the weeping and complaining.....

The autumn was upon the Tian Xiang country.

And the autumn was growing!

On the surface of it, the Tian Xiang country was having a very quiet autumn, but it concealed the surge of several birds in its secrecy. At least hundreds of birds had started to flap their wings, flying into the sky, drawing beautiful trajectories.

Many advanced level Xuans had suddenly ended their closed-door practice after several years, and had come out of their place of hiding to shuttle the street of the Tian Xiang Empire's capital,

listening to every gossip and paying attention to every unusual action. Like dutiful detectives, they had started to closely investigate the dark side of the capital.

Moreover, word would spread throughout the entire continent in a few days, and many more people would end up being caught in the excitement after receiving the message, and would make their way to the Tian Xiang Empire soon.

# Chapter 119: Opportunity?

---

(TL' note: This chapter is written in a very metaphoric manner, so might have to read up one idiom to understand it better. But I've done my best to reduce it normal reading standard, since the context revolved around a typical Chinese idiom, which can be hard to find on the internet.)

Apart from this one, there was another piece of news which was causing a sensation.

Unexpectedly.....

There were riots inside the Tian Xiang imperial city a little while ago, and the northern part of the city was destroyed overnight. The Tang Family had gone on an unbridled and unrestrained man-hunt and this whole incident had caused them some serious losses in manpower. It would appear that they had lost something very valuable.

This item turned out to be a ninth grade Xuan Beast's Xuan Core.

Even though this news wasn't confirmed, someone had mentioned this to be the reason behind the unrest, and the rumor quickly grew wings and spread throughout the continent in a very short period of time.

"This is a great opportunity! We must seize the Xuan Core!"

Inside the imperial tutor's house, Li You Ran was sitting on Li Shang's bedside.

"Really? Our last venture ended up a case of the 'mantis stalking the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind', how can you be so sure that this is a good opportunity for us?" Li Shang's health was a lot better now, but he was still very weak. Even though he hadn't been able to return to his normal health, he was still talking in a normal tone. At the moment, his eyes had a look of glimmer inside them, as he watched his grandson, and waited for his reply. (TL's note:

the quoted text in the para is a Chinese idiom. I'd explain it in detail, but that would make it another story altogether. It basically means that you make a small term gain only to realize that it comes back to bite you later on.)

Since that day, after the damage to his Dan Tian, his health had stabilized after undergoing several treatments, but his physical health was still on the declining end of the curve. Li Shang was quite disheartened to know about the state of his physical body, and knew that he wouldn't be able to carry on for long, which is why he was using his time to educate his dearest grandson, Li You Ran. No matter what the issue at hand would be, he would first ask Li You Ran for his views on the matter, and would then point out the flaws in it.

This time however, Li You Ran didn't let him down and there was a massive progress in his previously finite thinking ability. Even though his understanding was limited on most matters, he was showing a keen interest in learning, which was warming Li Shang's cold heart and was coming as a consolation to him since it seemed that he had finally found his successor!

"Right now, the situation is very clear. The Tang Family's Xuan Core was stolen. I believe that only three gangs are capable of stealing something like this, but neither of them is stupid enough to allow the matter to leak out to the public since it would cause them a great amount of trouble, especially at the hands of the Tang Family. The Xuan Core is too important, even more than its owners estimated, and if one of these three gangs had stolen this Dan and the other two found out, then they would try to steal it from the original thief. So it seems that this item was stolen by someone else."

"In other words, we should be able to seize the Xuan Core if we were able to identify this party!"

"On the day of the theft, the person manages to steal something important without anyone noticing it, and then managed to

disappear without a trace. So it's not surprising that there was no further news on this matter for a while. But now, suddenly, there is more news on this subject, and identity of the item has been revealed: a Xuan Core from a ninth rank Xuan Beast. This is a very surprising thing since that person managed to disappear without a trace on the day of the theft, and has chosen to wait this long to make his move... there must be a hidden intention behind this!"

"His intention.....your grandson is still quite stupid, and has only been able to identify a few reasons....firstly, although a Xuan Core was stolen, the person didn't know how to use it, or may even have not known its true utilities. In the pursuit of finding out its usage, he must have attracted too much attention, and the news could have spread out from that end. This could be a possibility, since the Xuan Core is a very mysterious treasure, and even the Tang Family had been researching its true potential for the last few decades and still haven't understood it fully. Even us, if we hadn't had our knowledge, then maybe even we wouldn't be able to understand its true value."

"Go on." Li Shang's eyes revealed a color of appreciation.

"Secondly, this person could belong solely to the Tian Xiang city, and is unlikely to a low level man, and in fact is a very high level expert, maybe even as high as the Sky Xuan or something similar, or could be preparing for a major breakthrough right now. Otherwise, he wouldn't have revealed this information, and would have definitely built a cocoon around him and would have patiently waited for this incident to calm down.... So based on that, I can only think that this person is about to make a major breakthrough."

"Yes! And is there a third possibility?" the shade of appreciation in Li Shang's eyes was getting denser.

"Third... this person belongs to a very power clan, and knows that they he will have the backing of a very strong network! This looks like the most likely situation at present! There are several

very powerful and wealthy families and characters in the city, but we would be looking for someone who can muster the entire strength of their family, since only such an individual could be capable of acting so boldly." Li You Ran's voice was very low and careful-sounding.

"Very well analyzed. As a result, it can be said that the number of targets can be reduced to very small number." Li Shang was tapping the center of his palm with his other hand with a pleased look on his face. "Do you have any suspects in mind?"

"Well, we should rule out our Li Family and, naturally, the Tang Family. So that leaves the Jun Family, Mu Rong Family, Du Gu Family, Meng Family and Song Family. It could be any one of these five!"

Li You Ran raised his index finger: "The Jun Family, even though they are our enemies, Jun Zhan Tian is an honest and upright man, and wouldn't get involved in such an activity. Jun Wu Yi, even though his physical body is a waste, but his mind is still fully functional.... but then again, he is physically handicapped and that limits his mobility. As for the Jun Family's young dandy, Jun Mo Xie, I'm afraid that he isn't capable of mobilizing the Jun Family entire power base. So for now, the Jun Family is our least likely suspect, but then again, we can't completely exclude them either since anything is possible in this case!"

"The chances of this being Du Gu Family's work is not very high either. Although they have the influence and the power to be our 'Orioles', but fundamentally speaking, the Du Gu Family lacks the ambition! Otherwise, given the strength of the Du Gu Family, they could have easily replaced the Jun Family by now. The reason His Majesty tolerates the Du Gu Family is because: they are a family of warriors but unlike the Jun Family, they don't have any powerful commanders from the past! The Du Gu Family's warriors can charge and break past the enemy ranks, but unless a man from the Jun Family, like Jun Wu Hui, Jun Wu Meng, or Jun Wu Yi is

overseeing the overall situation, the military might of the Du Gu Family is far from capable of notching a victory on their own. But that doesn't mean that it's not them yet!"

"If they are the ones behind this, then the Du Gu Family could be seeing the emergence of major personality and His Majesty would probably suppress the entire Family! After all, even though the Majesty considers the Du Gu Family to be very reliable, they don't have the merit that the Jun Family has. But it could still be them? The Du Gu Family still has a lot of power, right?...."

"To think about it, the Du Gu Family is great, and have numerous offspring, but they don't have the unity that the Jun Family does. Although the Jun Family might appear to be ruined, but the past victories of their four marshals have left behind enough henchmen to shake the foundation of the entire kingdom!"

"But still, the Du Gu Family's chances are slightly higher than the Jun Family's, but when I say that, I would also like to add that I don't really see the emergence of any major characters in their family, and nor do I hear of any movements on their part."

"The Meng Family, firstly, they are our allies. And secondly, there is no particularly powerful character in the Meng Family. So I'd say that their probability is also quite low."

"Among the major families, the Song Family has always kept a very low-key profile, but sometimes the dog that never barks is the one that actually bites, so I would suspect them. Mu Rong Family.... Well the Mu Rong Family has always been very ambitious, and keeps coming up with new schemes all the time! Since they have a strong relation with the royal family, the royal family is unlikely to suspect them of anything, which is why I believe that we should pay a lot of attention to the Mu Rong Family....." Li You Ran was very carefully analyzing the situation, which is why he was speaking in a very slow paced manner, and his low-pitched voice indicated that he was quite nervous about his opinion.

"Well, that was good." Li Shang nodded: "However, there are several other aspects in addition to these families that you've missed out on."

"Please correct my mistakes Grandfather." Li You Ran stated.

"In this city, the most influential family is the Royal Family, and you haven't even considered them at all?! The Royal Family is the most powerful family! Although His Majesty's treasures are still remain hidden from common knowledge, if it weren't for the many strong men who are protecting him around the clock, His Majesty would have already been assassinated countless times! You should pay particular attention to that! There also the three major gangs in the city, all of whom have considerable strength to do this, and you need to include them in your line of sight."

"In addition to this, we cannot neglect that this could be the work of a mysterious organization, potentially from outside the Tian Xiang City. Also, there are a few well-known groups of assassins that are operational in the city, and could also be our targets ah." Li Shang coughed a few times, and was barely able to keep up with his health: "This Xuan Core incident will likely lead to an unprecedented storm, and You Ran, you must be very careful as well since our present strength is somewhat insufficient!! If you enter this affair..... then you will need a lot of support and manpower to come out on top! .....if you cannot manage that support, and your brothers are unable to back you up, then I would advise that you exit this scramble!"

"For you may easily get drowned in this storm!" Li Shang sighed loudly as he slowly laid his body down on the bed.

"Yes. I've already issued the order to our birds in the cover of wee hours, and I believe that they will be making their decisions soon." Li You Ran nodded seriously.

"Well, how your progress to the Sky Xuan layer coming about?" Li Shang faintly closed his eyes.



"I've reached the pinnacle of the Gold Xuan." Li You Ran's voice had a hint of guilt in it: "But the state is a little unstable at present. Once it has stabilized, then I will be able to impact the Jade Xuan but....."

Li Shang raised his hand and stopped him in mid-sentence: "Let's not leave any room for carelessness here since we know the consequences of it. I will gladly help you in making the impact: after all, you are the best hope for the future of the Li Family. You do not bother yourself with this too much now."

Li You Ran gasped.

Li Shang had previously used a Jade Sea Coral for healing purposes, which had unexpectedly self-detonated. Although Li Shang had sustained serious injuries, and even Li You Ran's handsome face had been bombed in several places by the explosion, the incident hadn't been a complete disaster, and Li You Ran had unknowingly gained some benefits from it.

The Jade Sea Coral contained a lot of Aura, which was supposed to help Li Shang heal, but he was unable to absorb it entirely due to the explosion. Because of the sudden interruption, a considerable part of this Aura had entered Li You Ran's body during the explosion, and had been left stranded inside his meridians. A blessing in disguise! At that time, due to the injuries sustained on his face, Li You Ran had been unable to focus on his practice properly, but at present, due to the underlying support from this Aura, he had managed to advance from the base of Gold Xuan to the apex of Gold Xuan in a single swoop! He was one step away from entering the Jade Xuan, which considering Li You Ran's age was not just unprecedented, but was also a feat which would ring in the ears of his contemporaries throughout the continent!

# Chapter 120: This Life's First Deal's Commission

---

"There's a lot of investigation going on around the destruction of the northern part of the city. It could be a coincidence, but Qin Hu's son, Qin Xiao Bao unknowingly and unintentionally offended Tang Yuan and Jun Mo Xie! Jun Mo Xie and his sidekick would have surely retaliated in some way, but I don't think that they could be behind the mysterious destruction of the northern part of the city.... however, I don't could just be becoming a little paranoid, but I think that this could be related in some way, but I can't really describe the reason behind my suspicions." Li You Ran stood up and started slowly pacing back and forth. "At the moment, the northern part of the city has lost its eyes and ears, which is why we are missing the majority of our sources in that part of the town, so we'll need to make up for that loss as soon as possible."

"Good, you must work on that." Li Shang closed his eyes: "I would recommend you to join the Imperial court, but since you're insisting against it, all I can say to you, Li You Ran, is that I've built the foundation of our Family due to my position in the Imperial Court, and not by sitting beside rivers and lakes, this you must always remember! I know that you're ambitious, but you must understand your limitations..... it's very dangerous to chance your luck all the time, if you wish to progress, you must do so cautiously and calculatedly!"

"Your grandson understands." Li You Ran had silently lowered his head for a while before replying.

The autumn wind was flowing free and leisurely, and two unknown men were enjoying its delicacy. One of them had a yellow face, his figure was exceptionally tall. His sharp eyes looked disproportionate to his yellow face, while the other one was

slightly darker in shade, but this young man's complexion was still looking quite similar to his companion's.

"The Tian Xiang Imperial City has changed a lot in this past decade ah." The middle-aged man was walking slowly as his eyes looked around the city's streets. His voice sounded a bit desolate, almost as if he had been to a different world, and had suddenly returned to face a different reality. "That place was Ye Family's ancestral hall ten years ago, and I grew up playing around there with my Brothers...he he..." He laughed, but it still sounded like he was weeping.

"Uncle, you're not getting caught up in the past again, are you?" the youngster next to him smiled: "After all, you must get used to it. All things must die one day, whether it is man or a soldier or a system: whatever begins in life... ends in death. If it wasn't about life and death, then no matter what happens, no one no would bother about fame and success."

"To get used to life and death..... easier said than done!" The middle-aged man sighed loudly, "The last ten years have passed away like a bad dream. I just see desolation everywhere.... Once I had brothers, and now they are all dead, and I'm left alone in this world....."

"Uncle, do you ever think about our feet?" The youngster chuckled gently, but with a hint of a gentle mockery, almost as if he was mocking the irony of life on this earth! At this moment, the youngster's eyes were seemingly seeing through the past and the present, and he seemed ignorant to everything else. He pointed at the land under his foot: "Third uncle, since ancient times, since tens of thousands of years, do you know how many people have been buried under this piece of land?"

"In a way, we are actually always standing on the corpse of someone else! This moment, we perhaps stepped on the corpse of beggar, and maybe the next moment we might be standing on the remains of a great emperor! The matter that this thick soil consists

off.... is comprised of a mountain of bones. Life and death are just like dry and vegetation, once it gets old and withered, it dies... so what does it matter? One day, you, or perhaps, I, will lie under this soil, ready to be trampled upon by other humans!"

"But the most important thing is now! Now, we are stepping on someone else all the time, whether he was a commoner, or a once-in-a millennia imperial lord, or the beautiful daughter of a minister. But what are they now? ....the obvious reaction to stepping on other's graves is that we must build our selves to a position where the others cannot step on us!! Whether we live or we die!"

"Ha ha....." the man laughed wickedly: "That might be true, but we must also cherish the memories of the dead from time to time. If we don't cherish their memories, or worse, make ourself unworthy of being remembered, then how can we expect our future generations to remember us? The king might have been a king in his life, but if he killed a million men, then it doesn't matter if he died on a mountain or on a river bed, he would have still gone to hell!"

"In life, we mustn't regret! Even if we have done something wrong, we mustn't regret! A wrong done for the right reasons is still a right, and a right done for the wrong reason is still a wrong?.... No one knows the reality of right and wrong in truth.... While we live, we must have fun! Live like the sea, free and unrestrained... follow the desires of the heart. If we don't like someone, we must step on them! And kill the ones who hurt us! And destroy the ones that stand in our path!"

"In life, both men and women must proudly look at the heavens, and let the ones that overlook this earth know, that we are alive! That we were worthy of coming to this world!" the youngster's eyes were distantly gazing at his surroundings: "This is just a game, nothing more!"

These two men were rather strange, even though they looked

quite young, they were preaching like old men.

This strange combination was obviously the uncle and the nephew duo of Jun Wu Yi and Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Wu Yi hadn't left the Jun Family's courtyard in these last ten years, so Jun Mo Xie wanted to take him out in order to relieve him of his boredom. This was exactly what Jun Wu Yi needed, and he readily agreed, and so the two men sneakily slipped out and decided to take a stroll around the capital's streets.

Jun Mo Xie had lived a very stealth life in his previous incarnation, and had acquired peerless expertise in disguising himself using a variety of modern and ancient techniques. At this moment, they looked so different from their original appearance, that no one in the entire Xuan Xuan continent would be able to tell their real identities, which is why the two men were boldly wandering around at present.

"Mo Xie, do you really believe that....." Jun Wu Yi finished listening to Jun Mo Xie, then shook his head and laughed: "If you can't see yourself, then you must at least listen to yourself. I'm afraid that you've changed a lot, you're seeing through the concepts of life and death like an extremely old man ah."

Jun Mo Xie smiled in his heart. He was indeed running his mouth like an old man would, but then again, he was quite experienced in life, this after all, this was his second life, and he was talking from experience....

"This place used to be great prince's residence ten years ago; they've actually managed to convert it to a Huang Hua Hall? I really wonder, this being the capital city, who would dare force a prince out his home?" Jun Wu Yi frowned as he looked at the concave that lay on the left side of the road. The road to it looked slightly humble, but it rolled up and down and led straight to a very big house. A frail and faintly shrill voice rank from within, and it seemed rather weak and full of despair. "Huang Hua Hall...

what does it mean? I don't remember it being here in the older days?"

The pedestrians passing by would try to stay as far away from the Huang Hua Hall, almost as if the place was riddled with snakes on the inside. Everyone's eyes were filled with hate and a hint of fear, and they would inevitably quicken up their steps as they would pass by the gate of the building.

Jun Mo Xie quickly searched through the memories in his brain, and said: "Huang Hua Hall is like a Brothel of sorts. But the escorts here are relatively younger in age, and most are quite good-looking.....children!" Suddenly, a strong sense of anger swarmed Jun Mo Xie's heart.

"This is a transit point for the sale of young boys and girls. If they are well qualified, then they sent away. The one who aren't very educated but are good looking and clever, are tuned up and then sold for high prices to large families for profiteering purposes. The first class recruits are the worst off; they are allowed to stay here for a few years, until they reach puberty, and then, they are sold into the Spirit Fog River to be the playthings of men and women. This place is the base of sin and filth."

Jun Wu Yi looked sharply at the gate: "I didn't expect that such an establishment would be allowed to function inside the Tian Xiang Imperial City! How do the officials allow this?"

Jun Mo Xie sighed. This place had belonged to the prince once, and he had to let go off it, but no one knows what happened and why.... Who would have the guts to go up against such people? If the site belonged to a prince, and someone was capable of taking it off the hands of a powerful prince, then what could common men do about it?

This was a bureaucratic empire, and his place had managed to stay out of all litigations, so maybe a top ranked noble or the son of a very powerful man was behind this establishment, but who

would have the courage to try and find out?! Besides, most people came here willingly since they needed the money, while some were homeless children from homeless asylums, and were tantamount to slaves anyway. What could other people say about this matter?

"This is awful! This is very disappointing!" Jun Wu Yi groaned coldly. He glanced sharply at the entrance gate, unwilling to walk past it, but today, he'd have to turn back, since exposing his identity would be very troublesome. Moreover, Jun Wu Yi's body was still healing and he strictly needed to keep it a secret, so even though he didn't wish to, he turned around to walk away from it.

Just as the two men were leaving, a sudden and shrill cry sounded behind them, which was followed by a loud uproar from a crowd of people. A figure dropped onto the middle of the street; it was young maiden, her clothes were disheveled and torn, while her beautiful face was distorted with pain. Her mouth was constantly vomiting blood, and her glazed eyes already seemed to have lost the will to live. Her mouth opened as she cried in a low voice: "..... I ask you Brother..... I beg you Brother, don't let him do....."

"Sister....." then, a sharp voice cried after her, and a thin and weak child emerged at the entrance of the building. A hand was stopping the child from walking out, but the child's face was very anxious and he was constantly struggling to break free; but how could a mere child break free from the hold of a brawny adult man. In his state of anxiety, the child ceaselessly kept throwing his elbows around in the hope of breaking free of his captor. Then suddenly, the child opened his mouth and fiercely bit the man's arm. The man winced in pain and the boy took his opportunity and rushed out towards the middle of the street, where the young girl lay dying.

The dying girl looked over and saw the small figure that was approaching her, and suddenly her eyes revealed a color of joy and fear. She was barely able to lift her hand as she tried to extend it,

hoping that it would be met by her own Brothers'.

Just then, a voice suddenly cursed out loudly, and a sharp and piercing sound followed. The boy who was in the middle of speeding towards his sister, found his body being twisted unnaturally, almost as if a sugar cane was being bent in the middle. He fell to the ground with a 'plop' sound, and the punch that he had just taken had suddenly cut his life short! He was silent now, and his body no longer breathed. His body slid on the ground under the impact of the attack, but his eyes were still flushed with anger and anxiety, while his hand was still stretched out towards his dying sister. But his hand was unable to make the distance as his dead body came to a stop, a foot away from her dying sister's body.

This one foot of distance was actually separating two siblings and this distance was so large for them, that they were unable to cover it, even at the cost of their lives!

A young boy was actually dead in front of his older sister's dying eyes?!

The angry and indignant maiden howled wildly as she tried to crawl closer to her brother's corpse, but only managed to struggle twice before she was unable to move any further. Her beautiful eyes still stared at the corpse of her younger brother, as the final trace of life left them, but they still refused to shut, unable to rest in peace. Her breathing had ceased, but her slender arm was still obstinately stretched towards her brother's dead body.....

'Pop'. There was a slight sound, and a small, broken, copper coin fell out from under the young maiden's breast clothing, curled along her arms, and rolled across the ground which was stained in the blood of these two siblings. The coin rolled and rolled for a long time, and came to a stop next to Jun Mo Xie's shoe's front, and no longer moved any further.

"Sinful ah! There have been too many this month! Well, these



children were really poor..." a passerby whispered to himself, shook his head, and quickly left the scene.

"This is what happens to people who sell themselves to slavery... I guess this can be considered as their punishment for their own sins?!" one man muttered in disapproval.

A lot of people looked on with a color of compassion on their faces, which was concealing a strong sense of anger beneath, but no one dared to speak a word against it openly. In the blink of an eye, the entire crowd had quickly started to disperse, and the street started to clear again.

"Animals!" the sound of Jun Wu Yi's voice made everyone turn around. He had done an irreversible deed in a fit of rage: "How could you murder such young children? Do you still have some humanity left in you, or some sense of justice perhaps?"

There were a few men standing at the entrance of building, grinning at the bloody spectacle that they had just choreographed, extracting some evil pleasure from the sight of it. They had never imagined that someone would openly accuse them! This was the Huang Hua Hall, and no ever said anything here.

"Don't watch it if you don't like it, and mind your own business! Go home to your mother and don't you dare say another word. I decide the fate of these two, who are you to call me out for justice? Or humanity?!" the man who had been bitten by the kid was still grinning.

Jun Wu Yi was presently dressed as a scholar, but his strange robes made him look like a poor man, and less like an accomplished scholar.

"I dare you!" Jun Wu Yi was furious: "You do these activities in the heart of the Imperial City?! How dare you show such disregard for life and trample upon it?"

At this time, Jun Mo Xie was looking down, spellbound, at the

broken coin which was stationary next to his shoe. At this moment, his heart was soaring and a strange but familiar feeling was rushing through his heart!

[This is a broken coin, and could have tumbled over at the slightest vibration, but it still happened to make its way through several people's feet and landed on mine! What is this.... Coincidence, or perhaps...providence?]

At this moment, Jun Mo Xie had gone back to his previous life, where he had become a Hitman, the King of all assassins - King Jun Xie!

He slowly leaned down and solemnly picked up that broken copper coin, and placed it in the center of this hand as he whispered: "I assure you, you may now rest in peace. I accept your money as the commission from my first deal in this life! No contract is needed; the heavens will be the witness!"

He slowly looked up, and his dazzling eyes saw the three words 'Huang Hua Hall'. Jun Mo Xie's eyes narrowed as a light shone through them. Like a ray of sunshine that penetrates through the dark clouds, his eyes glimmered in a brilliant, but murderous blaze!

[I don't care what the story behind these children are, and I do not need to know the girl's identity. I do not care about the power that supports this Huang Hua Hall!]

[I only know what I need to do!]

[The subject of this money is human misfortunes!]

[A coin is money, even if it's broken, it's still money!]

[I have received this money as the commission for a deal! And since I've accepted this commission, these people need to die!]

[So now - I Kill!]

# Chapter 121: "Faced with this, I can only kill"

---

[I'm just a killer! Whenever someone needs me to commit a murder, I must be available!]

[I have the hands of a killer!]

Just as Jun Wu Yi was about to rush forward, just then he suddenly felt a hand on his shoulder, the hand of his young nephew - Jun Mo Xie.

"Uncle, I was really surprised; you're a military general, a war veteran, why would you go howling about these kinds of things to such men?" Jun Mo Xie smiled slightly.

"Well?" Jun Wu Yi was somewhat puzzled.

"You're trying to preach justice to deaf ears?... how's that useful? If they cared about life and justice, they wouldn't have committed murder so blatantly. You heard their reply; do you still believe that they care about justice? No. In their eyes, justice is just a dispensable tool which they can discard at their discretion. As for your lecture about humanity, ha ha, if these men had even the slightest trace of humanity left in their body, then they wouldn't have murdered these children in such a cruel and brutal manner. Animals can be cruel because they are stupid, but these men are human beings... do you think they are as stupid as animals?" Jun Mo Xie's tone was flat and dull sounding.

"Okay? Well, then what do you suggest we do here?" Jun Wu Yi asked categorically.

"Well, I'd like to be decisive. Wouldn't that be a better choice?" he spoke these words in Jun Wu Yi's ears as his body leaned past his uncle's. His eyes were still fixed at Jun Wu Yi, while his face's complexion was still as calm and warmly respectful but his right hand moved into action. He plugged his hand straight into the mouth of one of the men, inserted it down his throat. Then, Jun

Mo Xie tightened his grip, 'crack', he crushed the man's larynx!

This man was the one who had talked back to Jun Wu Yi when the latter had preached about justice. He had strode onto the street, and towards Jun Wu Yi to teach him a lesson, but hadn't imagined that he'd end up turning into Jun Mo Xie's demonstration dummy.

"For such people, you can either simply ignore them, or....." Jun Mo Xie pulled his hand out of the man's throat and then gracefully wiped his hand off the blood on the man's clothes. Then, he gently pushed the man back, and the man's corpse landed on the ground with a 'thud'. Jun Mo Xie continued in a slow paced tone: ".....Or if necessary, then you can kill them ruthlessly!"

The man's body lay on the ground, but his eyes were still open from the shock, and were now facing the hatred filled eyes of the girl's dead body. Perhaps that man had never anticipated that this girl would end up hiring a hitman as her last act in this world.

Just one damaged copper coin... that was the cost of his life!

No, he's not even worth one damaged copper coin. A lot more lives would be taken before this copper coin's debt was repaid!

Even though the girl must have wished her culprits dead in her last breath, she probably never thought that they would all actually die. If she had known that her last penny would hire the king of all assassins, then she would be smiling watching from the heavens right now.

By providence, Justice would be served to her soul!

Jun Mo Xie had picked up her last penny.... Which is all the wealth she had possessed in this lifetime, it was still a major payment for a contract to this hitman, who had made his decision: [the evil behind this Huang Hua Hall would die! They will all be obliterated ruthlessly!]

"....." Jun Wu Yi was still looking at his nephew, surprised at the

manner in which he had just killed a man. Even though his eyes were unable to blink, he couldn't keep his mouth shut: "Mo Xie, it's one thing to preach such ideas, but is it necessary to kill such people? Is disposing off such evil the right path to obtaining justice?!"

"Uncle, you're an honest and upright man, but I have to say this: you're too pedantic!" sounds of footsteps were approaching Jun Mo Xie, but he didn't bother to look back: "You wish to try and reason with them? Do you wish to influence them? Even if you revealed your identity and obligated the officials to punish them, what good would that bring? I can assure you that these men would get themselves released soon enough, and they will still continue to cause more scenes like this one! Ha ha, funny huh?!"

The other men, who had been standing at the door, saw the manner in which their companion had died, and had rushed forward roaring.

"Uncle, in reality, we must remember one thing: we are men of martial laws!" Even though Jun Mo Xie's was smiling, but his face was still somewhat emotionless, and his eyes seemed as deep as the oceans. He still seemed indifferent to the men who were approaching him from behind: "right now, since these men can act so boldly and brazenly, then it would seem that the Tian Xiang country's laws are no longer capable of restraining them. Huh, when the law becomes the protective umbrella and the high class starts to exploit the laws for their own purposes - and when no man can punish them using the righteous method, that's the time when men like us are needed!"

"Remember, at such a time, our military hearts must not be bounded by the shackles of the civil law, and we must turn ourselves into the sword that slaughters the wrong, combat violence with violence, and continue till we obliterate the land of these human scums! It is justice in a way. And do not worry about the ways of the heavens.... The laws of men are nonsense to the

gods in any case!"

"So now, faced with this, I can only kill!" Jun Mo Xie's face revealed a slight smile, still facing Jun Wu Yi. The men who were approaching from the back were almost upon him, but Jun Mo Xie's face was still as calm as ever.

But then, he suddenly turned around in an instant, and burst past the four men in at a lightning fast speed, 'snap, snap', sounds followed, and he was already through them. Jun Mo Xie's tall figure waltzed towards the Huang Hua Hall's door, almost as if he was visiting a friend's house.

Behind him, the bodies of the other four men looked completely intact. But then suddenly, one man's throat exposed a big and bloody hole, and then the chest of another man started to bleed, his heart had obviously been struck by a knife. The third person's crotch started to sprout blood like a fountain soon after, while the fourth man's head had been relocated to a different angle. All of them were still standing, but were no longer alive!

As Jun Mo Xie entered the Huang Hua Hall, the four bodies fell to the ground. Although these ordinary men weren't able to spot Jun Mo Xie's actions, Jun Wu Yi had seen his attacks very clearly. Jun Mo Xie had murdered each of these men with just one move! No! He had murdered them all in just one, single, movement!

But this one movement was so quick that none of the men were able to react to it, let alone dodge it!

They were dead by command, not by fluke!

A terrifying piece of skill!

[Could I have dodged that? Jun Wu Yi thought for second... maybe if I was at full alert, and in the best of my health... but it wouldn't be easy. Mo Xie's hands were too fast, he could easily kill off several Silver Xuan experts in a matter of few seconds, or maybe even stronger experts....]

Jun Wu Yi suddenly woke up and realized that his nephew had gone berserk. Jun Mo Xie had entered the building and may run into danger inside it. If the Huang Hua hall was able to act so boldly, then there could be some very powerful men inside the building. Jun Wu Yi quickly followed after his nephew, and practically flew into the building, only to be faced with a shocking surprise!

In a span of a few second, while Jun Wu Yi was making his way to the door from the street, Mo Xie had managed to kill several more men. About five or six bodies lay on the floor in a disorderly manner, and each person's post mortem analysis was identical: either a hole in the throat, or a fractured larynx bone!

Jun Wu Yi rushed in, and finally saw Jun Mo Xie's silhouette enter a room in a calm and fast, but still, elegantly brutal manner. Upon entering a room and detecting a hostile presence, whether man or woman, Jun Mo Xie wouldn't let anyone live in front of him. The only man alive in the room, apart from Jun Mo Xie, would be the one man behind him, Jun Wu Yi. No one else would be alive after Jun Mo Xie exited a room!

The Huang Hau Hall was surely being backed by someone very powerful, and since this was a transit point for young boys and girls, this place was surely being guarded by some very powerful experts. Even though the few guards in the lobby seemed to have been quite powerful, but they were now lying dead on their faces. In fact, there were quite a few pimps in the rooms, who obviously didn't know martial arts, but Jun Mo Xie hadn't even left them alive! Jun Wu Yi was simply unable to grasp the enormity of his nephew's ferocity and ruthlessness....

Jun Wu Yi, a Sky Xuan expert, was backing Jun Mo Xie, but the nephew hadn't given his uncle any chances to attack anyone! Jun Wu Yi was supposed to be the bodyguard, but it seemed that he was so incompetent at present, that his role had been lowered to that of a sidekick or a mere spectator.

Jun Mo Xie's face was as calm as ever, as he moved into another room. There were a few people inside this room, he broke the larynx of the first, kicked another, brought his knife up the crotch of the third, and left them all to cry as they slumped to the floor and bled to their deaths.

The way forward was the way of blood and death!

'Boom'! Three shining silver silhouettes entered through the inner courtyard, and stationed themselves across the doorway: "Who are you people? How dare you cause trouble here? Do you know what this place is?" the speaker seemed about forty years old.

"Trouble?! I'm not causing any trouble, ah, I was just commissioned to kill these people! I don't want to cause any trouble!" Jun Mo Xie was still smiling. The feet of the men at the door were already shaking in fear, but they started to rearrange themselves in a tactical formation nonetheless.

They knew they were dealing with someone who was beyond them since there were about forty or fifty death bodies on the floor!

"How dare you accept a commission for this place?" the middle aged man was obviously a sheep in a wolf's skin: "Do you know who runs this place?!!"

Jun Mo Xie was too lazy to care about this man, so he turned around and said: "Uncle, I'm a little tired, so I'll leave these three men to you since you could also use the exercise. But don't take long... after all, this is the capital city, and the imperial soldiers will be here very soon."

"Soldiers??" Jun Wu Yi smirked coldly, and suddenly a blue light flashed as his body flew out in an elegant but cruel manner.

"Ah, A Sky Xuan....." The three men weren't even able to express their shock, and their dead bodies were already flying out in different directions. A Sky Xuan against three Silver Xuans.....



Simply unfair! They never stood a chance!

Jun Wu Yi didn't wish to go on a killing spree but Jun Mo Xie's actions had already stretched this matter beyond the point of making a return, and he didn't have another option at this moment. Time was running out, so Jun Wu Yi took the lead and started moping out the leftovers. Now he was the one who was killing the occupants of the building indiscriminately!

But still, Jun Wu Yi was very unhappy with his nephew's actions.

While Jun Wu Yi was raiding around the place, Jun Mo Xie quickly rushed into one of the locked rooms and then a 'Bang Bang Bang' sound followed. Jun Mo Xie had thrown a few boxes into the courtyard. Then, he quickly and smoothly pulled a knife, and 'snap, pop', opened the boxes, and revealed the shining silver and the glistening gold inside these boxes.

Jun Wu Yi was astonished to see so much wealth.... Just then, Jun Mo Xie opened another locked room and shouted: "Come out! Take some money and quickly get out of here. Go east!" suddenly, about a dozen boys and girls ran out of the room.

When Jun Mo Xie opened the last locked room, the smell of an unspeakable horror filled his uncle's nostrils. Once Jun Wu Yi saw the scene, his initial hesitation and disdain for Jun Mo Xie's actions had disappeared!

This room contained a few earthen jars, and each of these earthen jars had one hole. One meek and malnourished head was popping out from each of these jars. 'Snap Snap' Jun Wu Yi couldn't hold back the temptation and broke all the jars in the room!

## Chapter 122: How do we handle this?

---

The bodies in front of Jun Wu Yi's eyes were very seriously deformed and distorted. The lengths of the bodies of these youngsters were less than two feet from the waist to the foot, while their arms and chests were as distorted and deformed as their lower bodies. It was difficult to tell how long these people had been contained in these jars. The only parts of their bodies that were allowed to be free from the restriction of these jars were their heads, and simply so that they could breathe and eat. These people were even made to urinate and excrete in their respective jars itself...

Their eyes of these people were still flashing from one point to the other, and even though their eyes seemed to be begging the two men for mercy, their mouths were unable to make any sounds, apart from a 'hiss'. Upon a closer look, it was evident that their tongues had been cut out....

"This is the 'human swine'. Most of these people were not qualified enough for other purposes, and didn't have any scope for cultivation either, so their bodies were slowly forced into deformation, and then these people would be sold off for high prices to be used as vaudeville or sideshows to circuses. Their freaky vaudevilles would be then used to win the sympathy of the spectators, and their new masters would make some money as a result...." Jun Mo Xie gave these people one glance and then looked away: "Uncle, you still believe that the masters of this place didn't deserve it? Do you still wish to talk to them? Educate them?"

"They deserve much worse than what they got, they should've been hacked to pieces!" Jun Wu Yi was feeling shamed and enraged at the same time: "Such a vicious act.... What kind of a heart would command such an evil thing?!! Those scums.... Damn them to hell!"

"First, when the homeless children come here, then they are

preferred to be trained in to killing machines, while the ones that are pretty are trained into becoming homosexual partners and prostitutes. The ones that aren't qualified to become either, are only good to become these... these deformed human spectacles! Everyone inside this place was a part of this work! The people here were beyond any scope of redemption, would you still want to try?! I chose to kill, and I chose to kill without any hesitation, and without any mercy! I killed them all so they couldn't do this to more people!"

Jun Mo Xie nodded and pointed towards the door. The group of boys and girls, who were initially too timid to move, finally gathered some courage and ventured into the inner courtyard, and picked up some gold from the ground. They turned around and gratefully bowed to the two men before running out of the front door....

"Uncle, has it crossed your mind yet..... some of these children might have been the sons and daughters of the fallen comrades that served and died under your command? After the death of their fathers, they could have been left orphaned and without any means of an income.... Wouldn't they have been left completely helpless? So without any source of a living, they could've come here!" Jun Mo Xie's words left Jun Wu Yi's eyes red in a murderous rage!

Jun Mo Xie maybe calm, cold-blooded and ruthless, but his words were undoubtedly very logical....

"The Tian Xiang country has several of these establishments, and even though the others may not be this big, or may not be acting so boldly, but there are several more of them!" Jun Mo Xie sighed as he raised his eyebrows to look at the sky; the sounds of thunder were beginning to come from a distance.

"The boys and girls we saw here were still able to move to some extent, so I'd expect them to be able to make an escape, but then what? Do you have any ideas?" being a Sky Xuan expert, Jun Wu Yi

had also heard the sounds, but was more concerned about the issued regarding these dozen or so children. Their deformities wouldn't work well in the world, but leaving them here would be equivalent to leaving them in the jaws of death.

"Ideas? There's no good idea for them! These people don't have tongues, their ears have been stabbed into deafness, their hands and feet are completely abnormal, and they will never be able to recover from these deformities..... all hopes of having a normal life have been destroyed for them, while survival is the worst form of torture... a living death!" Jun Mo Xie sighed.

"Do you mean....." Jun Wu Yi was stunned: "This can't be... are you saying that since they were poor, they have now been deprived of the last shred of a dignified life?!!"

Jun Mo Xie turned his head: "Yes, that's true, but we have to go now. The officials will be here soon, and if we don't go then you'll have to reveal yourself. As for the survival of these children, their existence will be very painful, but some of them will continue to carry on in this world."

He paused and then continued: "Keeping them alive by force will be the biggest pain for some, ....., so we'll just have to wait and see for ourselves. Come on, it's getting late! ..."

Jun Wu Yi sighed deeply, after all, the condition of these children was too complex, but he quickly gathered his wits, hardened his heart, and followed after the fleeing Jun Mo Xie. The two men quickly jumped over the rear wall of the house, and instantly disappeared into the general public.

Just as they left, those thundering sounds crashed into the Huang Hua Hall, which was followed by noises of crashing since the soldier had finally arrived...

"Mo Xie, your temper is too cruel, like a killer! This, you must control very carefully. Even though today you killed for a good cause, but I still find your temperament to be a little too cold. At a

later time, we'll have to look into this in more depth." Jun Wu Yi was running right beside Jun Mo Xie at this moment.

"I committed this crime to promote good. Uncle, I do not deny that I was bloodthirsty, but I have never killed a good man, and nor will I ever hurt one! But for people like the ones at the Huang Hua Hall, I will not stop, not until I've killed them all, and their families; I will obliterate the entire root of this evil!" Jun Mo Xie's face was as calm as water, as he smiled coldly, but his footsteps didn't cease. The nephew and uncle duo was quite familiar with the terrain; on top of that they were both quick-witted and agile. They quickly switched several streets and turned a few corners and managed to reach a very secluded location, while the sounds of thundering had now receded to a gradual and faint whisper behind them.

"You're right, whenever we encounter an evil like this place, we must intervene. The existence of a place like this one, must not be tolerated under the heaven!" Jun Wu Yi frowned: "Mo Xie, why did you murder all of them, why didn't you take one alive.... we could find out the mastermind behind this setup? If we had found the man behind this place, then we could have cut off the weed at its roots, which would have been the perfect solution to this problem!"

"Uncle, do you think that shrimps like these would know about the sharks? Asking them would have been a waste of effort! Even if we got clues from them, and went about investigating them, then we'd end up exposing ourselves!" Jun Mo Xie was looking at his uncle: "In fact, the person behind this will inevitably find out about this, and he isn't exactly going to sit behind a closed door and wait for us, he'll likely conduct raids throughout the country in our search, or may even secretly send assassins after us.... how would exposing ourselves work out then? Right now, we are working in the dark, and the person behind this will never know our identity, and we'll be able to do our work conveniently."

There was another point, but Jun Mo Xie couldn't gather the nerve to say it: [If we managed to trace this person, and he turned out to be a minister of the state or even a member of the royal family, then how would you deal with it? As far as this 'Huang Hua hall' is concerned, if the person behind this place was powerful enough to get this place from a prince, then how could we kill him off?]

"That's also true" Jun Wu Yi was still frowning: "But now my body has almost recovered, and I will not allow such places to exist. If I ever find more, I'll destroy them as well!"

"Third uncle ah, your nephew can only tell you the truth: there's a long way to go. Oh, and once we are back, you immediately arrange reliable personnel and you must ask them to follow after the people who we rescued from here, and help them to safety. If they are left to their own measures, then they probably won't be able to get very far."

"That's why you gave them the silver and gold....." Jun Wu Yi was somewhat puzzled.

"Yes, just so that they could buy some food, while the quick-witted might even be able to travel a bit." Jun Mo Xie smiled: "We simply cannot help them in this case. I allowed them to escape, to see their respective abilities. Therefore, as a result, the ones who are resourceful will be able to go further than the others, and once they are away from the capital, we might be able to help them...."

Jun Mo Xie was in the middle of a sentence, when he suddenly stopped running and quietly said: "We have been followed for a while now, were you able to spot him?"

Jun Wu Yi was suddenly very shocked. [Someone has been following the two of us? Why didn't I notice it? I've been healing for several days now, and I've almost managed to stabilize myself to the base of Sky Xuan, so I'm not just a namesake Sky Xuan anymore. Most experts have the ability to track others without

making their presence known, but what's the strength of this expert? And how did Mo Xie figure it out?]

After finishing the sentence, Jun Mo Xie continued to remain glued to his position, while his eyes were fixed on the ground below.

After some time, a voice called out: "Ha ha, this is amazing!" a deep-blue light flashed, and a thin masked man appeared about a dozen meters away from them. His eyes were shining as they stared at Jun Mo Xie and his uncle: "How did you find me?"

Jun Mo Xie smiled: "Everyone has a different technique, and every technique is different, but no matter who you are, you should never think that you're so great that no one can spot you. Now, why are you following us?"

The man was dressed in garbs, and his mask seemed to be freshly torn from a handkerchief, so it was quite obvious that he had arranged his visible clothing in a very short period of time.

"My intentions aren't malicious. I just saw the manner in which you brought justice and admired your courage, which is I decided to follow you two, out of sheer curiosity ha ha. You are talking to a fellow human ...."

"Since there was no malice intended, then we'd request that you go about your business. And please do not try to follow us again since we do not wish to be tracked by anyone - even by a Sky Xuan expert like ourselves!" Jun Mo Xie stated bluntly.

"Boy, you're not old enough to be rude to me yet, there are going to be consequences for this! I will go wherever I wish to, you think you can dictate me?" the man seemed very angry all of a sudden. After hearing his words, Jun Wu Yi's eyes had already sharpened, while his body was already ready to move into action.

"Boy? Who are you calling that? Old man, I'm a little reluctant to jump the knot here, but don't force me to kill you for no reason at

all! Leave us, or stay here and see what happens!!" Jun Mo Xie eyes flash like a blue crystal as his body leaned forward, and as he raised and brought his hands to the front of his body, a flash of an azure colored light, as deep as the color of the sea, spurred between them.

"Old man, you have the guts to track us? First you stood by and watched instead of helping us out and now you're tracking us?!" Jun Mo Xie's eyes were full of arrogance as he looked sharply at the man again: "The Huang Hua hall invited their deaths, and so will you if you don't hit the road!"

Jun Mo Xie's eyes were brimming with confidence, almost as if he held the fate of the man's life and death in his hands! This man was already a Sky Xuan expert, but it seemed as if Jun Mo Xie was looking at an ant, like he could simply twist his finger and the man would die!

"A Sky Xuan Peak!" the masked man was sent recoiling a few steps in surprise. The look in his eyes suddenly changed, and it seemed as if his whole body was gripped in horror!

[Or maybe it is a false illusion.... but the inherent color of a Sky Xuan peak is absolutely unique, and absolutely no one can fake it! He really is a Sky Xuan Peak expert at such a young age?! But this can't be happening! A Sky Xuan peak, and the other is also a Sky Xuan expert, how can I fight the two of them alone?]

[Shit, how did so many Sky Xuan experts flood the Tian Xiang city all of a sudden today?!]



## Chapter 123: Hiding in the forest

---

"Young Brother, your Sky Xuan strength is indeed extraordinary, and I admit that I was mistaken, so please accept my apology for my earlier slip of tongue. A battle between two Sky Xuan experts will be very destructive for the society, but as your older Brother, I hope to meet you in the future again with the hope that we meet under more favorable circumstances. My intentions were pure all along, and I hope that this misunderstanding gets cleared in the time to come."

The man quickly turned around and leaped. A blue light flashed and the man disappeared without a trace, rather than staying back to confront them. He didn't even look back as he bolted away from the duo.

Jun Wu Yi finally loosened up, and started sizing up Jun Mo Xie very carefully: "Mo Xie, you've reached the Sky Xuan? How is this even possible?"

Jun Mo Xie revealed a sly smile and but didn't speak. He indicated that they needed to leave, and the two of them quickly left the scene. They kept running for a long while, and kept changing their attire on regular intervals, until they reached a small forest.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly stopped before approaching the woods, looked back and said: "I think that we are still being followed by a few people, so we shouldn't be reckless.... Let's make our way home through this forest!"

Jun Wu Yi was astonished: [More trackers?] He had been keeping an eye on their backs as well, but hadn't discovered anything. He couldn't help but feel a sense of frustration clouding his heart.

They waited for a while, but didn't hear any sounds this time. Jun Mo Xie smiled and said: "Well, I suppose we will have to take the forest route after all, but let's not leave any traces..."

Jun Wu Yi suddenly realized: "Mo Xie, you managed to trick that man?"

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes: "Uncle, you thought that I had reached the peak of the Sky Xuan while even you are only at the base of the Sky Xuan? That man didn't know anything about me, and I used that to fool him with an old trick. He simply believed it since I was able to figure out that he was following us, that's all."

"You made it look very realistic!" Jun Wu Yi smiled and shook his head: "If I was in his shoes, then I'm afraid that even I wouldn't have been able to figure it out! And then coupled with Blue Light that you flashed... I too would have definitely scuttled the other way."

"I didn't have a choice. This event could possibly turn into a major incident in the future, and if we're not careful, then this incident might end up hurting the entire Jun Family! That man was a Sky Xuan expert and I reckon that his strength was only marginally weaker to grandfather. Even though we could have beaten him, I'd say that it would have been very unwise to make enemies with such a powerful man!"

Jun Mo Xie quickly entered the forest and said: "I estimate that the Huang Hua hall must be headed by a major power, and we must be very cautious. We mustn't disclose our identities unless we've already exterminated the enemy."

Jun Wu Yi heard a slight sound, as if a few bodies had entered the forest, and turned around to take a look. Jun Mo Xie also paused for a second, but then stated: "Uncle, pay attention to my movements, and try to keep up."

Jun Wu Yi heard his words and wondered: [Does he have more secret methods?] But by this time Jun Wu Yi had gotten accustomed to being surprised by Jun Mo Xie, and started following his movements closely, while paying special attention to the route which they were taking. He didn't figure it out

immediately, but soon started to realize Jun Mo Xie's genius:

Although Jun Mo Xie was walking at a very high speed, his body wasn't disturbing any of the forest's elements. His left hand was always in front of his body, while his right was stationed behind. Whenever he'd have to pass through branches of shrubs or trees, his left hand would gently brush aside the leaves and branches while his body would quickly advance through, and his trailing right hand would return the objects to its initial position. Not even a single dried leaf would fall as he would move through the forest, and since he was practically tip toeing his way through the thickets of the forest, he was practically leaving no traces at all!

Jun Mo Xie was so cautious that he hadn't even trampled on the bugs in the forest!

He'd place his steps very cautiously, and was even managing to conceal his figure behind the trees as he moved forward. One of his hands was always at a higher position, while the other was stationed at a lower altitude in order to maintain his balance, and it seemed that he was always ready attack or defend, if needed....

All these movements seemed very natural and seamless, but his pace was so fast that it was obvious that these movements were happening instinctively.

Simultaneously, he had even reduced his breathing to a minimum in order to minimize and eliminate his body's odor!

These set of actions were so advanced and well calculated... that practically no expert would ever be able to track him down in this forest!

Even when Jun Mo Xie stepped on a dried branch, his foot still wouldn't make a sound. Once Jun Mo Xie passed by a bird, which was in the middle of a song, and normally these birds are so sensitive to human presence that they stand interrupted and fly away, but Jun Mo Xie moved so stealthily that the bird didn't even notice him as he moved past it.....

Jun Wu Yi was completely astonished!

As a Sky Xuan expert, and a military general, he had previously campaigned perennially, which is why he knew it very clearly that Jun Mo Xie's expertise was unparalleled! And Jun Mo Xie wasn't even at Silver Xuan yet! Jun Mo Xie's expertise seemed have been molded into his blood and instincts by some strange form of unknown training, so much so, that even if a Spirit Xuan peak expert undertook a rigorous training, then even the said-person might not be able to achieve his expertise!

Such expertise and skill was practically impossible to attain.....

Even though Jun Wu Yi was studying his movements very carefully, and was trying to mimic them to the best of his ability, he was still failing to achieve the same result. Jun Wu Yi would look back from time to time and would find that he had trampled on a twig, or had left some trace which could be used to track him, and felt a little shamed by his incompetence!

"Even the uprooting of a single leaf can lead them straight to us. Although these traces may not be very conducive, and are generally found everywhere in such forests, but we must still be very careful since we are faced a very strong opposition here...."

Jun Mo Xie said in a profound manner. Even though Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi might be poles apart in their ideologies, but neither of the two men took anything for granted....

But otherwise, Jun Wu Yi was very different from Jun Mo Xie since he was very orthodox, had a very strong sense of justice; he was chivalrous, warmhearted, courageous, and righteous. All these traits had earned him a lot of love and respect in the world.

Jun Mo Xie, on the other hand, was of course a trained assassin, but was still a man on principles. Take this case for example; although he had decided to undertake the task of sorting out the Huang Hua Hall, he only did so because the copper coin fell out of the girl's body. If that copper coin hadn't found its way to Jun Mo

Xie's feet, then wouldn't have gone on a killing spree. But still, the basic moral values of these two men were still very different from each other's!

Even though the characters of this uncle and nephew duo were diametrically opposite, Jun Mo Xie still appreciated and admired people like his uncle, but even then, he wouldn't ever agree with the ideas of such people!

Because, according to him, even though such people deserved to be respected and admired, their strong sense of justice can sometimes limit their thought process, which can often lead to failures, and maybe even death! And death was too big a price to pay for righteousness!

This predominant sense of justice was Jun Wu Yi's biggest fundamental flaw; his Achilles' heel. According to Jun Mo Xie, these things could be used by others to set up traps, and men like Jun Wu Yi were likely to fall into these traps!

Jun Mo Xie had been constantly trying to instill some new ideologies into Jun Wu Yi's head, but knew that he would never be able to completely change his uncle's mindset! However, he hoped that it would help his uncle in making the more logical decisions in some cases....

Jun Wu Yi had been studying Jun Mo Xie's actions very closely ever since he had started to heal, and had found that even though Jun Mo Xie's expertise was peerless, his methods were very strange, and appeared as if he had been taught these skills by an external source. He was constantly trying to learn new skills from Jun Mo Xie, and wasn't feeling ashamed in any way to submit to his nephew's superiority, but still, it was difficult for him to come to terms with it!

But either way, Jun Wu Yi's mind was at peace.

Jun Mo Xie had brought his uncle outside the Jun Family's house in the hope of relieving him of his boredom, and had even thought

of taking him to the Spirit Fog Lake for a casual trip; but then the incident with the girl happened, and it turned out that his uncle had an inherent hatred towards such establishments. In fact, Jun Mo Xie could tell that if the Jun Family had known about this earlier, then they would have taken a stance to eliminate such places. So at the moment, it didn't seem like a very good idea to take his uncle to .....a brothel for a visit!

Although Jun Wu Yi was very quiet at present, if Jun Mo Xie suggested visiting a brothel, then the man would probably make a meal out of him.

As a result, Jun Mo Xie had already given up his initial idea. But anyway, he had still managed to accomplish the desired result since his uncle had gotten some good exercise, and had also been involved in his some exciting action after being restricted to a wheelchair for a decade....

"Uncle, I got you into trouble during your first outing after such a long time....." Jun Mo Xie stated as he walked, but he had deliberately slowed down his pace now, so Jun Wu Yi could get a better look at his movements; these skills might come in handy later on in life. "I had purchased a huge piece of metal some time ago.... Could you help me in cutting it to shape?"

Earlier, Jun Mo Xie had procured a mysterious metal, but he hadn't been able to figure it out yet. The metal was extremely solid and hard, but physically it was still very light weighed, and on top of that, couldn't be melted either. Given his current ability, Jun Mo Xie knew that it was hopeless to try and cut the metal himself, but knew that his uncle might be able to do it since he was Sky Xuan expert, and had a lot of aura still left inside his body which would be able to provide him temporary assistance.

"Sure, I will." Jun Wu Yi promised in reply. His body had almost recovered completely at this time, and his body had a huge amount of surplus energy since the residual of the herbs were still burning inside his body, which was increasing his self-confidence. "What

shape do you want? I'll cut it to any shape you desire... ha ha...."

Jun Wu Yi seemed awfully cheerful at the moment. Little did the Sky Xuan expert know that he'd have to put-in two days of hard labor, expend a huge amount of energy, while also mustering his entire Sky Xuan power to fulfill his promise and delivering the shape which Jun Mo Xie desired. This task would leave him half-dead and miserably exhausted before it was over.....

# Chapter 124: The Formidable Practice of Habit!

---

Jun Wu Yi worked around the clock over the next few days to finish Jun Mo Xie's task, and managed to finish casting the metal to the desire shape. Even though the metal was only to be casted into a very small knife, but since Jun Mo Xie required the knife's balance to be very precise, since he intended to use for personal tasks, the task became quite arduous.

Jun Mo Xie participated in the task, same as his uncle, but didn't seem very exhausted at the end of it, while Jun Wu Yi was so exhausted that his thighs had swollen from the effort that he had put in, even though he was a very strong and burly man....

"Mo Xie, I wonder why I've never seen you practicing your skills?" Jun Wu Yi was quite surprised. This arduous task, which had been dauntingly difficult for the Sky Xuan expert, had seemingly been a child's play for his nephew. On top of that, Jun Wu Yi had never seen his nephew practice his Xuan Qi, which was only making him more curious.

"Practice?" Jun Mo Xie looked at him in surprise: "Uncle, I practice all the time ah, how have you not noticed it yet?"

"Uh?" Jun Wu Yi couldn't help but stare at him with widened eyes in astonishment.

"Uncle, do you really believe that only controlling your breathing while sitting cross-legged motionlessly, and tempering your Xuan Qi is the only way of 'so-called' practicing?" Jun Mo Xie's tone was clearly expressing his amazement: "I think that we can practice our skills at all times, while eating, while talking, while fighting, walking standing or running and even when we aren't doing anything at all! Even while we are sleeping, we can still practice in our dreams!"



"One day has twenty hours, and I don't even waste a single minute of it. Even though we are talking to each other at this moment, I'm still practicing. So instead of asking me when I practice, shouldn't you ask when I don't practice?!" Jun Mo Xie smiled.

"Even now?" Jun Wu Yi's eyes widened further.

"When walking we can practice our balance, and hone our senses of vigilance on our feet. We can also to exercise our hearing ability and our eyes, and our body's sensitivity to our surroundings. As long as you are determined, you can practice all the time."

Jun Mo Xie seemed quite serious about it: "While fighting, it is important for your mind to be active, and you can temper your mind to be calm while you're undertaking a frustrating task. It's important to practice such skills to the point where they start happening automatically; otherwise you might be unable to use your skills properly at a critical juncture, which is why I practice all the time. Do you understand my meaning?"

Even though Jun Mo Xie made perfect sense, but Jun Wu Yi's eyes were still gaping at him, and it seemed as if they would pop out of their sockets.

"If I interpreted your words correctly.... then you intend to say that when you're dodging an incoming attack, you're not trying to move aside wholeheartedly and your mind is not in a state of chaos?" Jun Wu Yi gasped: "Isn't that impossible?"

"How's it impossible to tune your mind to that?" Jun Mo Xie sounded helpless: "All you need to do is melt your skills into your instincts, and make such actions a habit of your nature; if you can do that, then you need not think, or even intend to carry out an action..... Won't it just happen by itself in this case?"

Jun Wu Yi was dumbstruck, but he was finally beginning to realize something: his own nephew was a freak of nature! When a normal man like Jun Wu Yi is confronted with a freak like his

nephew, being uncomfortable and confused is only a natural human reaction.

Such kinds of bizarre practice methods could drive a person mad; in fact, for ordinary men, even mentioning such methods was an act of madness!

[How could practicing Xuan Qi be this easy?]

"There's no need to deliberate while carrying out an action if it's molded into your instincts. So to speak, while we are walking, we can look out for the things that lay ahead of us and what we might be stepping on, and while we talk, we can still use our nose to identify the smells in the air. This is why I was able to get through the forest with so much ease... my mind was constantly distinguishing my surroundings, and everything was happening instinctively!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled leisurely: "If practice can be done in this manner also, then why shouldn't we do it? Just because you can't focus your entire attention on your practice doesn't mean that you can't practice at all. This might seem very difficult in the beginning, but you'll get used to it over time. And when that time comes, these actions will become your habit and as time will pass, they will be molded into your instincts and eventually you'll even stop noticing the difference between actions and instinctive reactions."

"It's really that simple." Jun Mo Xie smiled.

Jun Wu Yi was quite amused by his nephew's ideas.

"No wonder that you are always so dull and indifferent... since your mind is always analyzing everything, it tends to appear as if you're taking everything lightly, including your own life! Well, it seems that you're not indifferent at all, but you're just always analyzing everything with an open mind....." Jun Wu Yi was finally beginning to understand. In fact, Jun Wu Yi had been unwittingly mimicking Jun Mo Xie's methods, and now that he

suddenly came to a halt, he started to feel as if his whole body was being gripped with a sense of fatigue.

He was well aware that Jun Mo Xie's body's Xuan Qi was nothing compared to his own, but still his nephew showed no signs of tiredness. He couldn't help but admit that this 'Habit' was indeed a formidable force.

Previously, upon their return from their adventure, a servant had come to report a few messages: [Du Gu Wu Di had come looking for the young master; Tang Yuan had also come looking for the young master; the young master had also received an invitation from a few other people including three invitations from His Majesty's three sons, while another two nobles had invited him over for dinner!]

Coincidentally, a generalissimo, two nobles and three princes wished to see him at the same time...

Suddenly if three of His Majesty's sons were interested in making friends with the dandy Jun Mo Xie, then this really couldn't be a coincidence.....

Jun Wu Yi looked at his nephew profoundly and said: "... Mo Xie, from now on, you can make decisions on your own. You understand our circumstances quite well, and your grandfather and I will no longer restrict your actions." He paused for a moment and said: "We believe in you!"

Jun Mo Xie's actions had borne excellent results in quick succession, and as a result, he had managed to create a formidable reputation in his uncle's mind, so much so, that Jun Wu Yi was even beginning to admire his nephew, which is why he had decided to give Jun Mo Xie a free-hand. He had realized that even though Jun Mo Xie might seem indifferent to everything, he was always cautiously trying to concentrate on one thing: no matter what you do, avoid trouble! And like his bizarre practice methods, his sense of wariness had been embedded into his instincts by now!

So basically, if anyone tried to misuse Jun Mo Xie's influence, then that man would end up having a bad day!

"Thank you very much uncle." Jun Mo Xie's reply sounded very earnest.

"Jun Mo Xie, you you you you, you kid! What kind of weird nuisance did you put in that wine? The seven of them are still unconscious! If anything happens to them... I swear on my life, I will tear you apart!" Du Gu Wu Di was so enraged that he jumped off his armchair the moment Jun Mo Xie walked into the room.

The valiant general had turned into a worried father overnight. The seven sons of the Du Gu Family were still asleep ever since he had brought them home from the Jun Family's residence in a state of sleep. He had tried everything to dissipate the effects of the alcohol; tea, vinegar, soy sauce.... But nothing had worked. Finally, he ordered the physician to carry out a medical treatment, but even that didn't bear any result. If the seven of them weren't snoring thunderously in their sleep, an evident proof that the seven of them were sleeping under the effect of the alcohol, then the general might have lost his mind, and may have already attacked general Jun Zhan Tian's only grandson. All seven had remained unconscious ever since they had consumed the wine, which was practically an unprecedented incident!

"Du Gu Wu Di, this little boy is sitting in front of you upon accepting your invitation and hasn't said anything rude to you, then why would you scold me in such a manner? You came to my family's house, and you stirred trouble with my grandfather; then you wantonly caused damage to our property, and didn't even apologize, nor did you reimburse for the damages with even a single penny from you pocket.... On top of that your boys stole my wine, and yet you still accuse me of falsehood? Is there no justice left in this world anymore?!" Jun Mo Xie tried his best to mimic his father's tone and style of speech.

"And, they still haven't woken up? Well, I can easily fix that." Jun

Mo Xie was already laughing up his sleeve. [I know how to wake them from their slumber.] He lazily retreated into his armchair, and raised his arms and legs up. "Shall I prepare the medicine? They are obviously still under the effect of the wine, and I can give you a few shots of the cure, but.... You'll have to pay me some money ah!"

"Money...." Du Gu Wu Di's face was going black and it seemed like he hadn't understood Jun Mo Xie's intentions. [The Jun Family has a reputation of being very honest and upright in the public eye; not wrongly so either. But why did their only heir have to be such a money grubber? He's so blinded by money that he has even resorted to blackmailing and wrongdoings!]

[One jar of wine for twenty five million taels of silver..... he is more ruthless than the emperor!]

"How much money do you need this time ah? You already ripped me off the last time, but you better not think of it again!" Du Gu Wu Di gnashed his teeth as he eyed Jun Mo Xie covetously.

"Seventy thousand taels of silver should be enough this time. The raw materials will cost a lot of money, so I'd say that it is a fair trade, and very affordable too...a genuine bargain!" Jun Mo Xie stretched the five fingers of his left hand, and two of his right, to indicate the price of his services.

"Oh, lucky me. Just seventy thousand taels? You know your hands aren't big enough to carry so much silver yet....." Du Gu Wu Di taunted.

"Don't worry, I'll use my toes if I have to." Jun Mo Xie grinned. "I'll go and get the raw materials, but you need to pay up right now; I don't give out credit."

## Chapter 125: A new headache

---

Dugu Wudi's face had gone black with rage. He threw the money on the table, but couldn't help feeling a little oppressed; [It is hard to imagine that an honest and upright man like Jun Wu Hui's son would turn out to be such a rascal!]

Jun Mo Xie got up and walked out of the room; he returned a while later, with several other men, each of whom was carrying a small jar of wine: "Well, we need to stuff their stomachs with this wine until they throw up, and vomit out the other wine!"

Mixing two different wines can be a very effective cure in some cases!

"Are you playing with me?" Dugu Wudi was even more enraged now: "You think that I haven't already tried this? I had their stomachs stuffed with all kinds of wines, but they didn't vomit!"

"How would you know what's right? They got drunk because they stole my secret wine! I'm the only one who knows that wine's potency and abilities. They drank so much of it and have been very badly intoxicated by it! It's only due to their extraordinary physique and high Xuan Qi that they are still alive! If an average person drank that much of my wine, then they would have already died from its intoxication! But in order to dissipate the wine's effects, you first need to know its functioning ah."

"Even if you forced another wine down their throats, and tried to make it react to the wine which is already present inside their stomachs, then it may not bear the desired result since the nature of each wine is very unusual and different from the other! I brewed that wine myself, and only I know its true blend, and the effects of that blend! So, only I can cure its hangover, do you understand it now? In order to apply common sense, you still need to have some basic knowledge and experience, right? General?" Jun Mo Xie's reply and tone were merciless.

"Even if what you say is true, it does not take.... Seven jars of wine? They didn't take so much of your 'secret' wine in the first place?! You're obviously blackmailing me!" Dugu Wudi didn't really understand the nature of the wine's intoxication, but was still trying to use his general knowledge on the subject to accuse Jun Mo Xie while tactfully trying to avoid the real issue which was bothering him: [These wine jars cost nearly twelve thousand taels each! That's too much ah.]

"I haven't even started selling my wine publicly yet, so this is actually my first sale." Jun Mo Xie started collecting the money: "So basically, I'm giving you this for a very cheap price.... And it may not be this cheap next time ah!"

Even though Dugu Wudi's face had become even blacker with rage at this moment, he turned around and left since he was afraid that he might end up losing his temper. He really didn't want to beat this kid up.... He was the young master of the Jun Family after all.

... ....

"It was reported that you were teasing the Dugu Family's girl?" old man Jun smiled as he squinted his eyes and readjusted his gaze to look at his grandson.

"Grandpa, no, I don't know that savage girl is saying! I don't know why the Dugu family is claiming that I bullied their daughter.... She has been teasing me, okay?" Jun Mo Xie sighed, almost as he if felt wronged by the accusation: "This is ridiculous!"

"What's so ridiculous about this? It's simple; that girl fancies you!" the old man revealed a cunning smile: "If that girl didn't have a crush on you, then she wouldn't be acting so naughty. Dugu Zongheng, that old bastard.....he probably knew this all along, and is just trying to play dumb in front of everyone. He thought that I won't be able to see through his scheme?"

"What scheme?" Jun Mo Xie was genuinely very surprised. He

really hadn't spotted anything unusual about this matter.

"Dugu Xiao Yi fancies you like the little fool she is, but the Dugu family will be reluctant in making you their son-in-law; on the other hand, even the King will not allow you to marry someone from the Dugu Family, which is quite obvious, right?" Jun Zhan Tian stroked his beard.

"Of course I understand. If two such powerful military families of the Tian Xiang empire were unified in a bond of marriage, then the royal family will feel threatened." Jun Mo Xie nodded. He was finally beginning to understand some parts now.

"No, you still don't!" Jun Zhan Tian seemed a bit gloomy that his grandson was unable to see through such a basic scheme.

"The Dugu family is just trying to prepare for the worst. If Dugu Xiao Yi tries to commit suicide over not being able to marry you, then the Dugu Family will try to use it and will try take it out on us, and when that time comes, they will need more reasons to attack us; when this happens, the two families will be pointing swords at each other; but that will just be to deceive the public, do you get it? Even though his Majesty will not want to the Dugu Family's pampered daughter to be married into the Jun Family, but it will still be a better scenario then a complete falling out between the two families!"

"And at that time, in order to prevent a huge internal strife in the kingdom, His Majesty himself will turn into a matchmaker for the two of you. Understand it now? Dugu Zongheng sent his seven pups here to create trouble... that was his way of creating an alibi for stirring trouble later on! That old moron must be feeling very proud right now... humph!"

"That old bastard thinks that he's too smart and everyone else is a fool. Didn't he even once think that the Emperor is a lot smarter than him? What a pig! If we don't prepare for this in advance, then we might end up taking a lot of damage!"



Jun Mo Xie repeatedly uttered 'uh', as listened to this; dumbstruck. [It's surprising that these old guys have so much time to formulate such weird schemes, at this rate....]

"That can't happen...." Old man Jun looked at his grandson and winked: "You can't marry her! Whatever you did with her, without being married to her, is fine; but I will not allow that old bastard to marry off his granddaughter to my grandson!"

Jun Mo Xie was practically sweating bullets.....

[When the grandfather is leading with such examples, then there's no point in blaming the grandson ah.....]

"We need to put this matter off early; otherwise this will cause a big headache later on. I can't believe that he thought that I'd let him marry his granddaughter to my grandson!" Grandfather Jun seemed a bit out of tune: "The first sign of you rising to power, and everyone wants to befriend you ah; even the three princes are fighting with each other to curry favors with you...."

"I can't help.... I'm just naturally handsome." Jun Mo Xie touched his chin, feeling a bit impressed with himself.

"Of course you are very handsome! Why wouldn't you be? You're a son of the Jun Family!" if Jun Mo Xie was pleased with his looks, then Jun Zhan Tian was practically on the verge of narcissism. "But that doesn't mean that this kind of things should happen. You probably had a few flings with a few girls along the way, but this will be slightly more difficult to deal with. And as far as those three princes are concerned; I tell you, those three are a bad deal. Once they stick to you, you won't be able to shake them off. And don't think that you're smarter than them... they will betray you whenever it suits them! Understand?"

"Well, I understand. In fact, my real intention is...." Jun Mo Xie was about to give an idea to prepare for the uncertainties.....

"Oh, just don't okay? Your private affairs do not concern me, but

just keep the Jun Family's name out of it." old man Jun promptly waved his arm to interrupt Jun Mo Xie, and then left the room with his hands folded behind his back.

Jun Mo Xie was quite angry with this situation, especially since he wasn't allowed to express his opinion. He had struggled a long time to create his new image, and he was suddenly left looking like a fool all over again....

The young master of the Jun Family shook his head, and made his way towards the courtyard where fatty Tang was anxiously waiting for him.

It had been a long time since they had last seen each other. Jun Mo Xie had gotten busy with healing his uncle, and then helping him during his physical rehabilitation, post which he had accompanied his uncle for a tour.... and it had almost been a month since he had seen his friend now. However, he had thought about the meatball's wellbeing a few times though!

But all that sentiment vanished the moment he saw the fatty again....

That huge meatball had been constantly asking a little Lolita, who was looking after the guests in the courtyard: "When will he be back....?"

"Why hasn't he returned yet.... What?"

And then he had also asked: "He didn't die during his trip right.....?"

The little maid at the reception was quite scared of the seemingly grim and dejected body language of the big-fat man. She was afraid that if the man accidentally or intentionally tumbled over, and fell on top of her little body, then given her small physical structure, she would inevitably get crushed to death underneath him....

"Hey fatty, what are you doing here?" Jun Mo Xie was holding the three invitations in his hand; although he felt as if he was

holding three bombs. The three brothers weren't on good terms with each other, and since all three of them wished to see him at the same time.... then something was definitely going on. He was already having a headache and then this huge fat meatball of a body made it even worse.

"Hum... third young master, you came back; I ... you have to help me out..... Brother I don't want to live ah.... You don't know what happened to your little brother..." Tang Yuan's eyes and nose were leaking: "you have to help me out this time, or I'll, I'll just..... I ....."

"You just what? Eat till you die? Quickly tell me what happened, and wait; first tell me why I should help you!" Jun Mo Xie was sitting on a chair opposite to his friend. He looked closely, and figured that this might be a little serious: "Fatty, you seem in a really bad shape, what happened? Did you lose your wife again?!"

"Balls!" Tang Yuan cursed out loudly: "You think I'm stupid?"

"Okay then, it's time for my sleep now." Jun Mo Xie playfully started to get up from his seat.

"No, don't go! You don't know what my grandpa is doing to me; you have to help me out, or I will die for sure." Tang Yuan hastily barred his way.

"Quickly tell me your problem; I'm very busy... I don't have time for your silly games." Jun Mo Xie raised his line of sight.

"Oh... woo.... Painful.... Third young master... they are sending me for castration at the palace, woo...." Tang Yuan started crying again.

"What? Your grandfather wants to you to become an imperial eunuch?! Your grandfather still loves you, right?" Jun Mo Xie seemed quite amused, and sat up straight as he stare his friend with big round eyes.

[TL's note: (in ancient context) eunuchs are men who protect important women when their husbands are away. These men are

usually castrated before they are hired for the position of a eunuch.]

"Ah yes, he wants me to become a eunuch!" Tang Yuan's chest welled up like a mountain: "As if there are no other jobs in the palace apart from this?!"

"Of course there are other jobs in the palace, but none of them will suit you; you're barely good enough for this one as it is!" Jun Mo Xie rubbed his chin and shrugged his shoulders, before breaking into a provocative laughter.

"What do you mean? You think that I'm only good enough to be a eunuch? Are you trying to piss me off?!" even though Tang Yuan felt quite agrieved and indignant, he couldn't find more tears to express it properly.

"Alright, then why don't you tell me about your other qualities? What would you be good at?" Jun Mo Xie ignored the fatty's anger and continued to laugh lightly.

"I have a lot of qualities, such as....." the fatty thought for a long time, but couldn't come up with anything!

"For example, you could help your grandfather by forging a good relationship with the generals of the Mu Rong army?" Jun Mo Xie realized that the man was already quite embarrassed and decided that he shouldn't tease the man any further; so he smiled and gave his fat friend a hint.

"Yes, that's really it!" the fatty's gloomy faced suddenly lit up: "I didn't get it earlier when my grandfather explained it; he said that he had good relationships inside the imperial palace, at all levels, and even with the man who carries out the medical examination of the eunuchs. So basically, he will set things up, and wants me to....."

## Chapter 126: Unambitious

---

"Why are you reacting so swiftly and decisively? Your father learnt a great deal there ah!" Jun Mo Xie had always been quite amazed with the fatty's father. When the big man was overseeing the command of his guards, all enemies were sure to die. But his father was going to take charge of a different position now, and Tang Yuan could soon get his job some day!

"Amazing? This is really distressing, third young master, my father and my grandfather were serious about this.... They are going to start training me. They want me to start at the base level and once I've master this level and have cultivated myself, then my father will chose an appropriate time and will redeploy my position. I'll keep rolling from one department to the other, and finally I'll have to inherit my father's seat, in time. Do you understand?" Fatty's face was hanging from his body like a dried out melon.

"In other words, you will become the head of the Tang Family one day?" Jun Mo Xie stared blankly at this amusing fatty in disbelief. [Head of a family? Master of one of the biggest family's of the Tian Xiang Empire? Who's going to believe this ah?]

"Well, ah, I don't know where that old man popped out of, but he said that he's an old friend of my grandfather from forty years ago..." the fatty continued: "Four damn decades and he hasn't written a single letter, and now that the Tang Family is on the rise, he's suddenly here to talk friendship?! What kind of a friend is he? But Grandpa was quite happy about it."

"Stop! How's that relevant to you?" Jun Mo Xie was beginning to get another headache now. [This fatty just keeps jumping discussions... he doesn't make any sense logically....what is wrong with him?]

"How's this irrelevant huh? After that old man waltzed in, he

picked out Tang Gun, Tang Bao and Tang Guo and tested them out for Sky Xuan potential. After he was done with the three of them, he told my grandfather that the three of them have potential to enter into the Sky Xuan level and that he'll take them as apprentices. He also promised that he'll train them into the Earth Xuan in less than a decade.... My grandfather was so happy that he took the offer saying that he is 'the proud grandfather of four grandchildren'....." Tang Yuan sighed: "Do you understand it now?"

"I still didn't get it. All I could make out was that the Tang Family will probably have three Earth Xuans in less than a decade, which can only be a good thing for the family, but what's this have to do with your side of the story? What are you trying to say?" Jun Mo Xie was looking at his friend blankly.

"Third young master... ah, you're usually so clever... why are you acting so stupid today?! The three elder brothers of mine are going after their master, so what happens to the family now? Someone will have to inherit the responsibility? And am I not the only one remaining?"

"Families like our... whether big or small, have one thing in common: the person who is in-charge of the family must make sure that the family keeps growing; in order to ensure that, the leader of the family must train suitable candidates, men and women, and then turn them into loyal followers. During this period, the old generation, which is already loyal to the family, helps out and trains these people into successful Xuan experts! Then, they in-turn train the next generation, and cultivate their powers, and this keeps happening from one generation to the next.... Until the family is gradually entrenched into the roots of the empire, so much so that even the royal family doesn't provoke these super-families; and all this is done so we can light incense sticks in front of the portraits of the ancestors!"

"All such families are inevitably struggling in that direction."

"And me, I'm not even remotely affected by such things.... Do you understand my pain now?" Tang Yuan sighed.

"I don't understand a damn thing, you fat fart!" Jun Mo Xie replied contemptuously: "Your grandfather is training you to be the head of the family, and you'll get all the glories of life! How's that related to those three? They have talent for cultivation, and isn't that going to help you in the future? So basically, you're just trying to show off, right? You know how much struggle is there inside a family for the position of the family's head.... Brother's wage wars against each other... they fight.... and sometimes the family breaks up in discord... you're getting all of it, and without the slightest of struggle!"

"I do not want any of it; I do not want to be a minister! How many times do you want me to say it?!" the fatty cried out in anger: "I'm not showing off! I don't want the responsibility of bureaucracy! Traps and deception at every step... do you think that I'm cut out for this? Or even good enough to endure it? I do not have any of those skills... I just want a free and leisurely life.... I just want to be an unaffected dandy! I've never wanted to shoulder these responsibilities! Do you understand?" the fatty's saliva was sprouting out in all directions as the fatty vented out his anger.

"You don't want to be a minister, you don't want to be the head of the family, and you don't any responsibilities.... Then what do you want to do with your life?" Jun Mo Xie frowned.

"Third young master ah, I don't mind when other people ask this, but you're not other people.... you're my confidant.... You know me, you know what makes your brother happy, right?!" Tang Yuan raised his gaze, and it seemed as if looking at his imaginary future: "Brother, I only want money; the sound of other people's gold and silver falling into my pocket is what makes me happy.... Really happy."

Jun Mo Xie was silent for the next five seconds. [What kind of a person is he... why am I friends with him? Jun Mo Xie must have

been his soulmate.... But not me.... Although I am Jun Mo Xie... but I'm not really Jun Mo Xie..... ah.]

"I just want to do business, that's my favorite thing in life ah. My family has a business, and I just want to inherit that. I want to overtake that business, and once I've done that, I'll turn it into the biggest business house of the entire continent!" Tang Yuan was waving his thick arms at this point, which were even wider than Jun Mo Xie's thighs.

"That's easier said than done. You must try to convince your father of this first." Jun Mo Xie was feeling a bit strange. As far as he could tell, the fatty would make a formidable business man, in fact, that was the only thing that he'd be good at! But fatty's father wouldn't understand it, let alone endorse it!

"Really....?" It seemed as if Tang Yuan was about to start crying again, but he couldn't find the tears this time. He took off his robe and revealed his upper body. He turned about to show his backbone to his friend, while his face had turned red with anger and humiliation.

"See, third young master, this was the result of convincing my father...." Tang Yuan sighed as he showed his back to Jun Mo Xie.

"Well..... painful." Jun Mo Xie was stunned to see that the Fatty's back was dyed purple with almost a dozen bruise marks.

"... and look at this." The Fatty turned around and pointed to his belly. There were five or six foot marks on his fat belly. Then he put on his robes again and stated bitterly: "I will not show you my ass, but that's much worse off.... I can barely take a dump."

"You've been beaten up like cattle, ah!" Jun Mo Xie was dumbstruck. "It seems that you can't do anything about this, so you might as well not try.... Since your father is already clearing your way to the top, I believe that you won't have many issues, and you'll be able to cope with the pressure quite easily. Indeed, even if I was willing to find a solution for you, I don't think I'd be able to



do much; no matter what we think, your father will not listen to any of it. I advise that you honestly try to become a minister for now, and then succeed him to his seat for now."

Jun Mo Xie was silent all of a sudden. [What kind of heartless acts are people willing to do for power... he didn't even go easy on his own son.... Tang Yuan is being forced to reap where he hasn't sown... he's obviously going to be very reluctant about it.]

[But what kind of a man is his father?]

[Is he even more evil than me? Would I have been able to do something like this?]

"I'm not going to do that! I would rather die!" Tang Yuan stood up vehemently, and raised his hand to his chest as he chanted his vow with a firm look in his eyes: "I will not take over the house master's seat; I will not become a minister; in this life, I will only make money!"

"Plop...." Jun Mo Xie stared blankly as the chair which was previously glued to the fatty's buttocks, finally dropped to the floor. He had never seen a clown like this one before; not in this world, nor in the previous one.

"I won't stray from my ideals, and all of my old man's possession and incentives will not deviate me from my path!" the fatty looked quite resolute: "And I will fool that eunuch, Zhu Lao."

"Eunuch Zhao Lao?" an idea popped up into Jun Mo Xie's mind as he said the word: [Tang Yuan would make a very good businessman, but his family will not allow him to do business. But if I helped him out, then we could start a partnership together... and we could amass a fortune over time?!]

With this thought in mind, Jun Mo Xie suddenly looked at Tang Yuan again, almost as if he was staring at a priceless commodity.

"What are you doing.... Why are you eyeing me like that? I, I... I'm a guy.... Stay away from me!" the fatty seemed afraid and

backed off a few steps.

"ah....." Jun Mo Xie's internal organs were sent tumbling at the thought, and he barely managed to control his vomit.

"Well, I don't want to listen to more of your crap; you said that you'll fool that eunuch Zhu Lao, how?" Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes. Eunuch Zhu Lao was quite close to the Emperor, which is why Jun Mo Xie estimated that the man must be an expert.

Eunuch Zhu Lao's given name was Zhu Zhu Zhu, which is quite funny, but the man is known to people like Jun Zhan Tian and Dugu Wudi, and visits them quite often. Thus, it can only be estimated that the man must be quite an expert himself, and was certainly not an ordinary man.

"That castrated old fool is in-charge of checking the body of the eunuchs, and is known to play around with them a lot." Fatty grimaced: "Brother, even though my body is a little fat, but I'm perfectly healthy, and I don't have any diseases, so I'll pass for sure... that is my main concern."

The Fatty patted his belly with a sense of pride: "I heard that the other guy, Mu Rong Qian Jun's medical examination was very brutal, and that old fool twisted his penis for a long time..... Mu Rong Qian Jun was pale after the examination... in fact, he was seen walking wide-legged for the next two weeks...." The Fatty seemed to be deriving entertainment from the rumor.

"Are you still feeling good about this? I think you should immediately start practicing walking like that." Jun Mo Xie burst into laughter again, as he funnily stared at the fat meatball, trying to imagine how he'd look in the situation.

"Yes, yes, third master, you have to help me, I don't want to walk wide legged." Tang Yuan immediately realized the gravity of his own impending fate.

"Medical examination.... Will he check your body naked?" Jun

Mo Xie thought for a while, and came up with an idea. He extended his finger and made a poking gesture: "Will he also check your back side?"

## Chapter 127: A breakthrough within sight

---

"Medical examination..... is he going to strip you naked?" Jun Mo Xie pensively held out his finger and made a poking gesture as he winked: "Is he also going to check your ass?"

"I've heard that they even check your anus." Tang Yuan replied in a gloomy tone: "Right now I'm not going to be able to pass that exam."

The fatty was standing on his feet, and one could tell that the man was quite scared of what was coming his way: "Third young master, I have heard that the eunuchs are asked to strip naked... completely.... Gives me the creeps, really ah.....and then they put all kinds of things inside your body ah."

"And now I have the creeps." Jun Mo Xie scratched his arms, which were studded with goosebumps.

If something was so terrifying that even the king of all assassins was terrified of it, then just imagine how horrifying the situation must be!

"So is there no solution to this? Brother I'm counting on you!" the fatty looked at his friends with a hint of hope in his eyes.

"There is! But you have to go to the palace as soon as possible for the check up, and I'll help you prepare for it myself, uh, so .....so....." Jun Mo Xie smiled and winked, and then broke into a laughter.

"I don't understand... what do you mean?....." Tang Yuan was standing with a blank look on his face.

"You don't understand? I can't have you working at the palace okay... I was thinking about doing business with you... as a partner. Over time, both of us could make a fortune, together." Jun Mo Xie smiled as he continued to observe Tang Yuan's face.

"Do business together??" Tang Yuan's face lit up, and he blinked

twice in quick succession: "Third young master.... You're like my second parent! You're like my...."

"Get out of here; you won't be able to live up to your father's expectation, but what's your father going to do once his own actions lead to your disqualification?" Jun Mo Xie stretched his legs and kicked the fatty in his buttocks.

Tang Yuan clutched his buttocks as he grimaced in pain: "Nothing. As long as the royal decree goes against me, father will not kill me.... I hope. So you're say that if I fail and use my father as the scapegoat.. ha ha ha ha.....?"

Tang Yuan's body language changed the moment he realized that he was out of danger. Jun Mo Xie was laughing so hard that all the sorrowful thoughts of his heart seemed to have washed away; [this fatty is one heck of an amusing clown.]

He was still laughing when he suddenly recalled Tang Yuan's earlier words: 'Tang Wanli's friend from forty years ago had suddenly popped out of nowhere, and the man was a super-expert.' He paused in the middle of his laughter: [a super master? How could this be? Does this mysterious occurrence have anything to do with the news about the Xuan Core? But so quickly? If so, then then there's a storm coming towards the Tian Xiang Country.....]

Suddenly the Qi Inside Jun Mo Xie's body started working automatically. Jun Mo Xie could clearly feel the strength of the Qi which was flowing through his body's meridians at the moment, and could tell that it was beginning to reach the point of saturation now. The originally thin and weak flow of energy, had now transformed into a strong and turbulent current, and he was able to carry out his normal physical movements which much greater ease at present.

Jun Mo Xie's heart was carrying a very strange feeling, which had no logical explanation, but he felt that once this energy reaches the saturation point, then he might be able to open the

second layer of the Pagoda!

So this time, Jun Mo Xie didn't ignore it. He started spending his entire time in circulating this energy throughout his body, and ended up spending the next two days in promoting his state. After he was done, Jun Mo Xie was pleasantly surprised to realize that not only was the Pagoda capable of absorbing his body's aura, but could now also assimilate aura from the outside world; only a little amount though. But this was still indicative of a major step in forward direction!

Jun Mo Xie had big expectations from the second layer of the Hongjun Pagoda, since the first layer was only the basics of its foundation. If the basics were so amazing, then the second layer.....

In the recent days, the atmospheric temperature had dipped, and the autumn winds were rustling brazenly throughout the city. Dried out yellow leaves were falling from the sky, but Jun Mo Xie was spending his entire time inside his room; practicing. He was busy absorbing energy from his surroundings, and was trying to feed it to the Pagoda; if he couldn't feed some part of the energy, then he'd scatter it around in his surroundings, such as his courtyard, and that of his Third Uncle's, and Guan Qing Han's. Due to this sudden influx of Aura, the courtyards were actually still lush green, almost as if it was still the peak of the summer. In fact, some of the tree branches had even started sprouting new buds. Even though this quite bizarre, Guan Qing Han was cherishing this new life in their courtyard; while this phenomenon was quite abnormal, she was beginning to care about these new buds almost as if they were a priceless treasure.

The winds were rising inside the Tian Xiang city, so Jun Mo Xie was obviously under tremendous pressure!

In fact, pressure can be a very powerful driving force! And so, Jun Mo Xie was forcing himself since he wanted to be prepared for this unpredictable change in climate, which was now approaching

the Tian Xiang city, and wished to be strong enough to brave through this upcoming turbulence in weather!

He had always been a lone wolf in his previous incarnation, and would always act freely! However, his circumstances had changed now, and he was no longer alone; he was now burdened with the protection of an entire family! He could still act freely and remain unaffected by the fate of his family; but having an entire family supporting his actions would fuel his ambition further; in this world, power and influence were very eminent and necessary factors.

Jun Mo Xie had personally trained three hundred men in the past, and now they would all come in handy.

For the first time, Jun Mo Xie was going to work with a team.

For the first time, he was going to be a team player!

Just as grandfather Jun was developing his own army's strength for the uncertainties of the future, Jun Mo Xie had also started secretly training his own. He needed decent men.... Otherwise, what would a handful of silver and Gold Xuan fighters be able to do in the face of a storm?

It takes a real master to overcome a storm! In case of mediocrity.... It's just better to give up!

[But if the servant becomes a top level expert, then would I be able to keep him in control?]

Jun Mo Xie scratched his head, and suddenly he remembered something that he read in his previous life: '... Even the heroes of this world bow in front of great men, and follow them with utter devotion; they remain loyal to such men, and this is the basic foundation of any organization....'

"If I can portray myself as a great man, then even the Spirit Xuan experts will follow me loyally.... How wonderful." Jun Mo Xie scratched his chin, and smiled crookedly.

He held out the three invitations in his hand, and started thinking about accepting the second prince's invitation. The place of the meet with the second prince was obvious: Ni Chang pavilion! He had been there once on an eavesdropping mission, and was well aware of Lady Yue'er's deep seated hatred for the Jun Family, which now beginning to linger in his mind.

[If this woman finds out that I'm there, then she'll try to get to the bottom of the situation, and then she'll try to cause trouble.]

But then again, Jun Mo Xie had been presented with an excellent opportunity of meeting the Second Prince, and he simply didn't wish to let it slip by.

[There are, uh, according my calculation, a long time had passed since the incident regarding the Xuan Beast tendons and crossbows, and even though grandfather looked into the matter, we still haven't heard anything new...]

Anyway, the second prince had organized a nice banquet along a beautiful river, which Jun Mo Xie obviously didn't mind. As far the other distractions and attractions of the locality were concerned, Jun Mo Xie wasn't even remotely interested in them.

[I'll go to the Ni Chang pavilion today!]

Jun Mo Xie was beaming a radiant smile as he stepped out into the courtyard. He was completely prepared to blatantly tell his grandfather that he wished to visit a brothel, and would require a couple of bodyguards for protection; a couple of his best and strongest body guards....

Just as stepped out of his room, he saw Guan Qing Han sitting in the courtyard, dressed in a snow white robe. She looked at him coldly as he approached her: "Where are you going?"

"Well, I'm going out to the Ni Chang Pavilion." Jun Mo Xie replied honestly, almost as if there was nothing shameful about it. [The son of the emperor has invited me for a meeting there, so



there's obviously no blame attached to my head, right?]

"Shameless! Now you've even started acting so boldly about visiting that shameful place! I thought that maybe you've straightened up, but no, you just put on a false robe! You're betraying the trust of your grandfather!" Guan Qing Han's face was flushed with rage, and she was already unwittingly leaning forward, ready to teach him a lesson. [Just look at this guy! He was only acting to be upright for a few days, and now he's even started boldly stating that he's visiting a brothel to fool around?! He's so annoying! If he wasn't my brother-in-law, I wouldn't have tolerated his non-sense!]

Jun Mo Xie ignored her angered remark and laughed as he said: "Sister-in-law, in fact, I think you look even prettier when you're angry; I'm just saying the truth, really....."

Guan Qing Han's face went cold, and she charged towards him without saying anything further: [If I don't teach this kid a lesson today, then he'll just go back to his old ways! Anyway, I won't let him go today; I'll teach him lesson and then I'll drag him to the grandfather's chambers!]

Jun Mo Xie quickly ducked and dodged her palm, and then smoothly slid his feet and distanced himself from her body, and smiled: "Later sister-in-law; right now I have an important appointment. I'll practice with you once I return, but right now someone important is waiting for me. Bye." Then Jun Mo Xie ran out.

He could tell by her heaving chest that she was quite angry with him! Jun Mo Xie would have told her the truth; the Second Prince was indeed waiting for him at the Ni Chang Pavilion; but then again, Guan Qing Han hadn't really given him a chance to explain. She had just naturally assumed that he was visiting a prostitute as always. How could she not have flowing into a rage then?

"This kid had just started turning a new leaf.... I will not allow

him to degenerate into that scum again! If I let this happen, then how will I show my face to my in-laws and his deceased brother someday....?" Guan Qing Han bit her lips and quickly started walking towards grandpa Jun's chambers.

Jun Mo Xie was quite amazed with his progress; his physical actions had become so subtle, that he could barely believe it. Some time ago, if he was encountered with Guan Qing Han's anger, then given that he can't attack her back, or kill her, he wouldn't have been able to dodge her easily. In fact, it was awfully hard for him to control his urge to kill her in combat. But right now, he had been able to dodge her attack very easily; in fact, it had happened almost instinctively!

And then, the other day, he had managed to dodge a Sky Xuan's attack and had also managed to strike him, without killing the man! Even though the man hadn't expected the retaliation and wasn't exactly ready to defend either, the fact that Jun Mo Xie was able to counter, and that too without causing a fatality, was undeniable!

Previously, Jun Mo Xie didn't have the ability to do these things, but now these things were beginning to happen naturally! Was Jun Mo Xie even aware of his own progress?

# Chapter 128: Talking Big

---

Jun Mo Xie frowned thoughtfully when he recalled the incident at the Huang Hua hall the other day, and the massacre that he had staged.

In his previous life, Jun Mo Xie was unstoppable because of his superior skill set. But in this world, Jun Mo Xie's current skills sets and strength weren't enough to be the best.

The Xuan Qi cultivation system of this world, ranging from the first nine levels to Silver Xuan and all the way to Spirit Xuan were all very clearly labelled out, and very distinctly organized. However, 'the art of unlocking the Heaven's' was a very unique and mysterious ability, and seemed somewhat weird when compared to the general Xuan Qi cultivations standards; in fact, it felt wrong.

According to what Jun Mo Xie could make out, if this mysterious ability was as good as he was assessing it to be, then there was no need to go through all the pains and hardships that a martial artist takes to become a Xuan expert, and still ends up being a meagre Silver or Gold Xuan. After all said and done, even a Silver Xuan expert, in fact even a Silver Xuan Peak expert was nothing in front of Jun Mo Xie since he could kill the man with a snap of his fingers!

If the first layer of the Hongjun Pagoda was able to give him so much power, then at this rate of progress, assessing Jun Mo Xie's strength after unlocking the second layer would be astronomical? How strong would he become then?

With these thoughts in mind, Jun Mo Xie was beginning to realize that he needed to find out more about this world. After all said and done, this world was completely different from the one he originally hailed from.

Grandpa Jun wasn't home, so Jun Mo Xie called out two guards on his own authority and ordered them to accompany him outside.

After all, he was going out for a meeting with the second prince, and if the other party had any malicious intentions, then it was important for Jun Mo Xie to appear well defended since walking alone would be inviting danger.

Guan Qing Han was a little late to arrive at Grandpa Jun's chambers and saw that Jun Mo Xie was already on his way out at. She immediately turned around and rushed to find Jun Wu Yi; still angry at Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Wu Yi was about to give out his first order as the master of the house; he would be sending out his most reliable soldier after the girls and boys who had escaped from the Huang Hua Hall. But instead of giving his first command as the master of the house, and relishing the power of his position, Jun Wu Yi was sitting in his wheelchair and was pondering over his nephew's words. Previously, on the way back from the Huang Hua Hall, Jun Mo Xie had demonstrated superb hiding and anti-tracking skills, which gave an indication that he had achieved this expertise after a serious amount of training and experience. After returning to the Jun residence, Jun Wu Yi had been trying to recall Jun Mo Xie's words, actions, movements, and each time he'd replay the memories in his head, he'd realize that he had missed something the last time around!

Later, Jun Mo Xie had said: 'My practice is in my instinct. I do not deliberate to practice, but I still practice all the time.' This one phrase had been lingering inside Jun Wu Yi's head ever since, and he hadn't been able to get it out of his head.

This phrase was quite reasonable; in fact, it was a very simple fact! If practice was ingrained into a person's instinct, then why would the person need to do it on purpose? But could this ever be done, and what kind of result was possible? But then again, Jun Wu Yi had personally seen Jun Mo Xie in action, and was aware that Jun Mo Xie's expertise and skill set was far superior to any man he had ever known!

Even though Jun Mo Xie was still just a youngster, his achievements in the realm of martial arts were already worthy of being turned into an immortal folklore!

Jun Wu Yi's face was carrying a grave expression: [Since Mo Xie can do it, then why can't I? Am I that useless?] Simultaneously, Jun Wu Yi also knew that he if he wanted Han Yan Yao's family to acknowledge their mutual affection, then he'd need to adapt Jun Mo Xie's style of training; in fact, this was his best hope!

Jun Wu Yi's mind was completely muddled with such thoughts, but he hadn't realized that this one idea would take him on the path of greatness!

Although, this moment was just the beginning.....

Jun Mo Xie was able to do this type of practice since he had been trained in this fashion in his previous incarnation, and 'the art of unlocking the heaven's' was a little different from Xuan Qi. Qi and blood flowed through his meridians together; as a fusion. On top of that, the Hongjun Pagoda continuously emitted Qi to help him support his practice, which was quite difficult to achieve for ordinary practitioners.

But Jun Wu Yi was unaware of this truth and believed that it wasn't impossible to achieve it since Jun Mo Xie was already doing it! In this world, although energy and Qi were similar in functionality, their inherent nature was quite different. Circulating Xuan Qi was a difficult and dangerous task, and the effects of negligence could be very violent, and even lethal. So much so, that if Xuan Qi was allowed to run harmoniously with natural functions of the body, then there was even a chance that the body might end up getting possessed, and the practitioner may end up suffering a very tragic end. This was the reason that practitioners were so prudent and cautious while conducting their practice, and made sure that they weren't being disturbed by outside elements during their practice.

However, Jun Wu Yi was already considering going against this norm, which could be considered as a major change in ideology!

In fact, just by daring to take on this task, he had already won half the battle!

Sounds of quick and crashing footsteps fell onto Jun Wu Yi's ears, and he could tell by the sound of the footsteps, that the owner of the feet was in an enraged state.

"Qing Han? What are you so angry, what happened?!" Jun Wu Yi tried to guess the identity of the person.

"Uncle, Jun Mo Xie.... that little brat is getting out of hand now. Today, he boldly told me that he is going out to visit the Spirit Fog Lake's Ni Cheng Pavilion!" Guan Qing Han roared angrily. This anger was obviously directed at Jun Mo Xie, since Guan Qing Han sincerely respected both the elders of the family; namely Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi, even if the latter was a physically disabled cripple.

"What about it?" Jun Wu Yi wasn't even a least bit surprised.

"Ah? What about it?! This isn't a small matter ah, he had just started walking on the right path, and now he's going back to his old ways, and?" Guan Qing Han was still raging with fury.

"Oh, that's something that I know about; I allowed him to go." Jun Wu Yi was finally waking up from his personal thoughts, and hence replied in a soft voice.

"Even you knew about this? But you still allowed him to go there? You...." Guan Qing Han's eyes widened in shock, and suddenly she was eyeing Jun Wu Yi in rather confused manner, unable to understand his reply.

"Qing Han, you are mistaken. The second prince invited him for a talk, and as chance has it, the prince requested that the meeting be held in the Spirit Fog Lake's Ni Cheng pavilion." Jun Wu Yi smiled warmly: "Qing Han.... Mo Xie has actually become very sensible

now."

"Sensible....." Guan Qing Han was somewhat dumbstruck. After all the years of watching Jun Mo Xie undertaking all kinds of nefarious tasks, which were an indignation to all civilized laws under the heavens, it was hard for her to interpret that Jun Wu Yi could call that debauchee 'very sensible'!

"I suppose I was mistaken, but I understand now...." still muddled, Guan Qing Han whispered, sighed and turned away: "It turns out that I have a lot to catch up to...."

"Yes, there have been a lot of changes, and you'll naturally need to bring yourself up to speed." Jun Wu Yi stated lightly as she was leaving, and he once again immersed himself in his new form of practice.

Guan Qing Han's footsteps paused for a moment, but then she continued to walk.

Jun Wu Yi sighed and whispered: "Uncle Pang, please come in."

Lao Pang quickly came in and stationed himself in front of Jun Wu Yi.

"Uncle Pang, I have a task that requires your assistance." Jun Wu Yi rubbed his face with both his hands, and it seemed like he was having a hard time in making the final decision.

"What is it? Please give me your command third master." Lao Pang's face was solemn. This was going to Jun Wu Yi's first command as the head of the family, and no matter what, Lao Pang would want to execute it to perfection.

"There was news from the ministry offices that a large group of disabled children have escaped from the .... Huang Hua Hall. Pitiful!" Jun Wu Yi had finally made up his mind: "You please investigate how many of them are alive, and use the family's resources to help them set themselves up for a better future... they are still just kids."

"Yes, I'll get to it." Lao Pang finished and turned around to leave.

"If you can do this secretly, then do not expose your identity. If you face any obstruction, then please reveal that it was done upon my orders." Jun Wu Yi looked up, and his eyes reveal a hint of sharpness.

### Ni Cheng Pavilion

The huge third floor of the building was almost empty, and only a very few people were leisurely sitting there, dressed in graceful attires. Accomplished scholars, middle-aged business men, some youngsters..... even if their clothes weren't expensive, their actions were enough to reveal that they all belonged to high-class social backgrounds.

"Er Ye, Jun Mo Xie is nothing but a debauchee and a spendthrift. Er ye, there was no need for you to personally come and greet that boy face-to-face; but now that Er Ye is present to grace him, that kid will start talking big."

The speaker was approximately twenty years old by the looks of it, and looked rather pale. His body was extremely thin, and his hands were leisurely swaying a hand fan. Even though his identity was unknown, it was obvious from his body language that this person belonged to an influential family.

"Brother Er Ye, there is no need to meet Jun Mo Xie face to face; as younger brother just stated, Jun Mo Xie is nothing more than a debauchee and a spendthrift, and completely incompetent otherwise. As for the other aspects, he is completely useless and is of no value to us. But yes, he does have a powerful family behind him, so we should rather focus on the elders, like Jun Zhan Tian maybe." The speaker was in his fifties or sixties by the looks of it, and spoke his words in a slow pace.

"Even Jun Zhan Tian is no good; what is he really?" the 'younger brother' chuckled in disagreement: "Although Jun Zhan Tian occupies a high position, but in terms of Xuan Qi levels, he just a



Sky Xuan expert, at best; that's it. If you wished to send him to the heavens, then I could request my father, and he could swat him aside like a fly!"

This remark made the second prince sit upright in his chair, and his eyebrows suddenly wrinkled.

His frowned and replied in an angry tone: "Just a Sky Xuan, that's it?!! Even if you tear apart this country, how many Sky Xuan experts will you find? Although you are lucky to be borne into a large family, which has a lot of advanced Xuan experts, but after all said and done, the Jiang Hu Family's strength is nothing compared to the military might of the Jun Family. Perhaps if you had considered that, then you would have known that Jun Zhan Tian could swat your father aside like a fly if he wished it!"

## Chapter 129: Ni Chang Pavilion

---

[As for your father... although I've never met him in person, but according to the rumors, he's also just a Sky Xuan Expert. Even if your father and Jun Zhan Tian fought head to head, there's a good chance that your father might end up losing the fight, and along with it, his life..... So to think that your father could wipe out Jun Zhan Tian with ease is.... Over stating it; more than just a little!]

However, the youngster's father was the head of a reasonably powerful family, who had only recently invested his troops in the Second Prince's cause. The Second Prince couldn't say this out loud since the man's family was of considerable importance at the moment.

But as for the youngster, he was no importance and had no major talents. In fact, the youngster was an out-and-out idiot, who nevertheless gave himself too much importance, and carried himself with an 'I'm the greatest in this world' attitude, and usually looked down upon everyone else. Although he was only at the Peak of the Silver Xuan, he carried himself with the attitude of a Spirit Xuan's.

The second prince had brought him along since he, like Jun Mo Xie, was an outright debauchee, and the prince was hoping that if these two birds of the same feather managed to flock along, then the prince's motives might find an easier path.....

But judging his present attitude, the prince was beginning to get worried since he felt that his arrogant attitude might end up messing the whole matter.....

Sitting adjacent to him was another man; the man was wearing a very depressed look on his face, and was sitting on his chair in a very awkward manner, with his legs opened wide apart. This man was Lord Liu, who had previously jumped into the lake's waters in pursuit of a mysterious man. During the pursuit, he had been

struck by a bamboo pole, which crashed straight between his legs at a thunderous speed, causing him to adopt this weird posture!

Lord Liu would probably never be able to get over this humiliation!

These days, Lord Liu only had two hobbies: Frantically attempting to get his condition cured; and wantonly arresting people to find his culprit. But he hadn't been able to see the mysterious man's face; and had only been able to see a white, round, ass. So anyone who was arrested under the suspicion of being the mystery-man, had to undergo the same procedure: They would be brought in front of Lord Liu, and then their pants would be stripped off their bottoms... for inspection!

Due to this, the Prince had been hearing several rumors about Lord Liu: [There has been a major change in Lord Liu's sex drive after his injury; Moreover, he's only showing interest in buttocks, and only those of young men's; moreover, Lord Liu seems to fancy white bottomed young men.....]

As a result, every time a young subordinate was in the presence of the lord, they'd inevitably try to cover their buttocks with their hands....

In case Lord Liu took a fancy to their plump and round buttocks.... Then how would he ever be able to call themselves 'a man' again?

"Er Ye, the third young master Jun has arrived." The hall's door opened; a tall and gracefully stunning beauty walked in, adorning her face with a gentle smile. Her tall posture, equipped with her big and proud breasts, and a slender waistline, turned to face the road beside the lake, where a small palanquin was leisurely swinging its way towards the pavilion.

Lady Yue'er pointed towards the people around the palanquin: "Er Ye, see those men? They are old faithful's of Jun Zhan Tian, so I'm certain that the man inside must be Jun Mo Xie."

"That's one ugly looking palanquin....." The second prince couldn't help himself: "The young master Jun has a very unique taste.... Very unique indeed, ah."

"He's nothing more than a typical debauchee and a spendthrift!" Lady Yue'er's eyes suddenly flashed a cold essence, but she quickly resumed her smiling expression and said: "Er Ye, would you like me to go down and personally receive Jun Mo Xie?"

"You?" The second prince's face was somewhat sullen, but upon seeing the firm and staunch look in Lady Yue'er's eyes, he sighed and said: "Alright, however, he must not feel unwelcomed."

"Hihi... Er Ye, Yue'er might be cheap, but when it comes to making men feel welcomed and important, very few people can match me; there's a reason my services cost so much." Lady Yue'er smiled as she confidently gazed at the red palanquin from above.

"Well.... Ah;" The Second Prince tried to smile.

Below, Jun Mo Xie jumped out of his palanquin, and landed unstably on the ground below, staggered a bit, spat on the ground, looked upwards at the sky, and sneezed. Then, he rolled his neck around once, hammered his back twice, shook his arms, tilted his head, and started walking shakily like a crab.

He was wondering inside his head: [This second prince is going to have a very bad day...]

Jun Mo Xie stepped inside the Ni Chang pavilion, took off his hat, and started to fan himself. Then, he looked sideways, and entered into the reception area, and asked one of the attendants: "Is the Second Prince here?"

"The Second Prince is waiting for your grace on the third floor; inside the feather hall." The attendant informed respectfully.

"The Feather Hall? With all the naked ladies??" Jun Mo Xie quacked out a couple of laughs: "The Second Prince surely knows how to pick a place... well he's won me over already!" Then he

started to embark up the stair case.

The attendants were wondering about the Prince's choice of company now.... [The Second Prince has asked this man to meet him in person, ah? How much longer do we have bear this pig-head? But really, second prince... wow.... How could the second prince be dining with such people???]

"Ha Ha, Mo Xie, my younger brother, it's been such a long time since I last saw you; you look so refined and cultured now! This is amazing!" The second prince affectionately stood up and energetically waved towards Jun Mo Xie.

"Uh, um.... It's surely been a while second prince...." Jun Mo Xie seemed flattered: "How could Mo Xie dare to refuse if the second prince calls him for a banquet."

"Oh, there's no need to be so polite." The second prince hurried along and extended his hand to greet Jun Mo Xie, but couldn't help feel a sense of unhappiness, and surprise, as he stood there with his hand extended; his lone hand. [This guy didn't do any customary bows in salutation, and on top of that, he is even refusing to shake my hand! That too when I'm offering respect first!]

Jun Mo Xie of course didn't greet him respectfully; in his head, even the Emperor wasn't worthy of his worship. In fact, if the God descended to the world, then would Jun Mo Xie have worshipped him? Jun Mo Xie wasn't awfully sure about it either.

So then, what respect would he have for a mere prince? In the eyes of Jun Xie, the assassin, the prince was just another living body, which he could transform into a corpse at any time.

"Ha Ha, let's just throw aside all formalities; after all, our families are friends of old ah." The Second Prince smiled graciously: "I remember that we used play together quite often as children, but now that age has caught up, now my younger Brother and I can only look back at the past and marvel at the days gone by."

The Second Prince's words had a hidden meaning behind them, and it seemed as if he was trying to remind Jun Mo Xie that he shouldn't act very high-headed in front of him, and the Prince was only greeting him since he belonged to the Jun Family. He was still the blood of the King; a prince, and Jun Mo Xie was just a high-class noble.

"Ah, yes yes." Jun Mo Xie quickly assessed the situation and replied. [Such trivial matters aren't worth spoiling this broth over.]

He couldn't help but notice the four other people who were eyeing and assessing him from the sidelines, especially the youngster whose eyes looked full of contempt and disdain: [The Second Prince is asking me to befriend this pain in the neck? What kind of a man is this guy?]

"Little Brother, let me introduce you to some of my friends; you probably know some of them." The four men got up from their seats as the second prince gestured towards them.

"This is my teacher, Hong Wen University's great scholar, Fang Bo Wen." The Second Prince sounded very respectful. Fang Bo Wen stroked his beard as he looked at Jun Mo Xie. Then he smiled and said: "Nah, I'm just an old man, and nothing compared to you youngsters, really..."

"A renowned university scholar indeed." Jun Mo Xie looked at the old man, and could feel that he'd need to be on guard against this man. This old man didn't seem ordinary, and in fact seemed to be concealing a huge amount of Qi inside his old body. [Could such a person really be the prince's master? Or a scholar from the Hong Wen University? He certainly has a history.]

"This man is Lord Liu. Lord Liu is a master of the pen and the sword; a very rare breed of talented men." The Second Prince smiled.

Jun Mo Xie looked up and down the body of the man who had

caused him to run naked on the streets, and had almost ripped him to pieces. Then his eyes suddenly revealed a look of interest as he asked: "Lord Liu has a very unique way of standing, gee, he's standing so tall, even with his legs open so wide ah."

Jun Mo Xie didn't expect that his opening sentence would actually expose the man's scars. Lord Liu's face was suddenly flushed red, while his mind was replaying the incident which had led to his awkward posture.

"The young master of the Jun Family is indeed very different from his peers, ah, and very handsome; far too handsome." Lord Liu smiled as he tried to conceal his embarrassment.

"You think so too! I wonder why I'm so handsome? I'm too handsome to be true! Other handsome men always envy my looks! You and I could become really close friends ah; confidants! I'll take you out for drinks later ah!" Jun Mo Xie coquettishly swept his hair back, and then shook his head. Instead of shying from the compliment, he had brazenly accepted it, and in fact was also appreciating his own self.

Everyone was left standing dumbstruck. They had never witnessed such narcissism before....

Lord Liu was looking even gloomier now; [you arrogant little snob... you think I'll ever desire to befriend you!]

"Third young master Jun, you deserve your reputation well! I admire you already, Ha Ha, I'm Cheng De Cao." Jun Mo Xie reset his eyes to the speaker; Cheng De Cao's face was grimaced with an arrogant smile, and it appeared as if he was half a measure away from stabbing Jun Mo Xie.

"Cheng De Cao? Never heard of you." Jun Mo Xie directly waved him out. [Who does this guy think he is, damn it, he looks like he wants to stab me, ah; I'm your daddy when it comes to that.... You puny little jerk!]

# Chapter 130: The Outrageous Debauchee

---

After hearing the young master Jun's words, Cheng De Cao's face had gone completely pale with anger!

"Oh, young master Jun, the young master Cheng belongs to a smaller family than the Jun Family, so it is quite possible that you may not have heard of him." Fang Bo Wen's eyes had been glued to Jun Mo Xie from the moment he had entered the room; the old man was constantly observing Jun Mo Xie's every action and word.

".....Cheng De Cao, is that right?" Jun Mo Xie lifted his gaze and looked at him with a side glance: "recognized expert?"

Cheng De Cao's entire body was trembling with rage at this point; he gritted his teeth: "Young master Jun, I've heard so much about the reputation of family; especially about your father's military prowess. I too was almost unable to recognize you by your demeanor ah." Cheng De Cao's words were quite tricky, and it seemed like he was implying that the young master Jun's parents hadn't taught him any manners; this was a direct assault on the young master Jun since he had lost his parents in his childhood.

Everyone was quite surprised by Cheng De Cao's sentence since this one sentence would not only expose the scars of the young master, but also the entire Jun Family. The second prince knew that if Jun Mo Xie interpreted these words correctly, then the entire Jun Family might turn against his cause. In fact, at this point, the second prince was already praying that the pig-headed Jun Mo Xie wouldn't understand the true meaning of these words!

The gods obviously weren't siding with the second prince today!

The assassin Jun Xie heard those words, snorted and replied: "So the young master Cheng is a recognized expert, apologies; this is the first time that we've met each other and I was being so rude to you; so please allow me extend my greeting as an exemplar of my etiquette; uh, so, Cheng De Cao.... Speaking of family.... How's



your mother?" Jun Mo Xie intentionally raised his tone as he said that last part.

Now, everyone was blankly staring at these two men.

It was obvious that the two men were on the verge of squalling since they had already started greeting each other by their mother's name.

How could a man be so shameless?

Everyone was truly amazed to meet their guest for the evening; they had heard that he was the most outrageous debauchee of the city, but meeting him in person was another experience all together!

Cheng De Cao's hands and feet went cold with rage, while face turned ashen. He was faced with a highborn like Jun Mo Xie at the moment, but the personality of the man in front was no more than that of a bully, and the bully was hurting his family's pride, which wasn't a very small family either, and was brimming with experts of all levels. But after all said and done, no matter how much strength the Jiang Hu province had at their disposal, they were still no match for the political and military might of a super-family like the Jun Family.

In other words, even if Jun Mo Xie's attitude was unbearable, Cheng De Cao simply didn't have enough might to challenge him. Insulting the ancestry of the Jun Family would be asking for a slaughter; anyway, everyone knew that the younger generations of such powerful families often tend to run their mouth without thinking twice.

At the moment, Jun Mo Xie's eyes were red with rage, and he didn't even make any efforts to control his anger! If Cheng De Cao replied back in rebuke, then everyone knew that the Jun Family's soldiers would wreak havoc, and this trivial incident could lead to the extermination of the Cheng Family.

Therefore, even though Jun Mo Xie could freely criticize his counterpart, Cheng De Cao would have to show some restraint!

Anyway, even though Cheng De Cao wasn't the smartest person around, he wasn't the biggest fool either, and even though he already despised Jun Mo Xie, he didn't insult him back any further and concealed his anger behind random chattering.

The others who were watching from the sidelines were drawing entertainment from Cheng De Cao's plight; [why is this guy provoking Jun Mo Xie? Even if he is a debauchee himself, he should've known better, and shouldn't have provoked a third generation young master of the Jun Family. For all this pride on being a recognized expert, huh? If he deliberately provokes Jun Mo Xie again, then he'll learn the lesson of his life!]

Just then, a burst of sweet incense filled the atmosphere, and gentle voice chuckled and said: "Honorable guests, please allow Yue'er and her sisters to add some fun to your meet."

Then, five or six elegant and graceful women came into the room; all of them were young and all of them were beautiful. Most of them seemed a bit shy, and got scared the moment they saw the infuriated men in front of their eyes.

Just as the women made their entrance, Jun Mo Xie's domineering and arrogant attitude quickly changed, and his eyes readjusted to the women who had just spoken up. He made no attempts to conceal the perverted intentions of his heart; in fact, his eyes were already exhibiting an abundance of obscenity, while his mouth was hanging open with saliva trickling down from the corners; a long asleep force seemed to have .....awakened.

Jun Mo Xie had half accepted the second prince's invitation since it was being held at the Ni Chang Pavilion, which meant that he'd get to meet Lady Yue'er, otherwise why would he accept the invitation so quickly? Now that she had actually appeared in front of him, he wouldn't let the opportunity slip by very easily.

Everyone saw the change in his expression, and couldn't help but despise the man in their hearts. What kind of morals does this man have? [Lady Yue'er might be beautiful, but she's still a prostitute; it isn't right to be involved with such women. Is this why the young master Jun is called the biggest debauchee in the city?]

The second prince's eyebrows wrinkled; his interest in Lady Yue'er was no secret, and even though Lady Yue'er had read his heart's desire, he had always kept her at an arm's distance; but the second prince's heart nevertheless itched to get closer. Given his identity and position, he couldn't marry her; in fact, even taking her as a mistress would not suit a man of his position, and so he couldn't help but feel a sense of helplessness in keeping his distance from her.

A transparent pearl curtain separated the two sides of the room; Lady Yue'er gently smiled as he approached from behind the curtain, and leisurely sat down. She brought out her lute and started playing it, and suddenly the vulgar environment of the room transformed to a very elegant one.

Food and wine were brought in at the prince's command, and even though the prince constantly kept offering the items to Jun Mo Xie, it seemed that the young master Jun had turned a blind eye to everything; except the body of Lady Yue'er, which he was constantly staring.

The prince and the other men felt disgusted.

Everyone already knew that Jun Mo Xie is a debauchee, but no one had expected that his actions would be this absurd. His reaction to the insult on his family was expected, but no had ever expected that Jun Mo Xie would act so shamelessly towards women!

The second prince started the discussion: "At present, the capital has several large and small families. All of these families are looking out for the actions of their counterparts, and are

constantly attacking and defending against each other." At the time when the prince finished this sentence, Jun Mo Xie was in the middle of nodding in agreement with something: "Good good."

The second prince came under the impression that the young master Jun was in agreement, and felt inspired to continue, but then found himself cut mid-way by the young master Jun: "His royal highness is right.... But Lady Yue'er's ass is so full and round... must feel really good, and it's certainly quite strong too; I feel like rubbing it!"

The second prince choked mid-sentence, almost as if he had swallowed a housefly!

Next, Fang Bo Wen and Lord Liu made their attempts to solidify the prince's statements, and even though they weren't direct about it, they tried to indicate that the Jun Family's strength might be important to their matters, and prayed that the pig-headed debauchee of the Jun Family would understand their meaning.

As for the things that everyone was discussing, it seemed as if the prince had heard about the issues from his elders, while Lord Liu and Fang Bo Wen seemed to be speaking from experience; Jun Mo Xie however, had only read about them in books!

The young master Jun's soldiers were also participating in this discussion, and seemed fairly knowledgeable. They were listening to the discussing very carefully and were participating in it very actively, making the discussion very lively, but still maintained a serious attitude. However, whenever the young master Jun opened his mouth, he'd end up saying something out of context, and would leave the other people dumbstruck and uncomfortable.

Fang Bo Wen took the lead on the subject of political strategy and techniques of governance, and stated that the 'strength of a nation is its financial power', meaning that the nation would need a strong financial backbone; everyone agreed.

But at the moment he said the phrase, Jun Mo Xie suddenly

picked up interest in the conversation.

"That's right, the elder is right; very good ah, ha ha ..... but speaking of money... reminds me of gambling.. wow ha ha... your brother here went into the thousand gold hall with fatty Tang in disguise, and played the most amazing bet that day! I even earned the name 'God of gamblers', but I've not been able to meet any worthy rivals after that amazing and famous battle! It's gotten so lonely now... I mean it's so so lonely at the top!"

Jun Mo Xie smugly stood up and looked disdainfully at the rest of his company. He put one foot on his chair and started making gestures with his hands: "..... whether it a beast fighting a beast, or snake fighting, or dog fighting, or cock-fighting..... oh you don't know... in cock-fighting, when the cocks, gee, their hair....."

As Jun Mo Xie carried on bragging unrestrained, his saliva scattered in all directions; but he was speaking like a true expert! Jun Xie had the memories of the greatest debauchee, so when it came to these things, no one could match his expertise!

Even though the young master Cheng was a known debauchee himself, he was nothing more than a mere infant in front of Jun Mo Xie's experience. Even though the man despised Jun Mo Xie, he couldn't help but reluctantly submit to the man's supremacy in these affairs!

Everyone raised their eyebrows and enjoyed the show for a while, but it still seemed as if someone had struck them with a bolt of lightning.

Everyone was thinking the same thing: [you and Tang Yuan in disguise? No matter how well disguised that Fatty Tang is, anyone can recognize him in just one glance. You can search the entire Xuan Xuan continent and you'll never find anyone with a bigger belly than that man's....]

[So you and fatty Tang went in there and won a lot of money? Of course, you're the god of gamblers.... But where did that even come

from? Oh god, let's not stray from the topic again!]

The second prince was already repenting to the point of killing himself. If he had known that this would be result of calling Jun Mo Xie for a meet, then he wouldn't have spent so much effort in the preparations.

Only Fang Bo Wen was paying attention to Jun Mo Xie, in fact he was still observing Jun Mo Xie's every word and every action, even though he found the young master Jun completely unbearable! Suddenly, he discovered one thing, one very interesting thing, and the old man's body trembled as his eyes solemnly looked up, and a faint hint of a sparkling light lit his eyes up.

# Chapter 131: Fear my immortal behavior

---

The old scholar realized that Jun Mo Xie was timing his interruptions well, and was only interjecting the flow of the discussion when the gathering was trying to steer the topic towards the strength of the Jun Family. Instead of answering delicate questions about the strength of the Jun Family, Jun Mo Xie would suddenly start talking nonsense, and would end up nauseating the other men on the table, and as a result, no one would carry the subject any further. However, he couldn't tell if this was intentional or unintentional.....

[This debauchee may not be as simple as we think ah!] Fang Bo Wen shook his head as he thought to himself; [but either way, it seems that the second prince is bound to return empty handed today. However, is this approach Jun Mo Xie's own decision, or was it taken by his family? Answering this question is going to be a tough job ah.]

"Hey, Second Prince today...is there any other plan in addition to drinking? This wine party has been fun, but it would be pointless if we didn't have more fun afterwards!" Jun Mo Xie put on a wretched smile on his face, as he stood up with a 'slam' sound.

His actions were becoming more distasteful with every passing minute, and he had even started refereeing to the second prince as 'second prince' instead of 'his Highness' as before!

There might have been other plans for later; but the second prince had already cancelled all other plans after seeing Jun Mo Xie's behavior. Naturally, the second prince didn't wish to associate himself with such indecent people publicly. In a span as short as the course of a meal, Jun Mo Xie had left him feeling angry enough to vomit blood; and not to mention hopelessly and helplessly embarrassed...

Jun Mo Xie was secretly relieved to see that everyone had already

given up on promoting their political and diplomatic agendas. He stood up grinning, and twisted his waist as he walked over towards the pearl-curtained partition where lady Yue'er was playing her lute; he had come to the Ni Chang pavilion for her, so how could he let her slip by....?

[You little woman, alone, would dare to think of destroying the Jun Family!?!]

The last time when Jun Mo Xie had seen Lady Yue'er, she had unknowingly revealed her deep-seated hatred for the Jun Family. Jun Mo Xie was already somewhat afraid of this woman since she was very well connected in the society and quite quick-witted, and on top of that, a very accomplished martial artist. Moreover, even though the second prince was trying to keep his distance from her, she could end up in his arms one day.

Would the second prince be able to keep his innocence when faced with the charms of a brothel's prostitute? This statement seemed a bit ridiculous and Jun Mo Xie could sense that this woman might turn into a major threat later.

Jun Mo Xie had no doubts that this woman might have some plans, and was even suspecting that she may have other people supporting her secretly from the dark! This suspicion had been growing stronger and stronger in the young master Jun's heart, and he had finally decided to do something about it.

This was his main objective behind visiting the Ni Chang pavilion today. [But who is this unknown enemy, which is patiently waiting in the dark? The Jun Family has been slowly growing in strength, and there will obviously be some factions that might try to hinder our growth; but if I eliminate them, then the Jun Family will grow unrestrained.]

[If I let her get away this time, then with the growth of the Jun Family's strength, she might go into hibernation, and even her backers might become passive. But if I kill her, and that too



publicly, then the enemy will conceal themselves with even more vigor, which could be a very unfavorable situation as well!]

"Lady Yue'er, you're looking really pretty, hey....." Jun Mo Xie made no attempts to conceal his perverted desire, as his eyes shamelessly eyed her body before coming to a stop at her breasts.

Lady Yue'er suddenly felt as if an invisible pair of hands was touching her body inappropriately, but she couldn't say it out loud. She looked at him coldly and said: "Young master Jun, please behave courteously."

"There's no need to. Being the son of a big family has its benefits; Tang Yuan is an example of that." Jun Mo Xie broke into laughter. He broke through the partition paying no attention to her rejection in his interests.

"Young master Jun, although Yue'er works in a brothel.... I'm not a prostitute, but an entertainer; please try to understand." Lady Yue'er stated in a cold voice.

"I will give you really good money, why wouldn't you sell yourself? The girl should remember that the young master Jun has been kind to her in the past as well!" Jun Mo Xie's face shamelessly reminded her of their past interactions.

At this point, everyone could tell that this debauchee had been with Lady Yue'er before; in fact, most men were assuming that he would have forced himself on her in the past as well. They were finally beginning to realize why Jun Mo Xie had an unparalleled reputation as a debauchee!

But now the biggest issue at hand was: [What to do with Lady Yue'er? This banquet is being hosted by his royal highness, the second prince! If Jun Mo Xie did something untoward, then it would bring bad name to the second prince!]

If this issue came into the public knowledge, then there might be a large outrage!

Everyone was thinking the same thing, and had already halted feasting on their wines. This was a rare and unusual situation, since the bully was none other than a son of the great Jun Family; [what is he going to do with Lady Yue'er now?]

[If Lady Yue'er hastily rejected this debauchee, then this guy might immediately retaliate! Could a lowly establishment like the Ni Chang pavilion bear retaliation from the great Jun Family? But if she doesn't refuse his advances, then would she actually allow him to take unfair advantage of herself? The young master Jun is surely being horny beyond control!]

Everyone looked at each other in dismay, unable to decide on a course of action.

The second prince intervened and said: "Young master Jun, Lady Yue'er is a musician, and of noble character. This is the first time that you're meeting her; please don't embarrass the Lady." His address to Jun Mo Xie had changed from 'Little Brother' to 'Young Master Jun'.

"Embarrass? How am I doing that? This is a place of business, what's so noble about that? Ha Ha Ha, if I don't take such interests in her, then what will happen to her livelihood? This is what she does for a living since she's already sold herself into slavery. Don't pay any attention to her, she's just teasing me since she likes me; why else would she play hard to get?"

Jun Mo Xie was obviously carrying a drunken look on his face, and didn't seem to be bothered by anyone's objections. He continued to watch Lady Yue'er's body with perverted thoughts on his mind.

Lady Yue'er fiercely stared back at Jun Mo Xie, but her stomach was beginning to feel a drum beat: "Young master Jun, I'm might be an employee here, but I don't offer my body in service."

"Don't offer your body in service? Ha Ha Ha..... in a brothel, ah! Do you know what this place is? A brothel! Okay? You're saying

that you work in a brothel but you don't offer your body in service? This is really funny... ha ha ha.....this is a brothel, there are no noble characters here, and you're asking the son of the Jun Family to behave... in such a place?" Jun Mo Xie seemed very proud of his perverted behavior.

Lady Yue'er bit her lips in anger, and it seemed as if she was almost contemplating killing this hateful hedonistic son of the Jun Family. [Even if you were the last man on this planet, I still wouldn't fancy you!] She looked across the pearl curtain and saw the ash-faced prince, and suddenly came up with an idea.

"Er Ye, please save me." Lady Yue'er panicked and ran out through the curtain, with the intention of getting to prince's side. Even though her footsteps were staggering, her speed was still quite fast; so much so, that even a level nine expert wouldn't have been able to intercept her.

But against her expectation, Jun Mo Xie suddenly darted sideways with his arms wide open, and suddenly gripped her delicate and feminine body in his embrace. He continued to laugh as his catlike palms brushed onto her breasts and stated to forcefully fondle them. He smiled as said: "Such a beauty.... Don't resist..... don't struggle, gee, you're so pretty, there's no need to be shy here...."

Lady Yue'er had heard the rumors that Jun Mo Xie wasn't capable of cultivating his Xuan Qi, which is why she had never expected that he would actually be able to exhibit such agility to intercept her. Even though Jun Mo Xie was one step ahead of her, she still hadn't expected him to catch her since she had ducked sideways, but had ended up landing in his embrace with a 'thud'.

[Is this a coincidence? But isn't this too much of a coincidence?]

Jun Mo Xie's hands continued to swim all over the angered and embarrassed Lady Yue'er's body, who was almost on the verge of fainting with fury.

Everyone's face was clearly depicting the disgust of their hearts. [How could someone be this indecent to a woman in the presence of the second prince? What kind of behavior is this? Even if we are in a brothel, the young master Jun is still crossing his limits!]

"Jun Mo Xie! Let Lady Yue'er go!" Cheng De Cao shouted as he rushed up towards them.

Lady Yue'er took advantage of the opening and broke free of Jun Mo Xie's embrace. Her eyes were full of tears of anger and indignation, and she waved her hand and slapped Jun Mo Xie straight across the face!

Even though Lady Yue'er didn't employ the complete extent of her Xuan Qi in the slap, it was still a lot to take for Jun Mo Xie's body.

"Pop!" everyone froze in their footsteps.

Lady Yue'er's hand had not only hit its target, but had hit Jun Mo Xie straight across the face; and as a result, left the mark of her five fingers on his face, which was already beginning to swell from the strike. Everyone stood halted in their steads, unable to fathom any measures to respond to this change of events.

"Bi\*\*h! You're not a noble woman, just a prostitute; don't you have any ethics?! How dare you slap and deface me?!"

Jun Mo Xie hopped towards her as he cursed, and raised his foot to kick her, but found his way obstructed by a man; Cheng De Cao said: "Young master Jun, why are you losing your temper over this mere brothel woman?" Cheng De Cao was somehow able to prevent his face from being distorted by the dislike he felt for Jun Mo Xie. Even though his mind was advising against it, he still wished to strangle Jun Mo Xie to death at this point.

"Get out of my way! I will kill this little bi\*\*h today! How dare she slap me?!" Jun Mo Xie shouted angrily.

"Jun Mo Xie, you have to understand the circumstances! This

banquet was organized by his royal highness, the second prince; we are all his guests... would you cause his royal highness shame in the public eye?" Cheng De Cao stared at him.

"Strange ah, how would teaching this prostitute a lesson equivalent to defacing the second prince in the public eye huh? Cheng De Cao, what are you trying to say? Are you trying to say that this little bi\*\*h slapped me on the second prince's orders?!" Jun Mo Xie flipped his eyes in accusation.

# Chapter 132: Killing a chicken to scare the monkeys

---

"That was an outrageous presumption! Lady Yue'er was just....." Cheng De Cao halted in the middle of his sentence as a chill ran down his spine.

"Was just? What?" Jun Mo Xie broke into an unbridled laughter. He twitched his lips and said: "Since she's brothel woman, what kind of an entertainment could she provide if we can't even touch her body huh? I'm being considerate towards her profession by showing interests in her, and she offends me in this manner?!"

"You're destroying the reputation of your Family!" Cheng De Cao's eyes were reeking of contempt for the young master Jun: "Jun Mo Xie, you're really forcing me to hate and despise you." Cheng De Cao was suddenly feeling very proud of his own self at this moment: [People have often said that I'm an insult to my family's name, but I haven't done anything even remotely as shameful as Jun Mo Xie....]

"Cheng De Cao.... F\*\*k you! What did you just say? You despise me? You and I are cut from the same cloth, and remember that I can eliminate your entire family if you insult me again!" Jun Mo Xie furiously titled his neck and slanted his eyes: "Cheng De Cao, go back to your mother and let her nurse you up a bit!"

Cheng De Cao's entire body started to tremble with rage, and his crimson eyes looked up at Jun Mo Xie again, while his hand landed on the hilt of his sword with a 'pop'. 'Clang' he unsheathed about three inches of his sword, and exposed its metal's cold radiance!

"Jun Mo Xie!" the sullied second prince stood up: "You're drunk; perhaps you should go back home early today."

"I've barely had a few mouthfuls of wine, how could I be drunk?" Jun Mo Xie snorted, as he titled his neck towards the second

prince, unwilling to agree: "And now this sissy has just unsheathed his sword in threat!"

"I'm saying you're drunk; it means you're drunk!" the second prince finally snapped, unable to tolerate it anymore.

Fang Bo Wen hastily rushed towards the prince, and gently pressed hand against the Prince's shoulder.

Jun Mo Xie raised his eyes to meet the Second Prince's gaze. The two men continued to gaze into each other's eyes for a while, before Jun Mo Xie crooked his mouth and smiled again: "Since the second prince says that Jun Mo Xie is drunk; then I'm drunk he he he ..... even if I haven't had enough wine, I'm still drunk, ha ha ha .... This is funny, really funny!"

He continued to laugh as he reached out to grab a cup of wine, and smashed into the floor beside Lady Yue'er. The cup broke, and crisp sound made everyone's face twitch in surprise.

Jun Mo Xie fiercely pointed a finger at Lady Yue'er and said: "You little slut, today we are in presence of the Second Prince, and since the Second Prince is speaking in your favor, I'm letting you go for now. But I'll come back for you later someday!" Jun Mo Xie subconsciously rubbed his crotch to indicate his nefarious desires!

Jun Mo Xie turned around and faced Cheng De Cao. He slowly extended his hand and reached out towards Cheng De Cao's face. 'Clap' 'clap', he patted Cheng De Cao's face twice, producing a crisp sound, and said: "So you want to kill me huh? Really? Cheng De Cao, drawing even half a sword is indicative of war; you will behave yourself in the future, understand?!"

Then, he turned around as he continued to laugh, waved his hand, almost like he was trying to wave away the atmospheric dust, twisted his hips, and quickly left.

He had made a mess out of the Second Prince's feast; he insulted the prince's company to the point where the prince had to

personally threaten retaliation. Firstly, he had managed to abuse Cheng De Cao, and had in general been very vulgar and disrespectful.... By being rampantly arrogant and aggressive, Jun Mo Xie had lived up to the reputation of being the city's most notorious debauchee!

Jun Mo Xie reached downstairs and sat inside his Palanquin; surprisingly, there were two more men inside his palanquin, who were both dressed in black colored clothes. Jun Mo Xie sighed and said: "After I leave, you will pay close attention to the movements inside the Ni Chang Pavilion. You will also keep an eye on the people the Second Prince meets after he leaves. While the other person will continue to watch the Ni Chang pavilion, and will keep track of the people who enter and exit the place; and do not slack one bit!" both men nodded.

The palanquin started to sway as the young master Jun left for his residence. Although today's events hadn't gained any concrete results, it had still been a very fruitful trip. On one hand, Jun Mo Xie had lived up to his public reputation, but secondly and more importantly, he had publicly insulted and embarrassed the woman the Second Prince had been showing interest in. So this trip had definitely been worthwhile!

Jun Mo Xie certainly knew that even though Lady Yue'er was working in a brothel, she wasn't exactly a prostitute; in fact, he could tell that she didn't think very highly of the profession, and was wondering if she was an expert in disguise?

Jun Mo Xie was convinced that Lady Yue'er would retaliate - in fact, Jun Mo Xie was hoping for it!

Now the situation was turning favorable for Jun Mo Xie. Since Jun Mo Xie had overheard Lady Yue'er and Lord Liu's conversation the other night, he already knew the identity of his enemies. But they weren't aware that Jun Mo Xie was also targeting them! Therefore, Lady Yue'er would certainly try to avenge this insult without being aware of Jun Mo Xie's ulterior motives!



But it didn't just stop here; Jun Mo Xie had accomplished another, third feat, today. He had built a wall between the Second Prince and Lady Yue'er by insulting her in front of him.

The Second Prince hadn't reacted firmly, and hadn't been able to impose his dominance properly, which would have left Lady Yue'er very disappointed - If a man can't even protect the woman he is trying to pursue, then would he still be able to call himself a man? Especially in this case, when the man was powerful enough to protect her.... But since he didn't take the initiative, their relationship would inevitably suffer.

If Jun Mo Xie had been in the Prince's shoes, then he would have certainly charged screaming: [This is my woman! Keep your hands off her!] But the second prince hadn't, at least not boldly. In fact, even Jun Mo Xie was looking down upon the prince. [Is my wealth and position of that much importance?]

In fact even Jun Mo Xie hadn't expected to get away with his actions so easily, especially since he knew that the Second Prince had shown interest in Lady Yue'er!

As for his action, Jun Mo Xie felt no guilt about the manner in which he had treated Lady Yue'er: [She might be a woman, but she's still an enemy, and there's nothing that I wouldn't do to intercept an enemy. Since she planned and plotted against the Jun Family and me, why should I show any restraint against her? The young master Jun's conscience was clear in that regard!]

Lady Yue'er's entire body trembled with rage as her tear stained eyes looked at Jun Mo Xie's swaying palanquin. She turned around and raised her gaze to look wildly at the prince in complaint, but instead of voicing her complaint, she turned around and left.

The second prince stood dazed in his spot, but his face was expressing the disgust his heart felt!

Who would have thought that the Second Prince's attempt to entertain Jun Mo Xie would yield such a result? Who could have

guessed that the young master Jun would act so arrogantly, and would even ignore the Second Prince's objections!

Jun Mo Xie had paid no heed to the prince's objections and had even left without apologizing for his actions, which was tantamount to slapping the Prince's dignity in the face!

The Second Prince had never been so embarrassed in his entire life! It could be said that he hated Jun Mo Xie right down to his core! He stood there motionless for a long time, away from the other men in his company; the Prince was barely able to stop himself from breaking into tears!

The Prince stood dazed for a long, long time. He eventually raised his gaze, sighed and said: "Let's go."

Cheng De Cao decided to fawn and make his gains: "Your Highness? This Jun Mo Xie was so rude to your Highness today; allow me to teach him a lesson; I could even have his life....."

"Are you really that stupid?" The Prince looked at the man in front of his eyes, and said: "He might have been arrogant, and may even have insulted me today, but I cannot retaliate.... and that is a fact! Do you think that Jun Mo Xie would have had the courage to contradict me if he didn't know this? And you want me to break my relationship with him? Teach him a lesson? Assassinate him? Is your head really full of so much rubbish? First, you do not have the power to do anything to Jun Mo Xie, and secondly, if anything untoward happened to Jun Mo Xie right now, then we'll be the first ones coming under suspicion! Jun Zhan Tian's anger has caused blood baths in the city before as well; will you only be happy after he runs a bloody riot inside my palace? Well? Don't you think I've had enough for one day?"

The flatterer had been kicked in the face. Cheng De Cao's face twitched in anger a few times, but he remained silent. Although he continued to curse inside his heart: [What kind of a prince are you? First you allow the grandson of your military general to humiliate

you, and then you take it out on me?]

"That's for certain when it comes to Jun Zhan Tian...." Fang Bo Wen stroked his beard, and slowly stated: "Jun Mo Xie's actions were clearly intentional; meaning, that he had already come prepared to cause a scene today."

"Well? What makes you say that?" the Second Prince thoughtfully asked.

"The Jun Family has always refused to participate in the politics of the Empire, and has only concentrated their attention on military matters. All three of His Majesty's sons were trying to involve the Jun Family in the Empire's politics, so it's only natural that they would want to remove themselves from being involved. Jun Zhan Tian's army has already proven that they can cause a blood bath in ministerial mansions before; the Jun Family has already shown their power before, and whichever son of the Majesty manages to get a grasp on this force, will have enough power to overrule the other two! In other words, the prince who gains their support will rule the Empire. Now we have seen their attitude.... and the other two will also come to know about this soon."

"So now, I'm afraid that High Royal Highness, and his brothers, will have no other option but to leave the Jun Family and Jun Zhan Tian out of the political agendas since the man doesn't wish to get involved. Even if the Jun Family is willing to expose their true strength, they still wouldn't be willing to join into the muddy waters of political conspiracies. In this case, the best way to retain their support is to leave them out of the politics; and that's the only way."

The Second Prince was gradually beginning to understand: "So I should break my political relations with them?"

"NO! His Royal Highness must break his political connections with his brothers! Only after demonstrating your solidarity against

the politics of this Empire, will you ever be able to securely gain the support of the Jun Family; otherwise Jun Zhan Tian will never support you."

"In other words, it didn't matter which Prince's invitation Jun Mo Xie accepted today, he was going to act in the same way, and would have choreographed a falling out. His Highness, the Second Prince was just unlucky since Jun Mo Xie decided to pick you for making his statement....."

"Killing a chicken to scare the monkeys?" the Second Prince was finally beginning to understand, but couldn't help gnash his teeth in rage: "Jun Mo Xie, that son of a bi\*\*h, he actually made me, the Second Prince, his chicken?"

## Chapter 133: The legendary jinx

---

"After the scene that the young master Jun has caused here, the other princes won't dare to bother him and the Jun Family will be able to carry on peacefully. It seems that this whole plan was orchestrated by Jun Zhan Tian. But this situation has also given rise to an additional problem; a big problem." Fang Bo Wen frowned his eyebrows.

"Please explain, teacher." The Second Prince's face was already beginning to look gloomier, and it seemed as if he had already made his own guess.

"Your Highness said it yourself." Fang Bo Wen sighed loudly: "Soon, everyone will know that Your Highness and Jun Mo Xie have had a falling out in public, and that Your Highness was publicly humiliated by the young master Jun's arrogance. If any harm comes to the young master Jun at this time..... then, Your Highness will undoubtedly be the first one to be suspected for it. I firmly believe that Your Highness's enemies won't miss this chance to frame you."

"What is this nonsense?" the Second Prince was suddenly furious: "Even after all the humiliation that I have faced today, I will still have to protect him?"

"It all depends on Your Highness's choice; if Your Highness isn't afraid of Jun Zhan Tian's wrath, then you can simply ignore this possibility." Fang Bo Wen stated slowly.

"....." The Second Prince remained silent.

[Not afraid? That's an understatement.... So many men lost their lives the other day.... The last time Jun Zhan Tian lost his temper, he cleared out almost a third of the imperial court. If he lost his temper on me..... I can't give him a reason to ransack my palace....].

"Damn that son of a bi\*\*h!" the Second Prince felt wronged to the point of death. This man was turning into a legendary jinx for him! He had been nothing more than pure bad-luck for the prince; first he had insulted the second prince, and then Jun Mo Xie had also insulted Lady Yue'er, and had also made a public enemy out of her.....

A delicate silhouette was watching the Second Prince from the top of the Ni Chang pavilion as the Second Prince continued to walk alongside the road. "If that's the case, then you should have thought twice before arranging this meeting. Jun Mo Xie humiliated me publicly today, and you didn't even try to stop him. If I'm so bad for your reputation, then why did you try to pursue me to start with? I'm Yue'er, how could you let this happen to me?"

A sly silver light flashed in her eyes as Lady Yue'er bit her lips: "If you won't do anything since you are afraid of Jun Zhan Tian's military might, then I'll take this matter into my own hands. I will not allow Jun Mo Xie to get away with this; he will die without a proper burial!"

As the night gradually became darker, Lady Yue'er loosened her hand and released a pigeon. The pigeon fluttered its wings a few times, and then flew up into the air.

Around a distant dark corner, a dark clothed figure started to run at the speed of lightening and quickly landed on a nearby rooftop. The man released a dark colored net and spread it open in mid-air, and the dark colored net gradually fused into the dark sky. The pigeon which had just taken off from the Ni Chang pavilion landed inside the net.....

The black clothed man collected the body of the pigeon and quickly retreated into the shadows....

The Second Prince's platoon reached his residence late night.

Another black pigeon was released into the night sky, which quickly disappeared as well. Cheng De Cao stood by the window

with a grin on his face, and murmured: "Jun Mo Xie, I don't care about the power of your family. Since you've insulted me today, I will not allow you to exist; everyone will think that you were killed by one of the Princes... who will suspect me? What's more, I don't even have the strength to harm you, right? Ha ha ha ....."

This self-proclaimed genius was a complete fool to take out a deal against the hitman Jun Mo Xie!

Jun Mo Xie hadn't missed out on any details so far, and had already placed his sleuths around the Second Prince's residence as well.

Everything was working according to Jun Mo Xie's plan so far!

Jun Mo Xie was a looking a little depressed sitting inside his rickety palanquin. He was so accustomed to travelling on his own feet, that sitting inside his palanquin was nothing short of torture for him.

[These kinds of things aren't good for hitmen. So much bouncing and swaying can make anyone's life miserable; why would some people consider travelling in these palanquins a status symbol? If I had any kind of a heart based condition, then so much swaying would have already sent me straight to the gates of hell.]

Even though Jun Mo Xie was trying his best to fight the urge to get out of the palanquin until he reached the Jun residence, the extraordinarily slow speed and the constant swaying of his ride was more than he could tolerate. Unable to bear it anymore, the young master Jun was almost about to open his mouth and order his bearers to halt, when he suddenly heard a 'whoosh' sound, and some kind of a small white object jumped into his palanquin, cried excitedly 'hooo', and rubbed its body against Jun Mo Xie's arms. Jun Mo Xie reacted quickly, and grabbed the unknown animal by its neck, and picked it up. As he looked at the small animal, he realized that he was holding Dugu Xiao Yi's high-end Xuan Beast; the iron winged panther cub.

Jun Mo Xie carefully looked at the small limbs of the tiny creature in a weird way.... [How could something so small be so fast? And how fast will he become after he grows up into an adult? I underestimated this animal... he is truly worthy of being called a high-end Xuan Beast!]

The panther cub was unable to move since it was suspended mid-air from its neck furs, and hence it opened its mouth to whine, while its limbs drooped helplessly. His beautiful pair of eyes were looking at Jun Mo Xie with a confused look in them, unable to understand why a man he liked so much would treat him in such a crude manner.

Jun Mo Xie immediately assessed that Dugu Xiao Yi must be somewhere in the vicinity; how else would this young Xuan Beast be able to smell his scent?

He extended his finger and poked the tiny creature's miniature nose, and ferociously whispered: "Please, you mustn't follow me; if you continue to follow me, then your owner will create a lot of trouble for me since her entire family will come after me. Do you know how much trouble I will be in then? You please stop this, please." His initial intention was to frighten the animal away, but he had no idea why he had ended up begging piteously instead.

Even though the iron winger panther was a high-end Xuan Beast, he was still accustomed to being around humans. But he still wasn't able to interpret the meaning of Jun Mo Xie's words, and strained its neck as he looked at Jun Mo Xie with an even more puzzled look in his eyes now. Jun Mo Xie released the tiny cub, who suddenly hummed twice, and looked at Jun Mo Xie with a merry look in his eyes.

Unexpectedly, the small cub jumped up and landed straight into Jun Mo Xie's arms; he took two deep breaths, and arched its tiny neck a few times until it found a comfortable spot to rest its head on Jun Mo Xie's chest. Then, he opened its rosy-pink mouth, yawned and its beautiful eyes slowly started to narrow as he slowly



fell asleep...

[Well, he can't be blamed for this... I'm a big man with a big chest, and big chests are usually quite comfortable to sleep on! But I'm in so much trouble now!]

"Little White, where are you little white? Little white....." he heard a crisp sound, and he could tell that the source was anxious enough to break into tears at any point. Dugu Xiao Yi had been treating this young cub as her baby, and since the young Xuan Beast had suddenly disappeared now, her mind was obviously in a state of complete chaos.

Jun Mo Xie sighed at his fate; even if this seemed like a tale of fate from some folklore, it was more like..... Ill-fated attraction in his eyes!

A cold voice echoed in front of the palanquin: "I request the people inside to kindly step out." This cold and dull voice belonged to Ye Gu Han.

He was a Sky Xuan expert, so he had obviously been able to spot the cub as it jumped into Jun Mo Xie's palanquin after jumping out of Dugu Xiao Yi's arms. Although the beast was very small in size, the Sky Xuan expert was sure that it was inside the palanquin.

After a while, Jun Mo Xie's voice lazily sounded from within the palanquin: "Really..... There are so many people inside the Tian Xiang City, but this young master is just destined to constantly bump into you?"

Both the people suddenly spoke up in unison after they heard his voice: "Jun Mo Xie!"

Although they spoke up at the same time, but they did so to express completely different emotions.

While Ye Gu Han's voice was filled with contempt and anger, Dugu Xiao Yi's sound was filled with a sense of joy.

Formerly, Dugu Xiao Yi had excitedly followed Princess Ling

Meng to the imperial palace, and had stayed there for several days without going back to the Dugu Family's residence. But if the eldest daughter of the house remains away from the family for such a long time without any notice, then the family is bound to get worried, and so Dugu Xiao Yi bid Princess Ling Meng farewell, and departed for her Family's house. Even though the Princess wished to retain her at the palace with pure intention in her heart, she was intelligent enough to understand that it might be wrong to.

The Princess was quite angered to know that the young master Jun was also in the vicinity at the time when Dugu Xiao Yi was supposed to leave for her residence. Unable to stop the eldest daughter of the Dugu Family from leaving, she had asked Ye Gu Han to escort her back to her residence as a precaution against anyone with evil intentions.

Who would've known that Dugu Xiao Yi's little Xuan Beast would suddenly catch the familiar smell of a man he was fond of, and would dart out of her arms, and would land inside a palanquin without leaving a single trace behind it, leaving his owner anxious and worried to the point of dying.

Hearing Jun Mo Xie's voice from inside the palanquin clearly explained the situation to her: [No wonder Little White reacted like this... I remember, he really liked Jun Mo Xie the last he met the man... so it's not very surprising that he chase after the young master Jun.]

Jun Mo Xie helplessly jumped out of his palanquin with the Xuan Beast cub in his arms. Dugu Xiao Yi saw his face, and was left speechless instead of cheerfully greeting him.

Watching her Little White peacefully resting in his arms, and unwilling to even open its eyes to see its master's face, made her feel a bit envious since it clearly indicated that the young creature was feeling very peaceful and comfortable, almost as if he was in the most comfortable place on the planet. But watching Jun Mo

Xie's tired face aroused a sense of sadness in her heart.....

These feelings were quite strange and new for the eldest daughter of the Dugu Family, and she remained silent for a long time, unable to react to the situation; which was a very rare thing given her character.

## Chapter 134: A young maiden's heart

---

"Oh, he he, we're in the same place again Miss Dugu; I guess we were destined to meet each other again." Jun Mo Xie smiled as he said the words, while his face was carrying a 'pleasantly surprised' look.

The young master Jun hadn't never expected that even though he had greeted Dugu Xiao Yi in the same manner as always, these words were now being interpreted by her in a very different context.

[He said destined? And I'm very fortunate that I met you ah! Hey, this really could be destiny! Would we be able to see each other daily? Would our families oppose this?]

Jun Mo Xie's words had filled her heart with joy, and her initial resentment had already gone up in smoke: [Thanks to Little White's mischief, otherwise I wouldn't have been able to see you today.....]

Dugu Xiao Yi wasn't involved in political conspiracies that clogged the dark side of the world; even though she was the same age as Jun Mo Xie, she behaved like a normal sixteen year old girl.

Given her age and background, she couldn't understand the complexly subtle emotions like love etc. She had often heard of Jun Mo Xie's unbearable arrogance in the past, and had always felt disgusted by it. She had always felt that the man needed to be disciplined; very strictly.

But after her previous few encounters with the young master Jun, she had realized that the so-called hedonistic and flippant son of rich parents was actually a very organized, and of very appropriate character, due to which she had started seeing Jun Mo Xie in a very general light.

But these encounters aroused a lot of curiosity in Dugu Xiao Yi's

heart; [Jun Mo Xie is a tiger in a pig's shell, and he pretends to be such in order to deal with the outside world.] Until this time, she had always felt disgusted in his presence, and had always looked down upon him, but she had finally started to realize something at this point: [I've been misunderstanding Jun Mo Xie all this time.]

Even though Dugu Xiao Yi's attitude towards Jun Mo Xie was beginning to change, she still couldn't help thinking: [I have misunderstood Jun Mo Xie for several years, and I've bullied him for so many years without giving him any reason to explain his actions. He suffered it all these years without making any complains, which was justifiable for a man with low intelligence.... But it's obvious that he's very clever. Could I be misunderstanding him again?]

Such thoughts had ignited mixed feelings in her heart since she also knew that Jun Mo Xie had tricked her into defrauding the metallic ore from her hands, which had left her feeling very displeased. [But then again, maybe he did that because that metallic ore was very important for him.... Is his resourcefulness his true face? Why is it so difficult to see the real face of people? Why do we have to deliberately hide ourselves from the world outside?!]

Even with these thoughts in the back of her mind, she still saw him as a bully for cheating the metallic ore away from her, but realized that she had missed it out at the time since she was too proud and arrogant, and couldn't see that he was a tiger disguised as a pig, which made her a bit upset; [then thinking again, I've known him so many years, and I've bullied him so much in past, but he had never seemingly bothered about it.....] As these thoughts sprouted in her head, she suddenly felt as if something was amiss. She cried after she returned home that day.

She wept since she was beginning to recall their encounters over these past years.... She recalled all the suffering that the Jun Family had been through, and began imagining that it must have

been very hard on Jun Mo Xie, which instilled an indistinct sense of pain in her heart. On top of that, she had made her father bully Jun Mo Xie several times in the past since she had felt that he had wronged her, owing to which she had wished to get even with him.

After she started to understand the unsaid aspects of Jun Mo Xie's life, she felt as if someone had struck her heart with a hammer - [so many years of misunderstanding him, will I ever be able to compensate for it?] As these thoughts came into her head, she had started to blame herself. Once a young heart develops such feelings, they often find it difficult to conceal their emotions; naturally she had been unable to eat her meals properly for days. After pondering over these issues for several days, the young master Jun's reputation started to change very drastically in her psyche, and in due course of time, she started seeing in a very highlight.

For this reason, she ventured into her grandfather's study one day, with the intention of inquiring more about Jun Mo Xie, and after learning more about the Jun Family's situation, she finally found an explanation for his behavior: [the previously declining Jun Family has now once again become very dangerous and powerful. He has managed to turn his family's fortunes around at the cost of creating a very dirty public reputation for himself, and after suffering so much humiliation. His life has been so difficult.... Even though he's just my age, he has suffered so much for so many years..... No wonder there is such a great contrast between him and the others; this man is instilled with a sense of responsibility and is willing to make sacrifices for his family.....]

[Jun Mo Xie had actually tried to save the princess which had almost injured him to the point of death - such a chivalrous man!]

So Jun Mo Xie had suddenly gone from a debauchee to a responsible and noble young man in Dugu Xiao Yi's mind..... this had completely twisted her life upside down.

Once a young girl develops a favorable impression about a man,

anything the man does seems justifiable and noble to the young woman. After she found out that the young master Jun had been seriously injured while saving the princess, she started to fear for his well-being and even started to fantasize about helping him in his rehabilitation.....

Then later, when she suddenly heard Jun Moe Xie's voice in the Magnificent Jewel Hall, her heart soared with an unexplainable sense of joy, and she felt as if she had just recovered a long-lost treasure. Then her pet suddenly took a liking to Jun Mo Xie, which made the young maiden even more happy since Little White had never shown any affection to anyone apart from her. She started seeing this as an indication of something special in Jun Mo Xie.

At that time, she was still unable to understand whether Jun Mo Xie was an evil man or a good one, but then as an after effect of the trouble that her father and brothers sprouted at the Jun residence, she started asking herself: [So I really fancy bad men? Do I really like him? What is this feeling?]

[This feeling.... Is really, really wonderful.....]

In the following days, even though she was afraid since her father and brothers started interfering in these matters, her heart still carried a sense of apprehension. Even though she didn't meet him again for a long while, just the thought of him was enough to make her a little shy, and she started thinking that she fancied him. With these thoughts in her mind, her heart leapt and her face would blush since she would long for their next encounter....

The mind of a young maiden can be very elusive, almost like a poetic dream, full of endless fantasies.... Although Dugu Xiao Yi was a high-borne, she wasn't as arrogant and haughty as some of the other powerful women of the kingdom; her heart was that of a delicate young maiden's, and wasn't very different from that of an ordinary farmer's daughter.

All the interventions and pressure that followed in the

succeeding days abruptly forced out these feeling, and made them stronger.

If it hadn't been for the wild speculations of Princess Ling Meng....

If it hadn't been for the naughty interventions of the Dugu Family, then these emotions would have gradually diluted.....

Then, Jun Mo Xie would have only remained a very interesting character in her life... an interesting man and a very reliable person; that's all! Believing that he is just another very interesting man, with passing age and increasing distance, he would've become a transient passerby in her life, who she'd only recall as a faint memory in time to come!

But due to the blend of circumstances, Dugu Xiao Yi suddenly started gripping harder to the thought that Jun Mo Xie was a rare exception, and started becoming so convinced about it, that she slowly built a cocoon around herself....

At the moment when she heard his voice today, her heart suddenly started pounding so hard, that it almost skipped a few beats, and she didn't know how to react since she didn't know how he felt about her. Her face had suddenly started burning and she had even contemplated the idea of running away....

[Do I..... him... really.... Destined to be together?! Oops..... people will think shameful things!] Dugu Xiao Yi's good-looking face was suddenly red.

"Thief Jun, this night has been a real eye-opener for me. Don't even think of doing anything to Miss Dugu!" Ye Gu Han looked at him coldly. [I don't know what means Jun Mo Xie used in order to attract Miss Dugu's high level Xuan beast cub towards himself... but it's undeniable that he only did so to trouble Miss Dugu Xiao Yi.]

[Dugu Xiao Yi's pet's affection for this man is quite obvious: and



now that the cub is so attached to Jun Mo Xie, it will undoubtedly make things very uncomfortable for her, in fact it might even put her in harms' way in the future since her pet might seek him again, which is a very dangerous thing!]

In addition to their masters, high-end Xuan Beasts rarely ever develop any kind of attraction towards strangers. Although Ye Gu Han couldn't explain this mystery, and even felt that it was quite incredible, but he was still convinced that the young master Jun must have used some very shameful methods to attract the young cub. What other explanation could there be for this?

"What? Thief? Don't call me a thief!" Jun Mo Xie was somewhat depressed. [Did I bother anyone? Why would he act so blindly, and be so hostile towards me? This isn't fair, ah, I simply didn't do anything. This animal simply jumped into my palanquin and slept off in my arms. I'm a handsome and suave guy, that's a rare thing.... Makes me stand apart!]

[I'm the real victim here.... This isn't fair!]

"Thief Jun, are you refusing to hand over Little White to Miss Dugu?" Ye Gu Han was feeling very fortunate that he was escorting the Young Miss personally, otherwise it would have been hard for her to escape Jun Mo Xie's trap. And if anything untoward happened to the young Miss Dugu, then it would have sprouted a big dispute in the capital. As far as he was concerned, he absolutely needed to stop this thief's conspiracies!

"Ye Gu Han, right? Why would you be so narrow-minded? Anyway, you are the Princess's guard, why would you even intervene in this matter? Who do you think you are, this matter is between me and the young Miss.... Why are you sticking your foot into it?" Jun Mo Xie returned Little White to Dugu Xiao Yi, as he replied to Ye Gu Han, feeling wronged by the man's accusations.

## Chapter 135: Surprise

---

The hitman's nature somewhat resembled that of a donkey; if you stroke it gently, then you'd feel the softness of its hair, but if you're blindly harsh, then Jun Mo Xie would react even more harshly! This, perhaps was the greatest weakness of his character.

Although Ye Gu Han was the one who was making the accusations at Jun Mo Xie, he completely ignored the man, making his face blue with anger, and helplessly glimpsed at Dugu Xiao Yi: "Miss Dugu, do you also believe that I abducted Little White? I haven't done any such thing; I never abducted him... he jumped into my palanquin on his own. Even the last time I met him, Little White showed a fondness towards me.... And why would I ever try to steal him? For making a pot stew out of him? But he's so small.... He won't even give out much meat either....."

Little White was comfortably lying in his arms, while his throat ceaselessly emitted a comfortable 'purrrr' sound; a voice which an animal only emits when it's at its happiest. He opened his eyes, and satisfactorily looked at Jun Mo Xie's body with warm and comfortable look in his eyes, and then closed them again. Little did the intoxicated cub know that the man he was so taken by, was just talking about using his body for pot stew.....

"What did you just say?" Dugu Xiao Yi opened her eyes wide; she clenched her tiny hands into a fist as she angrily looked at Jun Mo Xie, and it seemed as if she wished to spank him.

"Well, Miss, you never stop teasing me. Your father and seven brothers showed up at the Jun residence the other day, and leveled the buildings to the ground. Some of the rooms don't even have a roof over their heads anymore...."

Jun Mo Xie arched his hand as he described the state of the infrastructure, while leaning against his palanquin, making his body look weirdly boneless. The mournful look on his face

suggested that he felt wronged by the ravaging that the members of the Dugu family had caused to his home.

Dugu Xiao Yi didn't like the look on his face, and started thinking about her seven brothers....

"Oh ..... Ah, I know the facts, and I don't blame you, sorry ah. I'm sorry, once I get back home, I'll ask my father to help you build back your house, and I'll make sure that your family is compensated for the losses incurred."

Dugu Xiao Yi was feeling a special kind of embarrassment at the moment; after all, she was carrying the impression that Jun Mo Xie had been harassed by her family on her account. The poor girl was under the impression that her family had caused a lot of trouble for Jun Mo Xie, and was already beginning to imagine the destruction that her father and her seven 'brutal' brothers must have caused to the Jun residence. As far as she was concerned, even if Jun Mo Xie was exaggerating things a bit, their actions still must have been very difficult on Jun Mo Xie.

But she didn't know that Jun Mo Xie had grounded her seven brothers, who still hadn't been able to get up from their beds. And even though her father fared slightly better, Jun Mo Xie had blatantly blackmailed the man into expending huge sums of money....

"Never mind; these matters are not to concern you since your father was probably misinformed." Jun Mo Xie generously waved his hand, "I'm from the younger generation, so I must practice tolerance and forbearance, even if I'm wronged by my elders. Anyway, our families have been friends for a long time, and have many deep sentiments attached to each other, so there is really no need to point swords and spears at each other over such trivial matters...."

Dugu Xiao Yi nodded in approval as her beautiful eyes lit up with a look of satisfaction: "The fact that you're not taking into

account..... my emotions; sometimes things just happen, there's no need to beat....." She stammered as she uttered these few words slowly, and was unable to finish her sentence since her face had turned completely red; right down to her neck.

The poor young maiden had completely misunderstood his meaning, and had instinctively believed that Jun Mo Xie had been forced to bear the abuse of his father and brothers. Since she was blaming herself for it, the young maiden's heart suddenly turned as sweet as honey, and her thoughts started to stray once more.

Jun Mo Xie stated once again in a gentlemanly manner: "True, that's the way it must be." Dugu Xiao Yi became even shyer, and started unconsciously drawing rings in the ground with her toe, while her neck and head had turned red with a blush. Her eyes were secretly watching Jun Mo Xie's face, filling her heart was a sense of infinite satisfaction.

Ye Gu Han was a hard-skinned man and was unable to watch these people court each other with the affection of young lovers!

"Jun Mo Xie, how can you be so shameless?!" Ye Gu Han pointed his finger at Jun Mo Xie, and it seemed as if he wished to kill the youngster, "The seven sons of the Dugu Family suffered such a great calamity at your hands, and yet you say such things?"

"Ah? How could that be?" Dugu Xiao Yi cried out in shock, unable to believe that Jun Mo Xie could harm her brothers.

"That's not the truth." Jun Mo Xie flatly denied the truth in order to avoid trouble: "Ye Gu Han, you're a dignified Sky Xuan expert, please do not give heed to such fabricated rumors. How could I suddenly hurt seven people? Could I have ever beaten them up? Don't you know about my abilities? And you still think that I could cope up with the seven of them..... please don't try to bend the facts!"

The situation was reaching a critical juncture, and he simply couldn't true admit his actions. If he admitted to hurting her

brothers, then she was likely to flip out at him....

Dugu Xiao Yi looked at Ye Gu Han with a puzzled look on her face.

"Miss Dugu, you must go home and see for yourself." Ye Gu Han was unmoved, and continued to look at Jun Mo Xie coldly: "Miss Dugu, the color of the night deepens, and we must be on our way; I have to return to the princess's side for her protection."

Dugu Xiao Yi couldn't make up her mind; she hesitantly looked at Jun Mo Xie again, and analyzed that the atmosphere wasn't very favorable at the moment. Even though she was bit reluctant to leave, she knew that Ye Gu Han's words made sense, and she would only understand the truth after reaching her residence. On top of that, she was well-aware that Ye Gu Han was a man of his words, and wouldn't lie to her in such a manner. Although, given his skill, she simply couldn't fathom how Jun Mo Xie could hurt the seven of her brothers!

"Little White, come to me, I will take you home." Dugu Xiao Yi clapped her hands as she approached closer to Jun Mo Xie. She tasted a faint smell of his body's aroma in the air, and couldn't help blush even more.

Jun Mo Xie hastily returned Little White to her arms; the little panther cub didn't resist, but looked at Jun Mo Xie helplessly with a pitiful look in his eyes.

A question suddenly emerged inside Jun Mo Xie's mind: [Why is Little White showing so much attachment towards me? This simply doesn't make any sense!]

[Nothing ever happens in this world without a reason, so there must be something about me that other people don't have, and something that I haven't thought of yet....]

[Is it because..... the Hongjun Pagoda and the art of unlocking the heaven's fortune?]

Being the only possible explanation, this idea swept across Jun Mo Xie's conscience like a tsunami!

"Jun... Mo Xie, could we meet tomorrow?" Dugu Xiao Yi lowered her head in search for a reason, and found one lying in her arms: "Little White really likes you, oh, you can see it too... he really, really likes you. I, I, I do not wish to make him unhappy." Even though Dugu Xiao Yi had found an excuse to meet him again, she didn't know how to use it properly, and was wondering if it was a good measure to use Little White as an excuse to arrange a meeting with him.....

"Sure!" Jun Mo Xie responded in acceptance: "I can help you in looking after Little White tomorrow; I'll see you tomorrow for some playtime Little White."

Dugu Xiao Yi's heart rejoiced as she stated: "It's a deal!"

"It's a deal!" Jun Mo Xie maliciously looked at the little cub as he exposed a pleasant smile. [Come back tomorrow so I can carry out some experiments on you!]

The little cub which was now in Dugu Xiao Yi's arms suddenly felt a burst of chill on his body, and his soft and delicate white furs stood upright. Alerted, he looked around in search of an enemy, but couldn't spot any. If he was capable of speaking, he would have surely voiced his skepticism: [Why is this happening? Why did I suddenly feel these creeps? Why does it feel as if someone stripped me? Why are my fur upright for no reason?]

Dugu Xiao Yi retreated three steps and left.

Jun Mo Xie had already accomplished his objective, and so he quickly returned to the Jun residence.

"Third uncle! Third uncle!" Just as Jun Mo Xie returned, he sensed a different smell in the atmosphere, and quickly ran into the courtyard: "What's going on?"

Jun Wu Yi slowly came out.

In the absence of outsiders, he wouldn't be sitting in his wheelchair since he had been in it for over a decade, and was already quite bored of it!

Jun Wu Yi replied with a solemn look in his eyes: "I brought those kids back."

"Kids? Which one.... What children?" Jun Mo Xie stuttered.

"Out of the children whom we previously set free, I've ordered forty five of them to be set up in the ware house for a bit, as a temporary accommodation. As for the ones with deformities, all thirty nine of them have been presently accommodated here. I'm trying to use my Xuan Qi to see if I can unblock their tendons in order to see if there's any hope for them to have a normal life."

Jun Mo Xie was completely surprised.

Jun Wu Yi looked at him profoundly: "Mo Xie, you did something with a strong purpose, but it comes with some heavy responsibilities as well. It is important for us to cultivate the strength of our family, but it would be harsh, even cruel, of us to not act on this matter. You may blame me for this, but as long as I'm the head of the Jun family, we have an obligation to be responsible for the basic necessities of these children, which includes curing their injuries and illnesses."

"Moreover, although charity mustn't be done recklessly, the downtrodden mustn't be neglected out rightly!" Jun Wu Yi's eyes were filled with a sense of pain: "Like these children, no matter what....."

He expressed these words very resolutely and decisively, and it was obvious that there would be no challenging his decision. Since he had personally suffered from a disability for a long time, it was apparent that he was looking at these children with a strong sense of sympathy.

"Even if they can't do anything by themselves, we will support

them. It doesn't matter how much burden they impose on us!"

Jun Mo Xie remained speechless for a long time before he finally replied: "I understand." He inwardly thought to himself: [Perhaps this is the difference between men of honor and ordinary men. However, does such kindness really make sense?]



## Chapter 136: It's difficult to do good

---

Jun Mo Xie was a born killer.... He had always been calm, cold-blooded and had barely ever shown any affection towards anyone. Even in his previous life, he had only cared for his master, and a handful of his mates. As for his present life, he was only concerned with the well-being of his grandfather, and his uncle. In fact, even Guan Qing Han, his sister-in-law didn't receive this kind of concern from the hitman, so there's no point in talking about others. Jun Mo Xie would often show compassion towards people in distress, but when it came to actually caring for them, he'd politely decline.

"Of course, kindness also has its limitations and drawbacks. If I was left standing on one leg someday, then these people will probably be the first ones to abandon me; but if we have the ability, we must bear in mind that a man doesn't need a reason to save another!"

Even though Jun Wu Yi was baring his emotions undisguised, Jun Mo Xie wasn't exactly being influenced by them.

But still, he agreed with his uncle's statement: A man doesn't need a reason to save another!

The ability to do good deeds isn't the natural temperament of a cold-blooded heart; however, doing good deeds is a hard task, and one must make sure that they only help people who are willing to help themselves, otherwise both men are consigned to eternal damnation together!

Jun Mo Xie obviously understood this truth far better than his uncle.

"Anyway, why did you come looking for me in such a hurry?" Jun Wu Yi asked.

"Well, I need some Xuan Beasts, low level and high level,

preferably at least one beast of each level... as high as level eight if possible." Jun Mo Xie smiled slyly.

"High level Xuan beasts? You must be dreaming, so wake up Mo Xie!" Jun Wu Yi looked at his nephew with a funny look in his eyes: "And did you just say level eight Xuan Beast? Arranging lower level Xuan Beasts might be possible.... Level four or under. But once you start talking about level five, level six.... Even if we were lucky enough to find any, they'd certainly be riddled with disabilities, or loss of functions. As for level seven or above.....you're literally dreaming."

"Only low-levels? That's also okay, I can make do with them alone. By the way, even if you can find crippled level five or level six Xuan Beasts, get them. As long as they are alive, please send them to me." Jun Mo Xie looked quite serious: "I require them by tomorrow morning!"

"Understood; I'll arrange them." Jun Wu Yi didn't show the slightest signs of hesitation, so much so that he didn't even ask Jun Mo Xie's purposes. He was too concerned with the expenditure of this venture of his nephew's..... Level five or six Xuan Beasts were immensely expensive... even the crippled ones!

"Thank you very much uncle!" Jun Mo Xie was very serious.

"Well, now that you're back, help me in taking a look at the children that we've managed to bring in. I've been busy in evaluating their situation for a long while now, and I could use a second opinion." Jun Wu Yi's face looked a bit tired.

"Sure Third Uncle, I'll take a look." Jun Mo Xie stepped inside the room.

The thirty-nine children in the room had obviously been washed more than once by now, and had already been provided with beds, and snow-white beddings, but even that wasn't enough to hide their stench. Apparently, some dirt had already infiltrated their skin, and had embedded itself deep into their bones; cleansing

their bodies over such a short period of time was obviously not possible....

Each of these children was thin; as thin as a match. These thirty-nine children had only one thing in common; their limbs were deformed, while their tongues were amputated. In fact, more than twenty of them had been stabbed in their ears, which meant that they were actually deaf and dumb at the same time.

Jun Mo Xie sighed as his blood boiled with rage!

[The heavens cannot tolerate such acts! Once I find you, I will make you pay a hundred times over!]

These children had already eaten a meal, so their facial color was looking a lot better; they looked a lot livelier now. The moment Jun Mo Xie came in, they immediately realized that he was the man who had saved them, and although they were incapable of saying it, they expressed their gratitude with their eyes.

For the first time ever, whether in this life or the one before, Jun Mo Xie exposed a lukewarm smile to appease those poor children, and approached the one closest to him for inspection.

His speed of inspection was obviously a lot faster than that of his uncle.

Jun Mo Xie finished his inspection after a while, stood up with a heavy face, and winked at his uncle to make a gesture, and the two men stepped outside.

"Some of the smaller ones are hopeless." Jun Mo Xie gritted his teeth: "The bones of three of them have rotten to such an extent that their entire lower body, including their waist bones have completely rusted.... Their death is just a matter of time now.... even a miracle drug won't be able to save them. Even though they are still breathing, they are practically struggling on whilst at the door of death. However, with unconditional support, they might be able to carry on for about two more weeks, but these two weeks

will be very painful and nothing more than pure torture!"

Jun Wu Yi's clenched his fists; tightly.

"There are several others whose hands and feet have reached the point of necrosis, and their meridians have been completely degraded. They will probably never recover, and will have to lead an abnormal life." Jun Mo Xie lowered his voice: "Then there are twelve others... if we cut off their limbs and parts below their waist, then they might be able to live on. But such a life..... they will just be alive... not even men or women; just alive."

Jun Wu Yi held his breath as wave of cold air washed over his face.

"As for the rest, their condition is much better; maybe they weren't subjected to those jars for long, or maybe there was some other reason, but their deformities aren't as serious. As long as their bodies are nursed properly, their hands and feet could be broken once, and then grown again with the help of careful medical treatment. In fact, this re-growth could be accelerated with the help of proper medication. Later, we could break off their limbs again, and then we could use Xuan Qi to cleanse and reopen their meridians. After re-growing their limbs the second time, they might be able to recover to a very good extent."

"However, conducting this treatment for even a single person would cost several million taels of silver, and even that won't ensure the success of the treatment. In fact, my biggest concern and our biggest hurdle will be breaking their bones twice. We won't simply be breaking their bones, we'll also have to ensure that their meridians don't get affected, and we'll need to ensure that their meridians continue to flow uninterrupted.... Such treatments are extremely painful, and....."

Jun Mo Xie's eyes deepened: "Ordinary people cannot bear so much pain. And even after such a painful medical procedure, their best and most optimistic chance is to be capable of achieving sixty

percent of a normal human's functionality!"

Jun Wu Yi gasped!

Jun Wu Yi had already experienced the medical expertise of his nephew first-hand, and trusted his judgement completely. So basically, even if he was fortunately enough, and was able to save some of these people, even then they wouldn't be able to lead a normal life, and would still live a life of relative torture and misery!

"If Third Uncle must save them, then I will advise that you be prepared to spend millions of taels of silver in advance by the most conservative estimate; and I'm not even taking into account the cost of the medication post their treatment yet. Even after a successful treatment, the body of the patient will be at its lowest possible functionality, and the physical conditioning of the patient will require expensive drugs, which will be very essential in restoring their physical abilities, and we'll need to provide them with all this throughout their medical treatment. In other words, just the cost of the post medical treatment is expected to cost fifty thousand taels per head, which is considered an astronomical amount in most other families!"

"Uncle, I hope you don't take my words to heart? I know that our Jun Family has a very deep and rich patrimony, but you have to recognize the problem here.... as the head of the house. Once you tread on this path, and continue to destroy the other dens of sin alongside, you will receive many such children.... Do you think we will be able to save them all? If you wish to provide salvation to all such children, then I believe that you will need the support of more than just the Jun Family. In fact, even the entire Tian Xiang Kingdom will not have enough power to bear the burden of such an immense financial expenditure."

"If Third Uncle insists on bearing this responsibility till the end, then there will only be one end result: The Jun Family will eventually be destroyed along with such children."

"I do not oppose the Third Uncle's benevolence to do good deeds, but in this matter, you must stop here! You cannot initiate this instance!"

As Jun Wu Yi listened to Jun Mo Xie's calm and cold-blooded analysis, his face started becoming more and more serious, and a fresh wave of depression started to wash over his soul.

It's difficult to do good!

Jun Mo Xie sighed deeply. If a family as influential as the Jun Family took the initiative for a charitable cause such as this one in the previous world, and called upon the community to set up a fund, they could have easily established orphanages or similar such places for the support of such children, and would have been able to provide them a good life regardless of their physical condition; but was such a feat possible in the feudal monarchy of this world?

The answer was undoubtedly 'no'!

Even if there was no issue of money involved, failure to carry out such a campaign successfully would be very embarrassing for a family of the Jun Family's caliber; and in case the Jun Family was able to succeed alone in their venture, then they would gain the support of the public masses, which would only agitate the royal family!

Under such a feudal system, even doing excessive good deeds could lead to a complete disaster!

"Just as you say, I will not take this initiative very far.... tomorrow I'll make arrangements for the children in the warehouse to be sent over to the manor. As for these people....." Jun Wu Yi had already bitten the bullet: "I cannot stop halfway now! I cannot allow them to return empty handed after bringing them to the Jun Family's home! But it's just this once!"

"Well, that's the Third Uncle's decision, but there are about fifteen or so children who are a lost cause at this point.... Uncle

must immediately make arrangements to make their life happier as long as they are alive, and when the moment comes..... Uncle must relieve them of their pain! They will not be able kill themselves, and even though it seems very cruel, but for them, death will be no short of freedom! But Uncle, please remember your words.... Just this once!"

Jun Wu Yi nodded sadly.

"In addition to arranging for their treatment, you must leave two personnel with them, who must be willing to relieve them of their suffering when the moment comes..... Uncle, you mustn't be soft-hearted in this regard....." Jun Mo Xie continued: "Third Uncle, I would like to ask if this will cause any problems with respect to the financial condition of our family? I know I speak out of turn, but....."

No matter the world's setting, no one can develop a family without money; you need to have money, and you need to channel it wisely! A family must make these decisions collectively since a family is a continual system. But once the younger generation is forced to ask such questions to their elders, the situation can be very embarrassing for the latter, since they are facing the concerns of their successors.

# Chapter 137: Open a net and the fishes come running

---

"There haven't been any wars in the recent years, so the income of the Jun household has reduced greatly. The Fief only generates a revenue of two million a year; there's no other source of revenue." Jun Wu Yi's face reflected mixed emotions as he said the words since he knew that Jun Mo Xie wouldn't like hearing them, but stated the truth since he didn't have another option.

"That seems a little too less, right?" Jun Mo Xie stated bluntly: "Only a mere two millions.... I'm afraid that such a low sum of money isn't enough to support a family as big as our Jun Family." Two millions a year in revenue might seem very high to normal people, and most would even call it an astronomical sum of money, but in the contrast of a family as big as the Jun Family, this sum was too less. Even though the Jun Family didn't have too many descendants, but there were still at least thousands of people who worked for the family! Providing clothing, food and salaries to just the household worker itself would reach a very alarming expense.

"Kindly hand over the financial matters to me, and I'll make some changes around the house for the sake of improvements as well." Jun Mo Xie started pacing about. His mind was secretly contemplating means to sell his wine to support the Jun Family's expenditures: [That shouldn't be a problem.... I really don't have a choice now. I'll sell it at a reduced price first, but later, when they need the cure, I'll only sell it at a very high price. They won't have an option; they'll either have to buy it or die.]

The young master Jun thought for a while and said: "As for the remaining twenty four children, Third uncle, you must initiate their preliminary recoveries, but watch carefully as to which of them can be of use later in the future when we need them. Although this wasn't the intended reason for rescuing them, but



we can't feed them in vain; so if they have the ability to repay us and they still don't, then what's the point of keeping them in the first place?"

"People also have their own value! If a person doesn't have any value, then they are only as good as a breathing corpse and must be abandoned!"

Jun Wu Yi nodded his head heavily, as a familiar feeling washed over his being.

"Unorthodox gambits could also help us out." Jun Wu Yi helplessly shook his head. He knew that even though his nephew had an utterly unorthodox thought process, which was morally differential from the rest of the family, the young man was still extremely practical. Though, Jun Wu Yi still wasn't sure if it was a good thing or bad.....

The hitman on the other hand was secretly lamenting; [uncle is a very noble man, but he isn't yet qualified enough to be the leader of a family as big as the Jun Family! Even though being the head of the house isn't a cold hearted job in its entirety, but sometimes tough decision are required to be made! Personal compassion and mercy cannot be the basis of every action.... The code of conduct must be based on the overall interests of the Family!]

However, these thoughts hadn't crossed Jun Wu Yi's consciousness yet since he was still stuck in the state of being a war general!

Jun Mo Xie left towards his chambers, but Jun Wu Yi was unable to find any sleep. So, he stationed himself in his wheelchair again, and strolled over to the coffee table, and intentionally poured himself a large cup of wine to keep him company in the cold of the night. Slowly, his mind went back a decade into the past...

Jun Wu Yi was already upset at the thought of those children's fate, and then Jun Mo Xie's words made things even worse for him. It took him a long time to calm down, but the wine still ended

up amplifying the feeling of sadness, making him even unhappier, leaving him feeling very dejected once again.

"My beloved Yao, if you were by my side, then what would you have asked me to do.....? Help me make a choice..... you know.... I miss you... I miss you very much...." Jun Wu Yi's words were muffled in whispers as he raised his glass once again and drank more wine to drown his sorrows. The cool distant moonlight continued to shower a faint and brilliant light over his body.....

He continued to listen to the insects as he stayed awake till late, but even their sounds sounded like sobbing to him....

Jun Mo Xie returned to his courtyard, where two black clothed people had been waiting for him for a while now.

"Young Master, this carrier pigeon flew out of the Ni Chang pavilion." One of the black clothed man bent over in courtesy and then handed over a pigeon to Jun Mo Xie.

"It's not hurt, is it?" Jun Mo Xie looked at the pigeon and asked.

"Since the Master had already instructed very clearly, then how could I have hurt him; if you set this pigeon free now, then it will still be able to fly high and far, and will even reach its intended destination without much delay." The Black clothed man smiled as he stated confidently.

Jun Mo Xie nodded as he gently lifted the bamboo tube off the pigeon's leg, and retrieved a crumpled ball of paper from inside it.

"Slay the entire Jun Family in one month's time! Jun Mo Xie mustn't live!" the illegible handwriting of this single sentence was enough to indicate that the writer must have been in a very excited frame of mind. The note carried a tiny 'Yue' signature at the end.

"Ha Ha, this woman is so silly, why would she do such a thing? Did I even retaliate after she slapped me in the face? Does she really think that getting me killed is a good punishment for calling her a 'slut'? She's got no tolerance at all!" Jun Mo Xie smiled as

shook his head disdainfully.

The faces of the two other men twitched. [That woman would try to kill the young master of the Jun Family over such an incident? She's no fool... she a Xuan Qi expert in her own right....]

"If this pigeon is sent out, then will you be able to track it?" Jun Mo Xie raised the hand which held the pigeon.

"I cannot trace it." the black clothed man's face seemed a bit embarrassed. "These pigeons have a tendency of flying high and for long distances. Except for capturing or killing them at the time of their ascent, my strength renders me helpless."

"Oh, that's also alright." Jun Mo Xie carefully restored the paper to its original position inside the bamboo tube, while carefully determining that the paper and tube were bundled together in the exact same manner as they had been by Yue'er. "Well, set it out again."

The black clothed men took the pigeon and left. Jun Mo Xie smiled as the cool midnight breeze gently brushed past his cheeks, "Open a net and the fishes come running in, ha ha .....?"

That night however, was bound to be another unusual night for the Tian Xiang imperial city.

Gold, silver, and yellow lights were constantly flashing throughout the city like fireworks in the night sky, but in the silence of darkness.

Countless pairs of eyes were alertly watching the imperial city, while their ears were busy listening to any and all signs of trouble.

Whenever two such opposing parties came together, a blood bath would inevitably follow. But these teams continued to carry on leaving blood and dead bodies in their path as they continued on their mission.

Li Family, Meng Family, Song Family and Mu Rong Family had been on the move ever since the Xuan Core had been stolen from

the Tang Family. Over the course of this sudden change in environment, the Tang Family's reaction had been the most unexpected and the most tolerant one. Instead of sending out their troops to enquire, the Tang Family had receded backwards, and had put strict restrictions on the activities of their personnel.

In the dark of the night, eight shadows seemingly flew over the high walls of the city, and entered into it, and slowly concealed their way through the darkness towards the Li residence....

The silence of the northern part of the city was being crushed by the rolling of wheels.

A team of people were speeding at full pace as they marched through the city. This group was travelling in luxurious bogeys, which were being pulled by large and powerful horses, which were far taller than average horses. Moreover, these horses had two weird horns on their foreheads, while the four legs were covered with scales. It was obvious that these weren't ordinary horses, and were a special kind of Xuan Beasts.

Each and every carriage of this team was being pulled by four of these mysterious Xuan Beasts, and they were travelling at such a fast pace that even a war horse on a battle field at full gallop wouldn't be able to match up to the pace of their carriages.

### The First Carriage

"..... Grandpa Liu, this mysterious Xuan Core rumor may not even be true, but we've still travelled thousands of miles in such a hurry.... Don't you think that we're overdoing it a bit? Besides, this city isn't our territory..... given the power we are investing in this matter, don't you think that the nine elders will question us?" The voice and manner of speech of the speaker indicated that the man was quite young, and clearly full of impatience.

"Feng Wu, since this matter relates to a Xuan Core from a peak level Nine Xuan Beast, we had to be careful; your experience is still shallow, so you may not be aware of the situation. The nine elders

had previously sent out a communication asking a peak Spirit Xuan expert to investigate the matter; that by itself is enough to validate the authenticity of the matter. My only fear is that even all of us together may not be able to outdo a peak Spirit Xuan expert.... After, a peak Spirit Xuan expert is no ordinary thing....." a hoarse voice replied.

"Would anyone in the world go against the Blizzard silver city? Not to mention that three elders are also accompanying the grandfather in this venture. Even a peak Spirit Xuan will not be able to outdo the preparations that we've made to acquire the treasure." The young man's voice seemed too full of arrogance, and it seemed that being born into such a high family greatly affected his judgement.

"Boy, do not blame me for calling you a frog whose stuck at the bottom of a well! Even if the strength of the Blizzard Silver City is sufficient to look disdainfully at the rest of the world, we still can't be careless." The old man sighed, but even his voice reflected a faint hint of pride as he said: "We might be the overlords of this world, but no one can overlook that a man once challenged the might of the Blizzard Silver City ten years ago...."

"The little Princess had come to this place to understand and experience the meaning of life, and had been allowed to travel unaccompanied by the Blizzard Silver City; if it hadn't been for that careless decision, then an ordinary man would never have been able to challenge us." The old man sighed again as his eyes narrowed.

## Chapter 138: An eight faceted unrest

---

The moment the youngster heard the reference to the 'little princess', a ray of light gleamed in his eyes, reflecting a hint of desire and longing. It seemed that the youngster was attracted to the charms of the little princess, and had been pursuing her for a long time now....

Inside the middle carriage, sat a young girl, dressed in white colored clothes; only sixteen or seventeen years in age by the looks of it, her picturesque elegance couldn't be described in mere words, but her face reflected a hint of cleverness, and it would seem that she wasn't exactly a law-abiding citizen, and was probably on the naughtier side of the spectrum. At this time, due to the constant shaking of the carriage, she was holding the hand of the white bearded man who was sitting next to her: "..... Third grandfather, why would you hide such things from me? You told me just enough to get me interested, so now you need to tell me more!"

The old man was sitting with his eyes closed, and didn't seem very different from a corpse at the moment. He opened his eyes and his face wrinkled, while his heart was inwardly cursing: [I'm finally beginning to realize why people are so afraid of her! No wonder the old man wanted the little princess to be escorted away.... He just wanted to breathe a sigh of relief by removing his burdens; and he must even be rejoicing from the pains that she will inflict on the others....if only I had known this earlier....]

"Little girl, while we are away from the Blizzard Silver City, I will tell you a story which is being talked most about these days..... I can also tell you the story of the horses which look like dragons, or about how I got so old.... Little girl, your grandfather is getting old now, and the story which you want to hear is over a decade old, so I don't really remember it very clearly anymore... do you think that my old bones are lying to you?"

The old man was almost on the verge of crying; had he known

about the little princess's temperament, then he would have spared himself from signing up for this errand.

[I really hate this.... When I received this news, I thought this will relieve me of my boredom and would help me in finding some inspiration. But it appears that I won't even be able to find any relief here! It would've been better if I tossed my old bones into a wreckage....]

"Why would you start the story, and then suddenly stop it... you've left me hanging....." the little princess pouted her mouth in distaste, while swaying her body like a pampered little baby: "Third Grandfather, you've barely mentioned the Jun Family, and that Jun Wu Yi..... and then you also told me that big sister shared a touching love story with that man, but then you haven't told me any further details...."

The third elder groaned; this story was a taboo inside the Blizzard Silver City, and no one would talk about this affair very easily. He had only mentioned this story to her in order to stop her from troubling him, but little did the old man know that this tale would attract her interest, and would keep her imagination glued to it. She had been nagging him for more details ever since.....

[Allow my old bones some rest..... you've been asking me about this since last night... it's been over fifteen or sixteen hours now....]

"Younger Brother, you come and tell the little princess a story. If you exchange positions with your elder brother this once, then I'll always owe you one!" the third elder proposed an exchange in positions.

"Well, only if you remember that you'll owe me one later..... the word has it that there's an old lady in this empire who found a ghost with a long tongue which vomits blood. The ghost seeks beautiful princesses, and drips blood on them...." The sixth elder was clearly in no mood to be trifled with.

"Ah - no! No! No! I don't want to hear the sixth grandfather's story.... I want to hear the third grandfather's story!" the other old man hadn't even finished his sentence when the little princess cried out and hastily refused his narration.

"Third Brother, you see that I tried to take your place, but the little princes won't allow me to.... ha ha ha..... third brother, please don't forget that you still owe me one for trying ha ha... I guess it's your job to make the third princess happy again; meanwhile I can get some more sleep....." the sixth elder started laughing out loudly.

"Despicable! Shameless! You have no code of brotherhood!!" the third elder cursed out in resentment.

"Third Grandfather, do you hate Xue'er, ah?" The little princess's eyes instantly gleamed tearfully, and she made a crying face.

"What, how?" the third elder denied flatly: "I feel bad that Xue'er even thought so!"

"Then you have to tell me the story about big sister and Jun Wu Yi, otherwise it will mean that you hate Xue'er." The little princess's face immediately transformed the look of anger to that of joy, and her joyful face started beaming a happy smile again.

"....." the third elder held his breathe, praying that he'd faint.....

[What sin's debt am I being forced to pay here.....]

As the wheels rolled, the princess continued to chatter in high spirits, and didn't shut up for even a single minute. Even though the third elder was an able bodied Spirit Xuan, his old wrinkles gradually continued to deepen from the torture, and as his spirits continuously left his body, his disposition started nearing that of a Tian Xiang City beggar....

In another direction

Another team of people had been marching towards the Tian Xiang Imperial City.



"Imperial Teacher, between you and me, this whole Xuan Core incident is very risky... it is likely to bring more harm than good." The speaker was a thin-bodied middle-aged man dressed in black clothes, who was sitting on a horseback. The rigid lines on his face spoke of all the bitter tragedies of wars he had suffered in his life, which seemed to igniting a feeling of rage inside him.

"This border does look dangerous at first, but since the Yu Tang Empire has been living in peace for so many years now, so there shouldn't be much of a problem. Moreover, since the three princes of the Tian Xiang Empire are wrangling for power at this point, we should push the wave and add to the billows so we can fish in troubled waters, and profit from the circumstances. Besides, with me around, even if the opposition army was equally matched in strength, I don't think that anyone will be able to stop me from leaving the Tian Xiang City if I so chose to." The speaker was an elderly man dressed in white robes; his hands were tucked inside his sleeves, while his hale and hearty face exuded a very leisurely aura.

"Why would you wish to escort me through the Tian Xiang Empire at your own risk..... the threat is much greater for you than it is for me since you've been at war with Jun Family for years, and have killed so many of their men in action? Because of the wars that have been waged in the past, the Jun Family's descendants are almost exhausted in number... so obviously this situation is far more dangerous for you than it is for me...."

"Why is this dangerous for me? If the Jun Family had the tendency of taking this opportunity to take a military action against me, then they simply wouldn't have been worthy of being called my enemy."

The middle-aged man's cold face smiled calmly, "They say that even if my victories were unwitting, they were still victories.... but one thing is for certain.... A few of the Jun Family's members didn't die at my hands! In all fairness, the three Brothers of the Jun

Family were better than me!"

As he said these words, his face suddenly exposed a color of humiliation, and he stated angrily: "Jun Wu Hui and his brothers have always been the enemies that I've most admired in my entire life, and I will probably never meet anyone as good as them. Even if I had died in the battlefield fighting against them, then I wouldn't have had a single complaint from my life. But the manner in which I won the war was no less than a shame for me. I have come to the Tian Xiang City to escort you; firstly..... secondly, but more importantly, to find out how Jun Wu Hui died!"

"If he was killed behind his back, then even though he was my enemy, I will still avenge his death!" the black-clothed middle-aged man's face was clearly expressing his anger: "A man with his valor didn't deserve to die in the thickets of a conspiracy!"

"I would expect such words from you." The Imperial Teacher's face exposed a profound smile: "Even though I've known you all these years, I still wondered if you ever tried to get him killed in secrecy?"

"What would you even say that? If there was anyone who wanted the three Jun Brothers dead in secrecy, then that was you, not me!" the black-clothed middle-aged man turned around to face his companion, and glared at him.

"The Frog at the bottom of the well always thinks that he's the best since there's no one around." The Imperial Teacher's eyes were still calm in the face of his companion's glaring eyes: "I can assure you that I had nothing to do with Jun Wu Hui's death. Although I did intend on getting him killed, and I even made some arrangements, but in the end, I had no part in his death."

"Well!" the middle-aged man's look changed to a very ferocious one as he shouted out: "That was a military matter, why would you stick your nose into it?" he paused for a second, and then suddenly yelled out even louder: "Who are you to stick your nose into it?!"

The Imperial Teacher was silent for a long time, before he finally stated: "Zhao Jian Hun, some things aren't just military matters.... Sometimes you also have to think about the country and your family....." he was unable to finish his sentence, and started gazing into the night sky in front of his eyes instead.

Zhao Jian Hun, the middle-aged man in black clothes was the first general of the Yu Tang Empire, and was Jun Wu Hui, Jun Wu Meng, and Jun Wu Yi's sworn enemy!

Zhao Jian Hun smiled bitterly and said: "Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng might be dead, but Jun Wu Yi is still alive..... I will find my redemption one day, and only then will I be free from the humiliation of this victory!"

"The four consecutive victories over these past years have really driven me mad! Did you know that?" Zhao Jian Hun looked up at the sky and sighed.

In another direction

This border was being stained by another squadron, who had borne tremendous hardships to get here in time. This border was associated with the Shen Ci Empire.

The distant savanna was led by a middle-aged, black-clothed, iron-cladded man; a small flacon which was resting on his shoulders flew into the sky as his face exposed a gentle smile: "A peak level nine Xuan Beast's Xuan Core? That's indeed a good thing; if it wasn't for such a treasure, then I wouldn't have been able to exchange blows with some of the other heroes of this world. I live for these joys of life!"

This tall and straight standing middle-aged man had a very slender body, and even though his face seemed very ordinary, it still exuded an unexplainable breathtaking charm. His long hair wasn't restricted in any way, and was flowing straight down his shoulders. His charismatic temperament had gained him the support of the savanna, and he was practically worshipped in his

land! He stood overlooking the heavy blanket of darkness which covered the Tian Xiang Empire, almost as if he was the creator of all beings!

"Tian Xiang City, I've arrived!" this man was known as the 'Falcon of the Savanna', and was one of the strongest of his generation. His looked and the sky, and roared as the weather started to take a turbulent turn over the savanna!

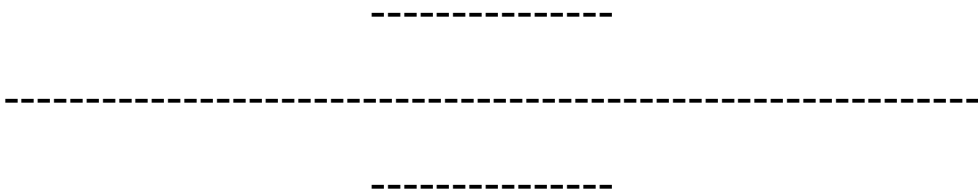
At this point, his troops scattered into numerous smaller factions, mostly comprising of three or five in number, and the largest faction was no greater than twelve, while some men even went alone; but all teams had the same target in sight - The Tian Xiang Imperial City!

All these teams started to converge towards the Tian Xiang Empire.....

At the same time, inside the distant Tian Fa forest, all kinds of mysterious Xuan Beasts were flying above the forest at lightening speeds, disturbing the peace of the Tian Fa forest with the fluctuation of the winds that they brought along with their tyrannical speeds. They rushed over the forest as they continued to carry forward. The animals inside the Tian Fa forest were unable to understand the reason behind this suddenly human unrest....

After a long while, a shocking roar sounded in the skies: "If we allow a peak level nine Xuan Core to fall into the hands of another, then it will be a shame like no other!" this overwhelmingly thunderous sound caused a ruckus inside the hearts of the wildlife of the Tian Fa forest, and left the living creatures of the forest trembling in fear.....

1 TL's note: the Shen Ci Empire is a savanna land.



-----

## Chapter 139: Despised

---

The first ray of the morning sun was just beginning to light up the sky, but Jun Mo Xie's body was already covered in sweat from all the physical training that he'd been doing for the past few hours. He casually wiped off the sweat, put on his clothes and started walking towards the warehouse.

Previously, his uncle had brought in some of the children which they had rescued from the Huang Hua Hall. Even though Jun Wu Yi had ordered them to be sent them away to the manor, Jun Mo Xie still wasn't reconciled to bearing the cost of their unproductivity. He wished to see if any of these kids could pay the family back in some manner or the other.

[Sowing where you can't reap isn't a wise thing to do! Just because we saved them doesn't mean that we must bear their burden forever; and just because we're supporting them now doesn't mean that we're obligated to rear them forever. Even if a meat pie falls out of the sky, one have the flexibility to use their hands for protecting themselves, otherwise the food will only hit you hard on the head and crush you to death.]

So, Jun Mo Xie went to take a look, but he didn't have any high expectation from them, and was only hoping that he'd find at least one or two who'd be worth training.

After all, these boys and girls were already inspected for their value at the time of entering the Huang Hua Hall!

After an hour of inspecting those children, Jun Mo Xie came out of the warehouse with a disappointed look on his face. The Huang Hall had completely rejected these children, and not without reason; these boys and girls were completely unfit for martial training.

Therefore, left with other option, Jun Mo Xie decided to give up. If a batch of people with no talent is forced to train, then it would

only be a waste of effort and resources, and would eventually force them to an early death.

A large crowd of people had flocked in front of the Jun residence's door. Even though Jun Wu Yi was a crippled man, he was still considered gentry in the Tian Xiang City. When such a powerful and wealthy figure sends out a message for acquiring Xuan Beasts, how could every merchant in the city not swarm to his door?

So, when the Jun residence's gatekeeper opened the front door, he was surprised to see a huge crowd gathered in front.

This used to be a very common sight until seven years ago. At the time when Jun Wu Yi had first suffered his disability, Jun Zhan Tian had spared no effort to find the best doctors in the country to cure his only surviving son's disability. Upon realizing that his son's disability was incurable, the old man resorted to buying all kinds of treasures, rare objects and books to keep his son amused. The already disheartened Jun Wu Yi was unable to bear his father's kindness, and would only pick up one or two items reluctantly. After several years of this, the father and son duo cleared the matter out and these activities were inevitably put to rest....

But this time, the message was sent out on Jun Wu Yi's initiative, and that too for acquiring a Xuan Beast; so naturally, every merchant in the Tian Xiang City herded to his doorstep!

Jun Wu Yi sat in his wheelchair again, and slowly made his way towards the front of the line which was snaking out of the door. He had already understood Jun Mo Xie's intentions; if Jun Mo Xie had wanted to acquire a Xuan Beast, then he would have simply done it himself, and would have never bothered his uncle with it. Since he didn't wish to undertake this matter on his own, it can only mean one thing: [Mo Xie doesn't want other people to find out that he's searching for Xuan Beasts, or at least doesn't want people to know that these beasts are being bought for him.]

[My nephew often acts in weird ways, but I have to admit that Mo Xie always puts a lot of thought into his actions, and is always very rational.] Even though Jun Wu Yi didn't know why his nephew wanted these beasts, he at least understood the reason behind Jun Mo Xie's request for the task to be done by someone else, which is why Jun Wu Yi personally picked the beasts out from the lot.

He deliberately picked out the best beasts from level one to level five, and in fact, went one step further and picked a pair instead of just one, and sent the rest of them back. As far as level six or higher were concerned, he couldn't even find one merchant who was offering them. The entire Tian Xiang City didn't even have a single level six Xuan beast on sale! Even a damaged level Six Xuan Beast was unavailable!

Upon Jun Wu Yi's command, these beasts were loaded into cages and were carried into his yard. Jun Mo Xie saw the commotion and came over; he made the servants wash those ten beasts.

The grade one beasts were rabbits, the level two beasts were winged raccoons, level three beasts were wolves; level four's pick were bulls, and the level five Xuan Beasts were iron-skinned snakes....

Jun Mo Xie waved his hands and asked the servants to leave. Then, he walked over to the first cage comprised of the two rabbits and stopped for a moment. The two rabbits didn't even open their eyes to look at him, and completely ignored his presence. He rubbed his nose, and stationed himself in front of the cage with the winged raccoons, but still didn't get any response.

Cage three.... But still no reaction!

Jun Mo Xie was beginning to lose faith in his judgement and was beginning to wonder if he was wrong in making this assessment. But doing this half way wasn't in the hitman's nature, and even though he didn't expect much, he walked over to the fourth cage.



He suddenly heard a 'hiss' sound which came from the cage beside the one he was standing in front of. The iron skinned snakes in the cage besides had snaked towards the edge of their cage and were shaking their tails while their eyes were staring at Jun Mo Xie's body!

Soon, the two bulls in the cage in front of him also opened their eyes to look at Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie's heart sprung up with joy.

The confused bulls looked at him, then looked down, then looked up at him again, and then started looking around them, and then looked the Jun Mo Xie again. A ray of hope started to emerge in their eyes as they continued to stare at him, almost as if his body was exuding seeds of immortality, and it appeared that they were looking forward to something really good.

The more distant cage with the snakes in it, had already started to shake since the snakes were ceaselessly shaking their tails while banging their heads against their cage, and those two pairs of eyes were still firmly fixed at Jun Mo Xie. They seemed so anxious that if they hadn't been imprisoned in a cage, they would've already rushed towards the young master Jun.

Jun Wu Yi was watching from the sidelines, and although he noted this strange behavior, he couldn't explain the reason behind it; also he couldn't help but notice that his nephew was seemingly indifferent in the face of this anomaly.

Jun Mo Xie calmly took a couple of steps backwards as his face remained expressionless, defying the ecstasy of his heart.

Only a pig wouldn't understand the meaning of this!

Either 'The art of unlocking the heaven's fortune' or the Hongjun Pagoda, or both were mysteriously causing these Xuan Beasts to get attracted towards Jun Mo Xie! This sole discovery itself was worth a priceless treasure!

What was the most dangerous place in the entire Xuan Xuan continent? If this topic was ever raised, then no one would say the Blizzard Silver City, because even though the Blizzard Silver City was very powerful and arrogant, even they wouldn't take a man's life without any reason. However, there was one place on this continent which would; and every one was aware of this place, so even the most ordinary of men would only give one answer: the Tian Fa forest!

The paradise of Xuan Beasts and the infernal hell of humans! Even if a peak Spirit Xuan ventured into the Tian Fa forest, then they were quite likely to lose their life to the dangers of the forest!

But Jun Mo Xie didn't need to be afraid of it anymore.

But what did this mean?

What items are considered most valuable in the Xuan Xuan continent?

High grade herbs, healing Dans, Xuan Qi fruits, Xuan Beast's Xuan Cores, or Xuan Beast's cubs?!

And where all these rarities produced in abundance? The answer will still remain the same - The Tian Fa forest!

No one had dared to venture out into the depths of this forest for millions of years.....

However, Jun Mo Xie's body seemed to be attracting high-end Xuan beasts's love and affection.... [This could be the best way to increase strength and become rich!]

However, Jun Mo Xie still wasn't convinced if relying on Xuan Dan and herbs was a good way to increase power and upgrade 'The art of unlocking the heaven's fortune'....

Jun Mo Xie's heart was beginning to feel a strange sense of agitation, and just then the Hongjun Pagoda started to spin. This rotation of the Hongjun Pagoda ignited a very special and wonderfully strange feeling in his heart..... like he was.....

Despised.

Or laughed at; almost like someone was carrying a mountain of gold, but would be required to beg people for food... only to be mocked at in the end.

This sentiment left Jun Mo Xie feeling very unhappy all of a sudden, [It seems that I have an issue!]

But Jun Mo Xie really didn't know what this problem was, but could sense that it was a big problem nonetheless. In fact, he felt like the beggar who was holding a gold bowl in his hands, but was still begging people for rice!

His heart perceived a feeling of emptiness, but he really didn't know how to overcome it.....

[This is such a great tragedy!]

If one must compare Jun Mo Xie to a beggar with an expensive bowl in his hands, then a diamond bowl would be more suited in this situation.... in fact no matter how valuable his bowl was, he'd still have to beg for rice!

As the Hongjun Pagoda started to spin, almost all the Xuan Beast's cages came to life. In fact, the beasts who hadn't taken any notice of his presence earlier, namely the level one, two and three beasts, were also staring at Jun Mo Xie now, while constantly banging their bodies against their cages, almost as if they simply couldn't wait to rush out of their cages and land straight into Jun Mo Xie's arms.....

[Jun Wu Yi was staring in disbelief from the sidelines; how is this happening? What is Mo Xie doing?]

[He's just been walking back and forth since he's arrived here, and seemingly hasn't done anything, but then why are the Xuan Beasts acting out in this manner?]

[What is going on here?]

At this point, a servant came in and reported: [The Young Miss of the Dugu Family has arrived.]

# Chapter 140: Forcing the Hongjun Pagoda

---

Jun Mo Xie's mouth curved into a pleased smile as he waved his hand: "That's just great!" his experiment had been successful. He said: "These....." as he pointed to the cages in front: "are useless now; have them removed from here."

The servant hastily gathered a few more servants, and then they all carried the cages away.

"Those Xuan Beasts are..... useless?" Jun Wu Yi opened his eyes wide as he stared at his nephew in disbelief.

"Well, yes, they are useless now." Jun Mo Xie smiled again: "Third Uncle, uh..... Uncle if you're planning on killing those snakes for meat, then count me in as well; snake meat is excellent for the human body's nourishment."

"Kill the snakes..... for meat?"

Jun Wu Yi opened his mouth with the intention of scolding Jun Mo Xie: [We spent hundreds of thousands of Taels in buying these beasts! You asked me to buy them just last night; and they are already useless to you.... All you did was parade around them for two minutes! Those two iron bodied snakes are level five Xuan Beasts.... And they are completely intact as well; I spent over two hundred thousand taels on them alone!]

[You want me to make a meal out of snakes which costed two hundred thousand taels.....?!]

He was just about to start his rant when they heard a mighty rumbling sound. Dugu Xiao Yi walked into the courtyard, being escorted by seven big and burly men.

Dugu Xiao Yi looked even more beautiful, refined and elegant in the contrast of her seven brothers. Her rolled-up black hair looked slightly fluffy, which were being held in place by a crystal hairpin. Her white face looked even more tender and delicate, while her

cheery lips were curved in a smile which revealed a hint of joy, and bashfulness at the same time....

A white shawl covered her light green dress, which gently caressed body right down to her waistline. Although the young maiden's body appeared somewhat immature and unripe, it was still curvy and exquisite in its make.

The young maiden stood in the doorway, while her body gleamed brilliantly in the rays of the morning sun. A gentle breeze fluttered past her sleeves; not many people were capable of matching her grace. Jun Wu Yi stared at his nephew, who was looking at the young girl, almost as if he had never seen such a sight in his life before.

Even Jun Mo Xie couldn't help admire her beauty, and was for a moment... lost in the beauty of the moment.

"What are you looking at? Never seen a beautiful woman before ah?" Dugu Ying growled unhappily as his burly body stepped sideways, blocking his sister from Jun Mo Xie's line of sight. It seemed that Dugu Xiao Yi's seven brothers weren't very happy about their sister visiting the Jun residence....

"Oh, how are my beloved Dugu Brothers doing ah? Do you want some more wine? We have plenty more!" Jun Mo Xie narrowed his eyes.

Dugu Ying suddenly burst out in a loud voice: "Don't look so proud... you fooled us into drinking that stupid wine of yours...." He suddenly grunted heavily as his face started reflecting a color of embarrassment.

After returning home last night, Dugu Xiao Yi obviously ran straight to her Brothers' chambers since Ye Gu Han's words had gotten her worried about their wellbeing. When she reached the door, she saw that her seven huge brothers were sitting around the dinner table, and had already overturned the large porridge cauldron which had been sitting on top of the table.....

One really couldn't blame them for toppling over the cauldron..... Jun Mo Xie's wine had burnt off their stomachs, and they couldn't even digest greasy food items at the moment, let alone meat. No meat and no alcohol for a complete week had left these seven men moaning, groaning and hungry.

For such big men, eating porridge three-meals-a-day for survival was nothing short of torture....

"Ah? Did that Jun Mo Xie bully you? And why have you all lost so much weight? I just saw you guys a few days ago.... Tell me what he did! I'll teach him a lesson!" Dugu Xiao Yi was extremely shocked and angry upon seeing the plight of her seven brothers.

However, her words aroused a sense of embarrassment in her seven brothers, and they all simultaneously thought the same thing: [What? Did she just say that Jun Mo Xie bullied us? That guy can't even lay a finger on us, and she thinks he bullied us? That's a joke! He did give us that wine, but we got greedy after a few glasses....that's all that happened that day; although that wine was really good ah!]

"Bah, did you just say Jun Mo Xie? Huh, Third Brother slapped that little guy to the ground the other day! Do you really think that a guy as small as him could ever bully us? Ha Ha, Xiao Yi, you're joking right? Come on Brothers, tell her about it!" Du Gu Hao opened his mouth to brag.

"That's right, Sixth Brother and I kicked him, and stamped on him! You should have seen the look on his face... If it wasn't for father's presence, we would have run him over! Ha ha ha....." Dugu Shang started boasting shamelessly.

"But I heard that Jun Mo Xie leveled you all to the floor? This information was given to me by a very reputable source!" her seven brothers missed out the wrinkling of her eyebrows: [they inflicted so much pain on him, and he didn't even complain about it.....]

"Do you really think that Jun Mo Xie has the ability to put the

seven of us to ground? That's just a rumor; and a blatant lie; that's all!" Dugu Xiong stood up and rolled his sleeves up, revealing his thick and hairy arms, and pumped his muscles into a knot: "Xiao Yi, I'm sure that Jun Mo Xie planted this rumor to settle old scores with us. Since he couldn't touch us, he's just using these rumors to comfort himself!"

"That's right, he just hoping that repeating his rumors will make them a fact! We didn't just beat up Jun Mo Xie that day, we also demolished his house, but those few jars of....." Dugu Chong rushed over and covered Dugu Jie's mouth.

"Don't talk to me.....how could you? You you, treated him that way....he, he, his body is so weak; how could you do that to him? How can you do this?!" Dugu Xiao Yi became even angrier upon hearing these words. Distressed, she suddenly started whining: "Don't you guys have any heart....."

They had certainly overdone it!

The seven brothers started looking at each other with a confused and embarrassed look on their faces, and then those fourteen eyeballs looked back at Dugu Xiao Yi.

[Then what do we say uh? Our stomachs have been completely perforated by that man, and we aren't even allowed to run our mouths now?....]

Dugu Xiao Yi started stomping her feet as she continued to sob: "You, you..... were too hard on him..... I can no longer look at you.... I hate you!" Suddenly she turned around and ran crying out of the room.

"What was that about?" Dugu Xiong looked the rest of his brothers with a confused look on his face.

"No idea." His six remaining brothers looked just as confused as him, and shook their heads from left to right in unison simultaneously.



Dugu Wudi happened to be passing by their chambers at that time, and was enraged to his daughter leaving their room in tears. He aggressively charged into their room and grabbed the seven of them, and then taught them a lesson....

Later, when Dugu Xiao Yi asked permission to visit the Jun residence, the entire Dugu Family naturally opposed it! They had taken such extensive measures to separate the two of them, and then allowing her to visit the Jun Family's home after all that effort would be simply outrageous....

Dugu Xiao Yi resorted to her own means in order to get her way, and burst in to tears. Faced with her tears, all the three generations of the Dugu Family surrendered to her will....

However, they made a condition of their own: [You can go, but you must go along with trusted family or friends;] meaning, she would be accompanied there by her seven brothers. And thus, she ended up being accompanied by a huge and powerful retinue instead of travelling alone to the Jun residence.

In fact, Little White had been the first one to take a stand on going to the Jun residence; he had jumped down to the ground, and had turned his head to look pitifully at the Dugu elderly. Then he had turned his head to face Dugu Xiong, and had glared fiercely at him and his brothers: [Don't you dare to stop me; I can't wait to jump into Jun Mo Xie's arms.....]

Even though Little White was just a cub, and even though his body's growth and development hadn't yet started, he was still carried the blood and the pride of an advanced Xuan Beast's race. He simply didn't wish to deal with such annoyance!

[If I were a grown up, then I would have bitten your ears off! You don't know who the real big guy around here is!]

Jun Mo Xie looked smilingly at Dugu Xiao Yi: "You look very nice today Miss Dugu; I really can't take my eyes off you."

Dugu Xiao Yi's face suddenly started to glow, and she replied back: "You really think that I look pretty? I thought that you hadn't noticed me yet...." Her mind was playing a completely different tune: he called me 'Miss Dugu' instead of 'Little Girl'.... That's so much more pleasing to hear from his mouth!

Jun Mo Xie hastily replied: "How could that be." However, he had already started pushing out his body's energy into the Hongjun Pagoda in the hope of starting its rotations!

Little White was within arms-reach, so obviously wanted to experiment a bit.

This was the first time that Jun Mo Xie was intentionally trying to initiate the Hongjun Pagoda's revolutions!

Boom!

His energy started penetrating through to the Hongjun Pagoda! The Hongjun Pagoda suddenly started spinning at high speeds, and started emitting rainbow colored rays, which were at least ten times more powerful than ever before. A strong and powerful Aura started to flood out of the Pagoda, with the intensity of a tsunami's waves....

# Chapter 141: Aura Storm

---

At the moment when Jun Mo Xie's energy had come in contact with the Hongjun Pagoda, which had caused the Hongjun Pagoda to spin wildly, Little White's ears erected and had then started flapping! He tilted his head to look at Jun Mo Xie with his cute pair of eyes, which clearly expressed his surprise!

At present, nine people were sitting inside Jun Mo Xie's courtyard, out of which Dugu Xiao Yi was sitting next to Jun Mo Xie since her little pet was sitting in his arms. Jun Wu Yi had strolled away in his wheelchair to a distance since he didn't wish to intervene in this gathering of the younger generation. However, he was still close enough to keep an eye on things.

The seven Dugu Brothers had spent a lot of time last night bragging about their victories over Jun Mo Xie to save face in front of their sister, but it was obvious that they still wished to get back at him for all the suffering that he had inflicted on them. However, all the seven brothers were behaving themselves very well at the moment since they knew that they were in Jun Wu Yi's presence.

Their father, the invincible general Dugu Wudi had always spoken very highly of Jun Wu Yi, but had told them that the man was now 'the shadow of a once-great tree'!

The seven Dugu brothers had heard about the legends of the three great Jun brothers from their father, their uncles, their grandfather and several other sources right from their early childhood days, and were capable of reciting those tales backwards.

The white generals - Jun Wu Hui, Jun Wu Meng and Jun Wu Yi! The stories about their military might and accomplishments had been circulated around the military divisions of the entire nation to an extent that they had already been transformed to the position of legends in the hearts and minds of every soldier. Dugu Wudi had

always expressed that he wished his sons to be similar to the three sons of Jun Zhan Tian....

Their proud father considered no man to be his equal, but when it came to the subject of the three Jun brothers, he'd remain silent out of respect and admiration....

Although Jun Wu Yi had turned into a very silent and quiet man now, who's each and every action was refined and elegant, but they knew that the once-great military general still lingered in the shadows somewhere, and if that man was ever provoked then he could still wreak havoc!

At the time of Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng's mysterious death, Jun Wu Yi had gone wild and had dispatched troops and waged wars that had stained the land in blood. Zhao Jian Hun had suffered heavy losses in the three wars that had followed, and if wasn't for the last minute mystery intervention, then he would have certainly lost the war. However, because of this mysterious intervention Jun Wu Yi suffered a similar fate to that of his brothers, but ended up as a cripple instead!

But that war was still acknowledged as a demonstration of supreme might in the Tian Xiang country! The storm with which the hundreds of thousands of iron-cladded men had charged into battle, advancing towards the enemy in an unprecedented feat, had become a legend!

Although Jun Wu Yi was forced to retire from the army due to his disability post this war, his name and figure were still an icon in the military circles, while his stories were legends; even mere talks of those stories would ignite a sense of pride and passion in the hearts of any soldier in the nation!

At the time when the seven brothers of the Dugu Family were asked to accompany their sister to the Jun residence, Dugu Wudi had solemnly warned them: [never, never provoke Jun Wu Yi!]

If there was anyone in the Tian Xiang Empire who could openly

dare to go against the Jun Family, then it was the Dugu Family, but even though the young master Jun Mo Xie had dared to rattle their cages, they still wouldn't dare to teach him a lesson, only because of one man - Jun Wu Yi!

If Jun Wu Yi was angered, then he could easily dish out seven generations of the Dugu Family like sliced-out vegetables, and even Dugu Wudi wouldn't be able to stop him. Such a thing wasn't entirely impossible; in fact, Jun Wu Yi's temperament in the past was proof that he even had the courage to do it!

In the hearts of the seven Dugu brothers, Jun Wu Yi's image was that of a hero; he was their idol. Jun Mo Xie might tickle their tempers, but they still won't misbehave in front of Jun Wu Yi out of sheer admiration and fear.

Jun Wu Yi didn't exactly see his nephew as a child anymore, but the more he understood his nephew, the more mysterious he found his nephew's temperament to be.

Jun Wu Yi was consciously aware that after their recent spats, both the parties were interested in starting a fight, and he was well aware that if that ever happened then the seven brothers of the Dugu Family were quite likely to lose their lives on the spot, unaware of his nephew's real abilities. However, Jun Wu Yi also knew that his nephew was highly unlikely to act out so recklessly. But even then, he felt it necessary to oversee this gathering from a distance, just in case something went wrong, in which case he'd have to act and stop the proceedings!

Jun Wu Yi's subconscious mind was constantly nagging him to watch their gathering since he felt that something untoward was about to happen!

Because.....

Jun Mo Xie's body's current state was becoming increasingly unstable with every passing moment, and even though Jun Wu Yi, Dugu Xiao Yi and her seven brothers weren't able to sense it, they

were all in grave danger at the moment!

Jun Mo Xie had pushed his energy into the Hongjun Pagoda without validating his judgement in order to initiate its spin. The simulated Hongjun Pagoda had started spiraling at high speeds, and had started circulating a huge amount of Aura throughout his body. Soon, this Aura started becoming more and more condensed, and started emitting a radiant white light within his body....

Jun Mo Xie had never anticipated this occurrence, but his body's meridians were unable to control this sudden and massive surge of Aura, and it felt as if they would explode along with the rest of his body. He was inwardly very surprised by this surge of Aura, and could anticipate the danger that he was in at the moment....

Jun Mo Xie had been hearing a 'puk' 'puk' sound for some time now, which was being caused by the rushing of the Aura within his meridians. But the most inexplicable horror of his current situation was that he still couldn't stop the Hongjun Pagoda from spinning since he couldn't disconnect his body's energy from the Pagoda. Then suddenly, the Hongjun Pagoda fused into one, and become inseparable!

Little White was whining ecstatically, and his four paws were firmly clinging onto Jun Mo Xie's chest. In fact, even his belly and mouth were attached to Jun Mo Xie's body, while his eyes were closed and his face was exuding a look of extreme satisfaction, pleased by the surging aura inside Jun Mo Xie's body.

[He is a really good man, and is actually giving me such pure Aura....good man, I'll never leave you!]

All this was happening inside Jun Mo Xie's body; nobody was aware of it except Jun Mo Xie and Little White since the outsiders could only see the enigmatic smile on Jun Mo Xie's face.

However, as the Hongjun Pagoda's momentum continued to increase, it started to reach a completely bizarre level, and Dugu Xiao Yi and her brothers started sensing something weird, almost

at the same time.

At this moment, all eight of them were feeling the same thing; even though Jun Mo Xie was sitting right in front of them, they all felt as if he was a thousand miles away....as if, even though he was just in front of him, he was still a fantasy, unreal, like a mass of thin air. Although he was real, alive, and within arm's reach, they felt that they might still not be able to touch him, and suddenly all eight of them started feeling as if they were dreaming. This was an extremely mysterious feeling. He was like the evening moon.... Within reach, yet unattainable; elusive!

Simultaneously, Jun Wu Yi, who was sitting far away from them, tensed his eyebrows and issued two sharp and intense rays of light. Being a Sky Xuan expert, he clearly sensed the Aura which was being emitted from Jun Mo Xie's body since Jun Mo Xie had started slowly distributing this Aura to the outside world because he was unable to keep it inside his body.

Even though the autumn sky seemed completely still over the Jun residence, the Aura which was circulating in the atmosphere was giving rise to an unseen storm. Even though this storm was invisible to the naked eyes, but the pressure of this storm was beginning to build up over the Jun residence....and was capable to giving rise to destructive calamity.

The sky above showed no traces of wind, but the plants and trees inside the Jun courtyard were still fluttering in the invisible breeze of this storm. And Jun Mo Xie's body was the center of this tornado!

All the insects and other creatures of lower life forms had already gone silent since the depth of their souls was warning them about this impending disaster, and they could all sense that something unprecedented was about to take place....

Jun Wu Yi had already realized the threat of the impending disaster, even though the others couldn't. Acting decisively, he

used both his hands to leap out of his wheelchair, and practically flew over to the eight of his guests almost like a hawk.... bang bang bang bang bang bang bang.... He struck eight times, and stunned the eight siblings in an instant. No one in the Dugu delegation was a match for his speed and strength, in fact, they weren't even able to react to his attacks.

Then, Jun Wu Yi quickly tossed their bodies in a pile, with Dugu Xiao Yi on top. Then he took a deep breath, and picked up their bodies with his bare hands. He was already thanking his stars that he was capable enough of doing it, and felt that all his life's hard work had been worth it since the combined weight of those eight siblings was almost two thousand kilos. Then, he immediately turned around, and ran out of Jun Mo Xie's courtyard, while carrying their bodies.



## Chapter 142: Earth-shattering Affect

---

That violent surge of Aura had quietly taken the form of a huge tornado. Although this hurricane wasn't visible to the naked eye, it was powerful enough to kill a large number of people. In fact, Jun Mo Xie was the only man who was immune to its destruction, while the others were likely to turn to ash! Even Jun Wu Yi, a Sky Xuan expert wasn't certain to survive it!

In front of something as dangerous as this Aura storm, people like Dugu Xiao Yi and her Brothers had absolutely no chance of survival; in fact, they weren't even aware of the danger! But Jun Wu Yi was a Sky Xuan expert, how could he have not sensed the danger? He had acted decisively and had knocked them unconscious, and had then carried them outside in a desperate attempt to save their lives!

He had decided to carry them all at once since he was afraid that he may not even have the time to carry them out one by one, in which case the Aura's convergence could easily have killed the remaining ones! Therefore, Jun Wu Yi had only one option: carry them all at once! He was even willing to expose himself in the process, but was reassured by the fact that given the strength of the Dugu Siblings, they would never be able to regain enough consciousness to realize that they were being carried out by a cripple!

Jun Wu Yi had barely left the courtyard when the Aura above suddenly started spiraling downwards at high speeds, and converged straight into Jun Mo Xie's body. The Aura went straight into the Hongjun Pagoda making an 'Om' sound, and the tower instantly magnified several times; it issued numerous rays of a golden colored light along with a white colored light comprising of pure Aura. This white light comprising of pure Aura went straight towards Jun Mo Xie's Baihui.<sup>1</sup>

Jun Mo Xie's stationary body suddenly started shaking as his face

twitched under the influence of the attack. His Baihui suddenly opened up in one swoop as the Hongjun Pagoda established a line of connection with it, and the overwhelming force of the Aura wantonly channeled itself through Jun Mo Xie's body and towards his Baihui!

After the Hongjun Pagoda's magnification, the Aura started converging into his body almost as if it was being sucked in by a large whale. The entire Aura which had been scattered into the surrounding region was now being absorbed back by the Hongjun Pagoda, which even though was forming an avalanche in the process, was disappearing into Jun Mo Xie's body without leaving a trace in the world outside. Jun Mo Xie's body's meridians hadn't yet recovered from the strain yet, but the Hongjun Pagoda didn't stop! After devouring this surge of Aura, it started streaming a fresh wave of Aura into the atmosphere. Then, it started rotating again, and absorbed that Aura again..... Again, again.... And again!

The fact that Little White was still willfully in Jun Mo Xie's arms was enough to reason that this Aura was possibly the purest form of Aura. Already having undergone a filtration process by the Hongjun Pagoda, this Aura was proving out to be very beneficial for Little White; in fact, as far as the Xuan Beast was concerned, this Aura's benefits were beyond comparison!

At this moment, Little White's furs started shining brightly as he hummed twice in pain. However, it seemed that the Xuan Beast cub was aware that this was a big opportunity for him since he seemed to be forcefully holding back the pain which was sending his bones rattling. Soon his fur started to fall, leaving only his bare flesh and skin; even his eyelashes started shedding like tree leaves in the autumn winds!

The Xuan Beast cub made a few more sounds as he winced, while his bare body continued to tremble in pain, but he didn't remove himself from Jun Mo Xie's body. Soon, his body started growing a

new layer of fur, at a rate which was steep enough to be visible to the naked eye, and soon his new furs were longer in length than his original ones.....

He slowly opened up his body's joints, which made a crackling sound in the process. Then, Little White slowly open his eyes as he relaxed his body, and then used his four paws to stand up straight in front in front of Jun Mo Xie's body. He looked at his body joyfully, and then ran five or six laps around Jun Mo Xie; then he suddenly stopped and bowed his head in gratitude. Then, he took out his tiny tongue and started licking his new fur caringly, like a dog in the park.

This dramatic movement happening inside Jun Mo Xie's body had left a very abnormal affect in the outside world, which was felt throughout the Tian Xiang city and had left everyone panicking!

The insurmountable Aura which had almost broken the windows of every household in the city had then suddenly disappeared without a trace, which had left everyone gasping: [What kind of a being is capable of creating such an earth-shattering momentum?]

The invisible vortex of Aura had occupied a range of almost ten miles, which had effectively turned into a 'restricted' zone for the outside world!

In fact, even a Spirit Xuan wouldn't have the courage to enter this zone and seek for the source on this anomaly! Even though everyone was curious about the origin of this storm, no one was willing to risk their lives by entering into this forbidden zone!

This has always been the way the world reacts in the face of danger! In the face of such extreme danger even the usually proud and arrogant Spirit Xuan experts had started acting like ants!

Inside the Magnificent Jewel Hall

A white bearded man was standing under the roof of the building with two other men beside him; namely Mu Xue Tong and Xiao

Han.

"Such skill..... I'm afraid that this being has already transcended the level of Spirit Xuan...." The ninth elder's face clearly reflected the shocked state of his mind: "I would have never imagined that such a figure could have ever existed inside the Tian Xiang City!"

Both men beside him were very surprised. Xiao Han asked: "Ninth elder, if this person is stronger than a Spirit Xuan, then is there another realm above it?"

"Stronger?" the ninth elder gently shook his head, and replied with a solemn look in his eyes: "The word 'strong' isn't enough to describe the realm that this man has already achieved..... you won't be able to understand this at your present skill level....." a strand of fear appeared inside the ninth elder's eyes, and then quickly disappeared.

Mu Xue Tong and Xiao Han stared at the void in disbelief!

### Outside the City

Three platoons were approaching the Tian Xiang city, but faced with this anomaly, all three of them immediately issued an order and their teams came to a screeching halt.

Blizzard Silver city's little princess hobbled down her carriage, wearing a veil to cover her face, and joined the elders: "Third Grandfather, why are we stopping? We must keep going.... We haven't reached our destination yet."

The third elder and the sixth elder had both felt the world-shaking momentum, and had spontaneously looked at each other, and had seen the same look of horror in each other's eyes!

The sixth elder stuck out his finger and started poking his beard: "The momentum we sensed earlier was clearly not due to fighting; however, if one person was capable of coming up with such a massive momentum, then his strength would far too much to compete against. I can't imagine someone strong enough to

produce such astonishingly terrible force.... Can you think of a possible source? Brother, it could be possible that this person is also after the peak of level nine Xuan Beast's Xuan Core....."

Then, he paused, shook his head, and smiled: "If that's the case then we are like..... Lambs in a tiger's den or even worse...."

The third elder wrinkled his brows and replied: "If this presence is a tiger, then we are certainly more than lambs..... don't you think that you should seek a better metaphor, perhaps something with dragons in it?"

The six elder was speechless for a long time, and then he said: "Third Brother, I have never sensed such a terrifying existence in all my travels.... I afraid that this man had already transcended the peak of Spirit Xuan...."

The third elder sighed: "I have never seen anything like this either, and even though I also believe that he's already crossed the peak of the Spirit Xuan realm, I believe that this may not necessarily be a bad thing. This man had already transcended the might of mortal men! So, even a peak level nine Xuan Beast's Xuan core might not have any importance in the eyes of such a man. It could also be possible that this man might be living inside the Tian Xiang City in seclusion, and might have released his momentum to scare away the approaching warlords to deter and scare them away, quite possibly because he doesn't wish to be disturbed. But even then, if such a powerful figure is residing inside the Tian Xiang City, then we must be very careful! We simply cannot afford to take even one wrong step, or cause bloodshed without reason, otherwise I'm afraid that this divine existence might not allow us to return back to the Blizzard Silver City alive!"

"Third Brother's words make a lot of sense, so we'll do as you say..." the sixth elder frowned: "anyway, it's not like this man would be running around in streets and marketplaces...."

"Yes, that's right; I strongly feel that even a Xuan Core of a peak

level nine Xuan beast will have no value in the eyes of such an existence; I don't think his appearance has anything to do with the Xuan Core." The third elder raised his head as a spark of excitement ignited in his eyes: "If we were able to meet with this man, then he could even give us information which might be more valuable than the Xuan Core itself..... as long as we have a chance of meeting with this man, any risk is worth it!"

The sixth elder trembled at the thought first, but then nodded excitedly and said: "Yes, in fact, I don't think he would be interested in any materialistic objects of the world; wealth, glory and even the Xuan Core.... So how will we find something to present to such a being?"

"It's difficult to judge the temperament of such an existence since we've never met anyone like him before...." their two pairs of eyes continued to stare at the Tian Xiang City with a sense of fervent passion inside them.

The Yu Tang empire's regiment was also travelling towards the Tian Xiang City when Fei Ming Chen asked the troops to halt, and looked gloomily at the city ahead: "I never imagined that the Tian Xiang City would be the residence of a something even possibly stronger than a peak Spirit Xuan....yes, that force was definitely stronger than a Peak Spirit Xuan! It seems that there are a lot of things that are beyond my perception!"

Zhao Jian Hun was on horseback; he coldly looked at his companion and said: "Teacher of the state, what are you talking about?"

Although Zhao Jian Hun was a famous general, but his Xuan Qi cultivation level wasn't very high. Although he was aware that there were some divine creatures in the world, but his understanding of these matters was very limited.

Fei Ming Chen was looking extremely gloomy, and was still under a shock after experiencing the terrifying strength that he

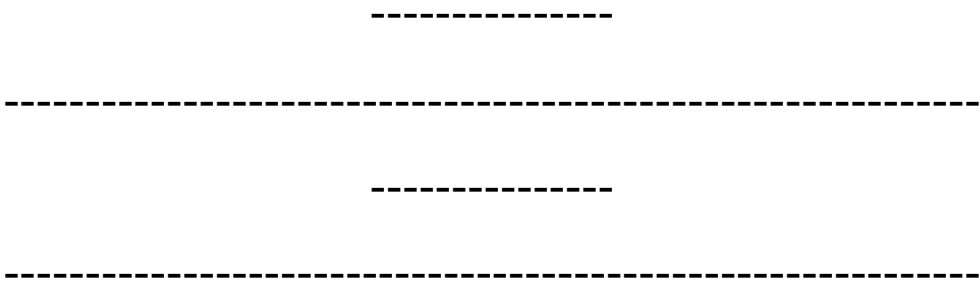
has just sensed; then Zhao Jian Hun's question made things even worse: "Zhao Jian Hun, are you still suspecting me for Jun Wu Hui's death?"

"Why shouldn't I suspect you? At the time of those four baffling and humiliating victories, you were missing from your position as the teacher of the state. I dare to ask you, teacher of the state, where were you at such a critical time?" Zhao Jian Hun's face resembled a deadpan: "When the enemy was in front, had I gotten a chance to kill Jun Wu Hui, then I wouldn't have hesitated in claiming those victories! But he was killed by a last second intervention; otherwise he would have won the battles!"

Zhao Jian Hun suppressed his voice as he growled in a low tone: "The entire continent has been saying that Zhao Jian Hun was nothing more than a lucky general.... A lucky general... do you even understand how humiliating that is for a man like me?!!"

"Is personal honor more valuable to you than your country?" Fei Ming Chen's brow converged provocatively.

1 TL's note: Baihui Accupoint is an acupuncture point in the skull of a human where hundreds of acupuncture points coincide.



## Chapter 143: Yin and Yang escape

---

"Is personal honor more important to you than your country?" Fei Meng Chen raised his eyebrows provocatively.

"The personal honor of a military soldier?" Zhao Jian Hun smiled sadly: "Yes, and I've already told you that, but you wouldn't be able to understand it. You're so high and mighty that you'll never be able to understand the things mere men like me cares about it. How could you ever understand the honor of a military soldier, you just care about the results, right?!"

Fei Meng Chen laughed grimly and pointed to the Tian Xiang City: "You're not stupid, and even though you're not extremely strong but even you can sense that if a power like the one we just sensed participated in a war, then such a power could easily create a gold-banded empire in a very short period of time, and would be able to unify the entire Xuan Xuan continent under one banner! That would obviously mean the end of us! What would your military honor do then? As the teacher of the state, I need to look beyond your pedantic military honor! As far as Jun Wu Hui's death is concerned, I had no part in it! And even if I had to get him killed for the sake of the Yu Tang Empire, my conscious would still be clear!"

Zhao Jian Hun's spine erected like javelin, and then rotated slightly and he stated coldly: "You fire arrows behind people's backs and you still claim to have a clear conscious? This just shows that you have no ethics or morals."

Fei Meng Chen tried to control his temper, [What is this man? I have really never seen such a brain-dead man in my entire life. Each time we come to this topic, he starts acting like this... it's been ten years since that war, and he still can't accept it.....]

Inside the Tian Fa forest, a team of savage soldiers was walking steadily as they tried to make their way out of the forest step-by-



step!

This group of people was dressed in very ragged clothing; in fact most of them barely had any clothing hanging from their body. Most men were only wearing animal fur or hide, and just sufficient amount to cover their crotches, while their bodies were studded with scars from top to bottom. The almost dozen or more scars on each man's body made it impossible to detect the real color of their skins. It was evident from the scars on their bodies that these men had almost been delivered to doors of death several times!

It was obvious from the limp in the walk of several men that their legs were severely injured, but even then they were walking in a very solid and firm manner, refusing to accept a supporting shoulder from their comrades. The injured men were dragging their bodies with so much effort that they weren't even falling behind the rest of the party; no one was using any kind of support for help, not even crutches!

Even though their bodies looked exhausted, their spirits were still soaring high! Each pair of eyes were sharp and resolute, and the hundreds of such men in this team were enough to put any other platoon to shame; they would look no less than messengers of death, in case they were ever put on a battlefield!

Each person was carrying a package on their backs, and even the men with injuries were no exception. Each time a man would touch his package, a trace of pride would flash in the man's eyes. It was obvious that these men were carrying their winnings from their exploits in their backpacks!

They were resolutely walking step-by-step towards the Tian Xiang City and although their pace was slow, but their steps were extremely firm and stable. Although their eyes exuded a sense of urgency, their feet were still steady and no man was wavering from their steady pace of advance.

These people were the survivors from amongst the three

hundred Jun Family guards who had been sent to the Tian Fa forest on a suicide training mission by Jun Mo Xie! If these men were metallic ore a few months ago, then they had now been smelted into steel! If they were steel back then, then they had now been shaped into the sharp and murderous weapons now!

Two shadows suddenly breezed above the Tian Fa forest and over their heads from behind them, while the speed of their flight made a sharp piercing sound as these two flying objects made their way towards the Tian Xiang City. However, the occupants of these flying objects never saw the men in the Tian Fa forest below since they had already concealed themselves in the dark of the forest.

Jun Mo Xie felt another surge of Aura rushing through his body, and it felt as if his meridians would burst under the effect. As the Aura continued to flow through his meridians, it almost instantaneously filled his meridians up, but then disappeared into the Hongjun Pagoda, almost as if it was bottomless pit. Then soon the Aura started rewinding backwards in frenzy, and then the Hongjun Pagoda suddenly suspended the intake of Aura.

The flow of Aura continued to grow in his meridians, and but in a much more condensed form, and it seemed as if his meridians were now full! At this point, Jun Mo Xie had already gathered enough Aura to break past the bottleneck of the next layer of 'the art of unlocking the heaven's fortune', and easily managed to enter into the second state in one single swoop!

If Jun Mo Xie's new strength was measured by the standards of the Xuan Xuan continent, then he had already broken past the level nine Xuan cultivation mark, and had entered into the Silver Xuan realm! But in terms of his power's roles and functionality, even a Spirit Xuan wouldn't be able to match up to him!

This was equivalent to a big leap forward!

The Hongjun Pagoda had managed to absorb that entire Aura in a matter of moments, while the left over Aura continued to trickle

into the Pagoda slowly! The Aura was so massive that even the Hongjun Pagoda had been unable digest all of it in one go! Even though the Pagoda inhaled an ocean of Aura, there was no creation of waves inside it!

Jun Mo Xie had never anticipated that the Hongjun Pagoda would explode with such terrible force upon the excitation he had induced! He had never imagined that the sheer force of the Pagoda would have enough momentum to send the whole world trembling!

However, this didn't mean that Jun Mo Xie's power was unrivalled in this world. The Hongjun Pagoda was an ancient and mysterious object, which is why its natural starting point was so mighty, and even though Jun Mo Xie's strength had seen a major improvement, the improvement had only been proportionate to his original strength.

Since the Hongjun Pagoda had already absorbed the entire Aura in the atmosphere above, Jun Mo Xie's courtyard seemed perfectly normal now. In fact, it seemed as if it was the same as before, but in case someone entered his courtyard consciously seeking for a change, then they would notice it upon taking their first steps into the courtyard: the entire ground of his courtyard was now three inches below its original level! Shelves, tables, chairs, and stools which had once existed inside his courtyard had now disappeared without leaving a single trace behind, just the way ice melts in water.

Jun Mo Xie's face was covered with pain, and although he had already attempted to disconnect his energy from the Hongjun Pagoda several times, but he was unsuccessful since they were already locked-in very firmly. Since Jun Mo Xie had no idea about what was going on, he had no other option but to wait patiently.

Suddenly, the Hongjun Pagoda started to churn inside his body once again, and Jun Mo Xie felt a sharp and intense pain inside his brain. Then, the Hongjun Pagoda suddenly slowed down and the

rays of light which were previously surrounding it instantly disappeared. Simultaneously, Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt as if a strange image had been projected inside his mind.

"Days and nights are Yin and Yang, Heaven and Earth are Yin and Yang, the biochemical cycles of beings are Yin and Yang. A person is also a Yin Yang from the time of its origination, and whether faced with good luck or bad, and whichever side the person decides to show, everything is Yin and Yang. Everything can be hidden, and everything can be investigated, because everything will always remain.... Yin and Yang."

Yin and Yang escape!

Jun Mo Xie slowly read each and every word of this 'Yin and Yang escape' law, while pondering over them. He started to realize that this so-called 'Yin and Yang escape' method would require a lot of practice, but could eventually grant him means to hide his body anywhere and at any time. In fact, upon reaching its peak, this law could even allow him to hide his body in the air! He could escape into water for hundreds of years, or even bury himself in the mountains!

"The Hongjun Pagoda is definitely not an ordinary object. I could use something like this for....." Jun Mo Xie sighed contently. Suddenly an idea sprouted in his mind: [I could use this method to spy on beautiful women, such as my beautiful sister-in-law.....]

Just as this idea popped into his head, Jun Mo Xie spat on the ground below and shouted: "Jun Mo Xie, you might be dead now, but I still curse you for leaving such thoughts inside my head!"

If the original and now dead Jun Mo Xie had heard his words, then he would have certainly left wronged and would have complained: [Isn't this your own thinking Brother? The truth is that these ideas are your own, and they have nothing to do with me! So stop blaming me for your shamelessness.....]

Jun Mo Xie hadn't yet realized that this Yin and Yang escape law

wasn't as easy to comprehend as he was assuming it to be! There are only five elements in the world: metal, fire, water, wood, and earth, but understanding all five elements was beyond the scope of an ordinary man. Based on individual qualification and merit, a person could only hope for achieving specialization in one of these elements.

Although this Yin and Yang escape law had several limitations, it was still an advancement as compared to the first layer of 'the art of unlocking the heaven's fortune' since this would allow him to hide himself anywhere freely!

But Jun Mo Xie hadn't yet realized that the power of this law was extremely rare and great. Since he had gotten it from the Hongjun Pagoda, he was already beginning to take it for granted, but....

If the outside world found about such a power, then it would start a blood battle for this power - no man would show any shame in trying to procure such a power.....

Jun Wu Yi looked shocked as he cautiously stepped into the courtyard again, unsure of the ground he was stepping on. His advanced and keen Sky Xuan senses were enough to instantly discern that he was stepping on ground which was now three inches below its original position! The floor hadn't disappeared, and the land under his foot was still solid....

[How is this possible? The floor has eroded by three inches..... what kind of a terrible power is capable of doing this?!]

[That's not even the most surprising thing... what's even more surprising is that the flowers in the garden are still completely intact!]

[Such an intense and powerful force impacted this courtyard, and not even a single leaf was harmed..... that's just too weird!]

[But the most surprising thing is that the jade stools, on which our eight guests were sitting, were very sturdy and durable, and

even those stools have simply evaporated....]

[Land falls, things disappear, but why were the plants not harmed..... how could this outrageous phenomenon be explained?!]

"Mo Xie..... this....." Jun Wu Yi felt like he was in the middle of a dream as he gazed at his nephew, expecting his baby nephew to give a statement to explain this strange phenomenon.

## Chapter 144: Xuan Beast Advances?

---

Jun Mo Xie had just returned to his consciousness but the traces of the trance still lingered in his head: "I'm also very surprised Third Uncle, so don't ask me for an explanation because even I'm very confused and don't exactly know what's going on right now...."

Jun Wu Yi smiled tolerantly: "Well.... It wasn't all that bad."

Jun Mo Xie smiled regretfully at him and said: "It shouldn't be a bad thing." He paused and then said: "Did they see it?"

"I stunned them, and they are still a bit dizzy." Jun Wu Yi breathed a sigh of relief: "This happened very unexpectedly, so I don't think they noticed anything much!"

"This did indeed happen very unexpectedly, and you handled things very well uncle." Jun Mo Xie stood up. The Hongjun Pagoda was his greatest secret in this world, but moreover, it was his life insurance and something that he could lean-on to climb the ladders of success in this world. He simply couldn't disclose this secret to anyone; not even his loved ones. Some secrets are destined to be exclusive to one man.

Little White was unusually excited at this point, and was running around back and forth while jumping up and down all along. He was so excited that he would occasionally jump up in the air, and execute a somersault as well, but would always land very firmly on the ground; he hadn't crashed to the ground even once! In his state of excitement, he jumped up and grabbed a strand of Jun Mo Xie's hair, and started swaying back and forth from it as he continued to enjoy himself.

Jun Mo Xie looked helpless at this obviously overexcited little thing, and tried to convey to Little White with his eyes that he was taking it a bit too far now: "This little guy is not going to let me live peacefully... uncle I guess it's time to wake them up now."

"First you need to think of a possible explanation for this event so that they don't start suspecting anything unusual...." Jun Wu Yi started laughing, but then his eyes suddenly fell on Little White's body and his laughter abruptly broke off. As his eyes flashed a look of shock, he blurted out: "How's that possible? It, it actually advanced! This.... How's this even possible..... it was a level seven cub just a few minutes ago.... Now....holy!" the eyes of a Sky Xuan expert were obviously sharp enough to spot the little differences in the cub's body, and he couldn't help but burst out using foul language to express his astonishment.

Given Jun Wu Yi's character, it was obvious that he was under extreme shock at the moment, or else he would have never used such foul language. In fact, it could even be said that the man wouldn't forget his manners even if he was confronted with an actual ghost!

[A high-grade Xuan Beast was able to advance.... At the age of a cub!?]

[There is no other word for it... this is a miracle!]

"What are you saying?!" Jun Mo Xie grabbed the little thing, paying no attention to its rebellion and started turning it over and over again to inspect its body: "Nothing seems different, ah, or there are some slight changes....."

Jun Wu Yi remained silent: [I think my nephew has all the answers, or else he wouldn't be making such ridiculous arguments, right? A Xuan Beast's advance is obvious from one look on his body, how could he not have seen it by now?]

Little White seemed quite angry, and was constantly whining in rebellion; after all, he was now close to being a top-level Xuan beast and even if he liked Jun Mo Xie a lot, he still didn't like being treated in this manner! A despised Xuan Beast can often act like an ignored woman!

It must be said that even Xuan Beasts have their own limitation;



their advancements are limited by their talents. Iron Winged Panthers, especially high-level ones such as this level seven cub, are rarely able to reach the peak of level seven in their lifetime. Advancing to the next level may not be impossible for them, but it was still an extremely difficult task.

As far as Iron Winged Panthers were concerned, in order to make a breakthrough, the first prerequisite would be that their strength would have to reach its peak in the prime of their years, because once Xuan beast steps into the later years of its life, then even if their strength reaches its peak, their physical strength tends to decline due to their aging body, which makes it very hard for them to make a breakthrough. However, if a Xuan Beast is able to reach its peak strength in the prime of his age, its chances of advancing are still quite limited, and it doesn't necessarily mean that the beast would be able to successfully break past the barrier of grades. But in case a beast was able to make the breakthrough, then it was quite likely to get a lot of attention from the world since the beast was quite likely to produce some very high level treasures over the course of its remaining life span.

An Iron Winger Panther's cub was almost never likely to make a breakthrough. In fact, the vast majority of Iron Winged Panthers were only able to reach the peak of their strength in the later stages of their life. Moreover, it was very rare for an iron winged panther to reach its peak in the years of its prime!

But at the moment, Jun Wu Yi's eyes were staring at miracle like no other - The Iron Winged Panther cub in front of his eyes had already advanced to the next level at the age of a cub, and the whole world was likely to find out soon enough!

[Is this because of Mo Xie? He was just lying on Mo Xie's body, and then he just advanced?]

[No one else came in contact with that little thing this entire time!]

[What is going on?]

[Miracle? Is this a miracle?]

"That, right there... that's a big change, isn't it?" Jun Wu Yi pointed the little guy's body: "Your Aura gave it the strength to make the advancement; that earth shattering momentum was the reason... how are we going to hide this from the rest of the world?..... that's a level eight iron winger panther cub now!" Jun Wu Yi was still going crazy.

In reality level eight Iron Winged Panther cubs, even though were extremely rare, weren't exactly unheard off, but a level seven cub advancing to a level eight cub was almost unprecedented in the entire Xuan Xuan continent..... it was certainly unprecedented!

"Advanced or not advanced, that's none of my business, I know nothing about what happened here....." Jun Mo Xie innocently spread his arms out: "It simply advanced on its own.... What do I have to do with that? Why are you giving me credit for this?"

"You're just pretending to be unaware of this." Jun Wu Yi exhaled heavily, and stared at his nephew fiercely: "We cannot be careless... sooner or later people will find out that this cub has advanced to level eight!"

In one sense of perspective, even Jun Wu Yi was being ignorant to the benefits of this little cub since he was failing to see its value and its boundless future!

"This wasn't a complete accident...." Jun Mo Xie knew that his useless and weak excuses had left without many options, and the young master Jun was already contemplating means to dispose off this anomaly stricken beast since he too knew that people were quite likely to find out. He was already thinking of finding means to prove that this beast was plagued, and would then try to convince its young master to send it away since he really didn't care much about the beast's fate!

"What just happened?" Dugu Ying entered into the courtyard again, while his eyes were still swirling from dizziness; his six brothers followed after him in a similar fashion: "Third Uncle, why did you hit me?" Dugu Ying wouldn't dare to be even slightly rude to Jun Wu Yi, and address him as 'Third Uncle' since the Dugu Brothers had always been taught from early childhood that they must never speak rudely to a few men since they would need to learn from these men if they ever hoped to achieve anything in their life. The first one was obviously their grandfather, Dugu Zong Heng; then the next one was their father/uncle, Dugu Wudi, followed by the man in front - Jun Wu Yi. And last but not the least, their father or uncle, Dugu Wudi's brother.

"Hit you? Why? You all took a few drinks from my wine the other day, and since some of those wine jars were still lingering around here when you got here, you simply sniffed its scent in the air and passed out; I estimate that it was just a side-effect of the medication.... But you guys are really useless, aren't you?" Jun Mo Xie stared at them with a look of extreme contempt in his eyes: "Your life must be so difficult, I mean just look at your seven big and burly selves, and you still fainted by just smelling a wine, ha ha....."

The seven brothers raised their hands and scratched their head simultaneously to hide their embarrassment: "So that's what happened..."

Jun Wu Yi's movement had been so quick, and his control on his strength was so exquisite, that even though the seven brothers had faintly seen him springing into the air, they had never seen him attack them. At present, their mind was in such a chaos, that even the mention of that wine reminded them of its smell and taste, and on top of that since their bodies felt the same hangover-ish feeling that they had felt at the time when they had woken up from their slumber, that they simply assumed that Jun Mo Xie was telling the truth, and forgot about everything else.

In fact, they didn't even realize that they hadn't noticed any wine jars in the courtyard earlier....

As for the new changes in the decoration of the Jun courtyard, those seven thick-skinned brothers were highly unlikely to take notice of it anyway....

Dugu Xiao Yi was the only one who wasn't about to get fooled so easily, and just when she narrowed her eyes questioningly, Little White suddenly jumped out of Jun Mo Xie's embrace and sprung into her arms. He continued to move about her arms, almost as if he was trying to say: [master, you see, I have advanced, wow, ha ha ha. Why are you not happy about it? The uncle almost popped his eyes out in disbelief....]

"Little White, you're so cute..." Dugu Xiao Yi started stroking her pet cherishingly as her eyes narrowed into a crescent shape. She felt extremely happy all of a sudden since she had never seen her pet so happy and excited before.

Little White's show-off had gone in vain, even though the young maiden was quite intelligent, but due to her limited knowledge, she had no idea that the little cub had already advanced. In fact, she had always treated the Iron Winged Panther cub as a puppy or kitten in general, and had always just treated him as house pet instead of a high level Xuan Beast!

"You seven need to follow me." Jun Wu Yi started moving his wheelchair: "Let me see what Dugu Wudi has taught you."

The seven brothers looked at each other excitedly. They could tell that Jun Wu Yi had addressed them, and were under the impression that he was about to teach them something.

One of the Dugu Brothers immediately stationed himself behind Jun Wu Yi's wheelchair, and started pushing it; in fact, he was so careful that he made that sure that he pushed Jun Wu Yi's wheelchair so gently and smoothly that Jun Wu Yi wouldn't feel any bumps or jerks, as they led him away. The seven of them didn't

even realize that they were leaving their younger sister alone with Jun Mo Xie.... They had completely forgotten the reason behind their visit....

As the seven of them herded behind his uncle, fascinated by his charms, Jun Mo Xie finally breathed a sigh of relief.

"Miss Dugu, I still recall that I owe you one from the other day." Jun Mo Xie sat up straight as he smiled and said.

# Chapter 145: The First Knife of Tian Xiang

---

The moment he mentioned it, the questions immediately faded away from Dugu Xiao Yi's mind, and she pouted her lips: "You're a bad guy; since you tricked that lump of metal away from me, so now you owe me a knife!"

She paused, and then continued in an authentically angry tone: "If the knife isn't good enough, and I'm not happy with it, then it will not count." Even though she was trying to appear angry, her face was still blushing. After all, as a girl, this would be the first time that she'd get to accept a gift from a boy; however, she was afraid that he may not give her one....

"Then Mo Xie must produce a knife which is of enough quality to satisfy you." Jun Mo Xie smiled as he got up and said this. Then, he walked into his room and returned very quickly while holding a sheathed knife in his hands.

The sheath of the knife was very elegantly curved, and the onion skinned sheath seemed almost weightless in Jun Mo Xie's hands, but anyone could tell that the weapon's appearance was deceptive to say the least. The elegant and ethereal feel of the scabbard obviously seemed to be contradicting the solid feel of the blade inside.

Dugu Xiao Yi liked the weapon the moment she saw it, and started looking at Jun Mo Xie with big blinking eyes, expecting him to present the weapon.

Jun Mo Xie noted her expression, and slowly pulled out the knife by its hilt. The knife made no sound as it left its scabbard. A pool of light flashed from the surface of the blade, almost as if Jun Mo Xie was holding a shiny river which was flowing unrestrained through the galaxy.

It seemed as if the blade had its own Xuan Qi, which was flowing back and forth its body.

"A pocket knife." Jun Mo Xie's fingers gently stroked the edge of the knife as he said: "This is a pocket knife which can be concealed in your sleeve; since this is first knife of its kind in the Tian Xiang City, I've named it 'the First knife of Tian Xiang'!"

"The First Knife of Tian Xiang! That's a very nice name." Dugu Xiao Yi's gleaming eyes were fixed at the blade in Jun Mo Xie's hands as she impatiently waited to get her hands on it. [Hmmmm, what's such a beautiful knife compared to that ugly piece of metal? I think that it's a good thing that the raw metal fell into Jun Mo Xie's hands.]

"The curvature, length, and weight of this knife are perfect for concealing it in your sleeves. Take a look and see if this suits your hands?" Jun Mo Xie gently handed the knife over to her.

"This is really beautiful. Do you really wish to give this to me?" Dugu Xiao Yi took the knife and started twisting and turning it over and over again. She held the knife in her hands for a while, then she twisted her head slightly and looked at Jun Mo Xie expectantly.

"Of course. Do you like it Miss Dugu?" Jun Mo Xie faintly smiled at her.

"Of course I do." Dugu Xiao Yi shyly looked down, "But you're giving me such a good knife, and I have nothing to give you in return....."

"I owed you this knife, so there's no need for you to reciprocate." Jun Mo Xie almost laughed out. This little girl is so naive.

"So be it." Dugu Xiao Yi bit her lips, seemingly undetermined; she pulled off a thin thread from around her neck and placed a small jade pendant in her hands: "I ..... I..... give you this in return." Dugu Xiao Yi's head was still bowed down as she subconsciously started grinding her toes.

"Thank you." Jun Mo Xie received the pendant in a 'well-

deserved' manner. Little did the extremely low emotional-quotient-owning hitman realize that this gift had a special meaning behind it. As far as he was concerned, this little piece of jade was the least possible compensation that he could have received for the amazingly refined and unique blade which he had crafted for her.

Given the built of the knife, it would face no resistance from the wind, and when in use, the curvature of the blade would glide through the air, almost to the point where it would remain hidden even while being in action. Even though this was a woman's choice of weapon, but it was still extremely sharp and tenacious. So obviously, from his perspective, the tiny pendant which he had just received from her wasn't a fair trade for his knife.

"This jade..... you, you...." As she placed the pendant in his hand, she became even more self-conscious and started stammering, unable to frame her words properly.

"Does Miss Dugu have something on her mind? Oh, and I presume that Miss Dugu must be very proficient in using knives?" Jun Mo Xie smiled slyly. He had only used about two-tenths of the metal piece to create this knife, while the rest had been used to make throwing knives; so he naturally didn't mind giving this blade to her.

"Knife? Uh, of course." Dugu Xiao Yi heard him say 'something on your mind', and couldn't help but blush. But since Jun Mo Xie had also questioned her skill, she got excited as said: "I will demonstrate for you to see."

She was already finding it very hard to stand in front of Jun Mo Xie after exchanging gifts with him, so she withdrew backwards and raised her hand, brandishing the knife, and demonstrated her skills.

Although she had been trained using the conventional methods of this world, but her movements were far inferior to Jun Mo Xie's



skillset. Even though the blade was accurately designed to suit the little hands of women, the blade appeared longer and heavier in her hands; in fact, the extraordinary knife suddenly seemed very normal when she used it to demonstrate her skill.

Jun Mo Xie watched her practice, and then sighed. Ever since he had been subjected to train under the guidance of Jun Wu Yi and Jun Zhan Tian, he had realized that the people in this world gave too much importance to the cultivation of their Xuan Qi, and barely paid any attention to their skills in general. Obviously, as long as the Xuan Qi of a person was higher than their counterpart, they'd be able to overpower the enemy with brute force, but would still be vulnerable in a way since they weren't very well equipped to handle tricky opponents. It was almost unimaginable for the people of this world that a mere Silver Xuan could beat a Spirit Xuan by using better tactics.....

It was this myth which had given rise to the notion, 'Anyone under Silver Xuan realm is an ant!'.

However, even in this world, when two people of equal strength faced each other in combat, then the winner would inevitably be decided by the superiority of techniques and skills in general.

This was especially more important in the case of women like Dugu Xiao Yi since if they tried to seek a competition on the basis of pure strength, then they were bound to lose!

The innate strength of a woman is lesser than that of a man; there are no two ways about it!

"The chewing Ox ah." Jun Mo Xie sighed and made sure that he was audible to Dugu Xiao Yi: "That's a good knife technique, but you see that this law is overly taxing on your knife!"

"You think that my knife skills are good?" Dugu Xiao Yi stood up straight as she looked at Jun Mo Xie with a sparkle in her eyes.

"Yes, but this won't be enough. The problem doesn't reside with

the knife, but with the dull usage of it." Jun Mo Xie bluntly took the knife from her hands and stepped back diagonally. Then he tilted the angle of the knife and rolled it to demonstrate his skills. Even though the skill he demonstrated was elegant and seemingly harmless, it was still enough to push back four to five opponents in a fight.

"It's a beautiful technique." Dugu Xiao Yi applauded as her eyes reflected a hint of desire.

"This is the first law of pocket knives: Pocket Knife soft winnowing." Jun Mo Xie stopped, smiled and said: "Pocket knives have a total of nine strokes. The pocket knife soul dance is said to be the best law.... Do you wish to learn it?"

"Of course!" Dugu Xiao Yi almost jumped up as she positioned herself right in front of Jun Mo Xie: "Teach me." Since the two of them were very close to each other at this point, her words sprayed a hot air on Jun Mo Xie's face along with a strong sense of a fragrant aroma. As Jun Mo Xie's nostrils inhaled Dugu Xiao Yi's sweet bodily fragrance, his mind started feeling weirdly soothed.

He immediately recoiled backwards, and then thought to himself: [teach, just teach, what am I afraid of?] And then he again stepped forward.

Dugu Xiao Yi saw the manner in which he blushed, [I never thought that such renowned debauchee of the Tian Xiang City would shy away and blush so much from the mere scent of a woman!] With this thought in her mind, she deliberately moved closer to his body with the idea of menacing and teasing him; but as she moved forward, her body came so close to Jun Mo Xie's, that their lips almost came in contact with each other's.....

At this point, Jun Mo Xie had just jerked backwards, and was moving back into his previous position, and was suddenly met with a shock - their lips were seamlessly in contact with each other's, while their eyes were roundly staring at each other in

shock.....

Then, the knife left Dugu Xiao Yi's hands and fell to the ground as her mind was sent into a state of complete inactivity, while her entire body stiffened, unable to comprehend a means of escape.

Jun Mo Xie had just moved forward and had felt the soft touch of her lips along with her sweet fragrance, but hadn't yet been able to comprehend the meaning of it. Subconsciously, he stuck out his tongue and licked her upper lip; feeling a sense of enjoyment, he couldn't help feeling her lower lip as well.....

"Ah!" Dugu Xiao Yi screamed as her jade-shaded face suddenly turned red; it seemed as if her entire body was fervently blushing since even her neck had also become red at this point. She covered her face with her hands and squatted down to the ground, and started breathing heavily; but not loudly.

He, he kissed me! Dugu Xiao Yi' mind was in a state of complete turmoil. [He gave me a knife, I gave him my jade pendant, and then he kissed me.... I, I, I , I, I....]

"Uh, it was an accident; really, it was just an accident." Jun Mo Xie was a bit embarrassed since he had subconsciously stuck out his tongue and had licked her upper lip, and had then proceeded to her lower one. His position of a teacher had inadvertently transformed to that of a rogue without his realization.....

Little White had seen the action made by Jun Mo Xie's tongue, and couldn't help getting excited. He instantaneously jumped up into Jun Mo Xie's arms and then licked his lips in the same manner.

[Oh Gosh! I was actually just indecently assaulted by this little thing.....] Jun Mo Xie quickly grabbed the cub and tossed it away. In the face of such trouble, Jun Mo Xie seemed to have lost his charms.

"Miss Dugu, you, you need to get up... If you remain seated with

your eyes covered, then how will you learn the knife techniques?" Jun Mo Xie tried to rescue the situation.

"I'm not getting up!" Dugu Xiao Yi voice sounded like a mosquito's hum: "You, you.....are bad.... How can you call me Miss Dugu after treating me like that?"

# Chapter 146: The Envoys from two countries

---

"I'm a bit confused, what did I do?" Jun Mo Xie scratched his hair: "Then how should I address you?"

"Well, you know!" Dugu Xiao Yi stomped her feet: [I've never seen such an idiot!]

"I know?" Jun Mo Xie frowned as he pondered, but then noticed a sudden and slight movement as Dugu Xiao Yi parted her fingers, which were covering her eyes, in order to secretly watch Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie finally started to understand: [Ah, now it seems that our relationship is changing. I was trying to teach her, so now our relationship is changing to that of a master and student... ...] "Little girl is now my disciple; hurry and get up, your master is waiting to teach you an exquisite knife law."

"You're no teacher of mine!" Dugu Xiao Yi didn't jump up the way he was expecting her to; instead, she extended her foot and stomped on his. Moreover, she didn't stop here, and went on to stomp on his feet a few more times: "What makes you think that you're qualified enough to be my teacher?!"

Jun Mo Xie was caught completely off guard since he had never expected his student to act so outrageously. He winced and said: "... ..respect your teacher!"

"Teacher my ass! Respect my ass! You think that you can use this 'knife law' lie to exploit me? I'm telling you.... I don't want to learn your stupid knife law; you're just a scoundrel! Nothing more!" Dugu Xiao Yi seemed so infuriated that it appeared as if she'd pounce on him with her claws and tear him to pieces! [I'm angry! You're a bad guy! And a blockhead! You're such a stupid, unromantic idiot!]

"This is ridiculous! How am I a scoundrel? And how am I bad

guy?!" Jun Mo Xie was completely flabbergasted, and couldn't help thinking; [this is a big injustice... ... the previous Mo Xie was a bad guy; but I've been nothing short of a savior for the Jun Family... why should I have to bear this... ...]

[I really don't know what this girl is up to... I just helped her little pet evolve, and then I gave her such a good knife, and now I'm even trying to teach her a great knife technique, but she's still saying these things to me... This is unfair! I already told her that the kiss was an accident! And it's not like this was the first time she's kissed a guy, and even if it was her first time, then it was my first as well... so it's really me who's at a loss here...]

[Wait a minute?! Is she thinking that I'm interested in her because I kissed her?] Jun Mo Xie's entire body shivered as he realized that the body of a female starts to mature at the age of sixteen as opposed to their male counterparts...

[I hope not... I haven't had enough of my bachelor days yet...]

"Never mind then, quickly teach me the knife law! I hope that you know one, and weren't just bragging!" She stomped on his foot again grumpily, and then bit her lips; even though she wanted to leave, she didn't. She had managed to arrange a meeting with him after facing a lot of difficulty, and even then her seven brothers had accompanied her...

[I have no idea when we'll be able to meet again...But this idiot... ...] Dugu Xiao Yi almost felt like weeping: [this idiot... He, he kissed me... even my parents have never kissed me on my lips, and... ... And on top of that, since he's such a renowned debauchee, I'm sure that he's kissed plenty of women before; this was certainly not his first time...]

Even though Dugu Xiao Yi was behaving like a normal teenage girl at the moment, a normal human would still never be able to understand her thoughts!

"You're forcing me to teach you after disrespecting me like that?"

Do you think I owe you something, or what?" Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes as he shouted at her.

She stared at him with her big round eyes, which had suddenly become red, and then tears started dripping down from the corner of her eyes: "You're bullying me... .." her heart was harboring unbounded grievances: [First this bastard kisses me after I gave him my jade pendant, and now he's shouting at me! I have to go; did no one teach this idiot about courting a young woman?]

"Well- " Jun Mo Xie sighed loudly, but felt very weak within: God! Why is this girl so hard to keep up with? The Hitman was very experienced in handling all kinds of worldly affairs; in fact, his experience was very, very, very extensive. But courting the heart of a young maiden was almost like Greek to him!

Little White was standing perplexed between the two of them, and was constantly looking from one person to the other. Even the little cub could tell that the two of them were having a fight, but couldn't understand why... or how he could sort it out.

"I want to go... ..Uncle Jun... I'm going to tell my grandfather and Uncle Jun that you are bullying me again... I hate you! I hate you!" Dugu Xiao Yi burst out crying again, and turned around to leave.

Jun Mo Xie hastily pulled her back: "Hey, don't go...I made a mistake, okay?"

This was definitely the first time that the Hitman had ever made a confession in both his lives!

"Let go of me! Men and women aren't supposed to touch each other! No one taught you that?" Dugu Xiao Yi puffed her cheeks and tilted her head.

Jun Mo Xie remained silent; [but the last time you went about spreading a rumor, your seven brothers landed straight on my doorstep. If you go around crying again, then who knows... Maybe

your grandfather will personally lead his army to my bedroom! Ah, God, what sins did I commit for having to endure such a bitter life?]

"Fine, I'll teach you." Jun Mo Xie seemed to be begging for mercy... Under his own roof!

"Well!" Dugu Xiao Yi grunted heavily: "First be a little sensitive" Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized that his big hand was still holding onto her arm, and couldn't help turn red with embarrassment. Meanwhile, Dugu Xiao Yi's voice had turned extremely soft and shy: "You, you need to release my arm... .."

Jun Mo Xie released his hold on her arm, and started scratching his head; [I really don't know what this girl is trying to do? In just a matter of a few breaths, her moods have actually transformed back and forth at least five or six times... how can this be normal?] It was obviously beyond the comprehension of Jun Mo Xie's intelligence that a person could be capable of shifting their mind frame so much... And so quickly...

[No wonder people often say that women are the world's most difficult animals to comprehend! This remark is certainly true ah!]

"Okay, pocket knives have a total of nine strokes." Jun Mo Xie picked up the pocket knife again, and affixed it to his armpit: "The first one: Pocket Knife soft winnowing..." Jun Mo Xie was in a hurry to teach her the law at this point so he could quickly send this girl away. Anyway, the law he was teaching was just a pocket knife law, and not a very profound martial law by any means. [Keeping this girl here ... .. it is just too much of a task.]

"The Second stroke:" "The Third stroke: Pocket Knife dream..."

Pocket Knife cloud, Pocket Knife Wind dance, Pocket Knife falling thunder, Pocket Knife flash, Pocket Knife Dream ruins, Pocket Knife universe... ..

Dugu Xiao Yi seemed to be very gifted and was extremely



intelligent as well. On top of that, her memory was so sharp that she actually managed to memorize the entire skill set in just half an hour, even though Jun Mo Xie had taught her some very complex postures. However, just when it seemed that they were done, she suddenly started intentionally messing up the most basic of postures, which she was able to perform perfectly just a few moments ago. Naturally Jun Mo Xie had to approach closer to her body in order to correct her postures; so some amount of physical contact was almost inevitable...

Jun Mo Xie's body was very tenacious in a physical sense, but he was still dripping sweat while teaching her; meanwhile, Dugu Xiao Yi seemed to be training with high spirits, so much so that her cheeks were flushed... ..

From Jun Mo Xie's point of view, the task was extremely arduous; but from Dugu Xiao Yi's point of view, the scene was a beautiful romantic sight between two lovers... however, since Jun Mo Xie's emotional quotient was close to zero, the hitman was obviously left complaining to the heavens: [She is so stupid! Why do I have to teach her the same thing over and over again...]

Just then, an unexpected noise of cannons sounded outside the Jun residence. The almost deafening sound was followed by the sounds of soldiers unmounting their horses and approaching the gates of the Jun residence.

"What's happening?" they both hesitated, and involuntarily stopped their training. Jun Mo Xie wiped off the sweat from his face. Even though he was inwardly relieved, he felt a bit strange: [I was finding this exercise a bit tough, but then how was this girl able to carry on? Is this little girl hiding her strength...? How did I not notice it?]

He had already realized that Dugu Xiao Yi was quite intelligent at the time when she had been able to memorize the second stroke in just one attempt, but hadn't figured out that she was intentionally playing the moves wrong at the moment. The whole process hadn't

been tiring in the least for her... ... how could it have been, the little girl was obviously too busy feeling shy and happy about learning this skill from the man of her dreams... ...

It seemed that a difference in state of mind was indeed enough to induce a difference in physical endurance!

"The Yu Tang Empire's State Teacher, Fei Meng Chen is arriving in the Tian Xiang City with his troops. He's already outside the city gates at the moment." Jun Wu Yi was pushed out to the front of the gate by the Dugu Brothers. "Also, he is being accompanied by the famous general of the Yu Tang Empire, Zhao Jian Hun; his Majesty has already sent the great prince to greet them into the city."

The moment Jun Wu Yi spoke the name 'Zhao Jian Hun', a strange light shone in his eyes.

"In addition, the Shen Ci Empire's top Xuan Qi expert is also arriving with his troops, and will coincidentally be arriving today as well. His Majesty will also be sending the other two princes to greet them. His Majesty is making preparations to send out the three princes to meet the envoys from the two countries." Jun Wu Yi smiled faintly.

"His Majesty's arrangements can already be described as pretty good ah." Jun Mo Xie praised loudly. He was well aware that these two envoys were certainly arriving in the Tian Xiang City with ulterior motives, but sending the three princes to receive them in full force was obviously very good thinking on the Emperor's part.

"His Majesty is just experimenting again." Jun Wu Yi smiled again. "It won't be surprising if the Emperor ends up choosing his successor by the time the Capital sees the end of this event."

Jun Mo Xie was somewhat puzzled, and so he asked: "Why do you say that?"

"Diplomacy is a very delicate activity, and one needs to apply just

the right amount of pressure at the points. In the eagerness to gain power, all the three princes will try to gain the support of the neighboring Empires, and their attitudes will dictate the future of governance of this country. The attitudes of the three princes will have a very far reaching effect in the future, so this is going to be a very decisive test for the three of them."

## Chapter 147: A chance encounter

---

Jun Wu Yi's eyes were half shut since he felt a bit intoxicated after clearing his nephew's doubt. Jun Wu Yi had grown accustomed to being corrected by his young nephew nowadays, and this was a rare event where he had gotten a chance to lend his experience to his nephew.

"Let's go and watch the show." Jun Mo Xie squinted his eyes. The three princes were definitely up to no good, and no matter what the king had in mind, he didn't trust the three princes to do anything favorable for the Jun Family.

The seven brothers of the Dugu Family cheered in unison; Dugu Xiao Yi also nodded while still holding Little White in her arms and then slowly leaned closer to Jun Mo Xie and whispered in his ear: "That whole scene was our secret, right? I will not speak about it to any, and I won't ask you to either."

She paused for a second and then continued: "But if there's anything at all, you will tell me, right?" Jun Mo Xie turned around to look at her. As he looked into the eyes of the young maiden, he sensed a delicate trace of shyness and affection in them, but her eyes still looked firm: [I am determined to never harm you, and nor will I ever embarrass you.] Her eyes were clearly expressing these words.

At this moment, the warmth of a strange feeling softened Jun Mo Xie's heart, and he raised his hand to stroke her hair, but didn't speak anything in reply. There was no need for words here!

Pop! Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt a force on his hand as a big hand slapped his palm aside; Dugu Chong was staring at him red-eyed: "Boy, you think you can treat my sister cheaply whenever you feel like it? If you touch her again then I'll cut your hand off!"

That mild feeling of warmth which had just smoldered in the hitman's heart suddenly vanished.

Dugu Xiao Yi watched the sharp transformation in his expression, but could only apologetically smile at him in compensation.

As they moved through the crowded street of the capital, the Dugu Brothers intentionally kept themselves positioned between Jun Mo Xie and their sister. Jun Mo Xie was moving very quickly, and was constantly switching directions, and soon managed to put a distance between himself and the others; soon enough, he disappeared into the crowd.

The young maiden continued to look for Jun Mo Xie for a while, but couldn't find him; she helplessly glanced over at her brothers and pouted in disapproval. Little White on the other hand, had already gone off to sleep in her arms by now. Even though the young cub seemed full of energy after his successful evolution, he was actually very tired since the process had been very difficult and painful. However, since he was very excited, he couldn't help jumping about; but now that things had calmed down from his perspective, he fell into a deep sleep like any other child; a very deep and special sleep.

After successfully blending into the crowd, Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel a sense of relaxation. Even though he was only walking forward aimlessly, but he felt as if a great pressure had been lifted off his shoulders since he no longer had that little girl around to bind him down.

Little did the amateur realize that his silhouette had already been imprinted into the mind of the young maiden; and even though that impression wasn't the best, it had certainly left a very deep imprint!

"So, it's that kid again huh. Ha ha, the last we met, you abused me, and then you turned around and left. But today you can't leave." A familiar voice sounded from Jun Mo Xie's left hand side. Jun Mo Xie turned around and saw a middle aged man walking towards him with a smile on his face; the man was being followed

by two bodyguards. The man raised his hand to pat Jun Mo Xie's broad but thin and slender shoulders.

The Jun Mo Xie who had previously occupied this body had already damaged the physique of this body to such an extent due to his eating, drinking and 'entertainment' habits that this raw body wasn't worth more than garbage after his exit. After the hitman had taken the command of this corporeal body, even his extensive training and the support of the Hongjun Pagoda were only able to tune the muscle structure of the body. As far as general appearance was concerned, his body still looked very similar to the one which had been left behind by the debauchee.

Jun Mo Xie flashed backwards and escaped his hand. The hitman wasn't accustomed to being touched by random strangers without notice, and was quite surprised to realize that he hadn't acted to launch a reflexive counter attack in return. Jun Mo Xie raised his eyebrows and said: "Neither can you."

Although he had only seen a glimpse of the man, the hitman was quickly able to recall that this was the same man who he had met on that rainy mid-autumn afternoon, when he had ventured out to the little shop. As chance has it... that was day when Jun Mo Xie had acquired the Peak level Nine Xuan Core.

Today, that very same peak of level nine Xuan Core had attracted a strong external interference, putting the Tian Xiang City in a delicate situation; and coincidentally, he had bumped into that very same man again. Jun Mo Xie just sighed deeply as he wondered, [the world really is round... and small... ...]

"I don't want to." The middle-aged man didn't seem to take any offence to Jun Mo Xie's movement, and laughed: "I wonder why we have met again in world full of so many people, little brother. It seems that we are destined to meet each other by fate."

Jun Mo Xie sensed a hilarious contrast in this situation; he had always used 'destined to meet by fate' phrase to charm Dugu Xiao

Yi in order to extract undue advantages, and now this big man was suddenly using the same phrase on him to make unwanted advances; in fact, he almost felt as if he was being molested by this big man. Jun Mo Xie finally understood Dugu Xiao Yi's perspective; [but why is a middle-aged man saying this to me? Is he interested in young boys...?]

"Since we're destined to meet each other, what should I call you?" Jun Mo Xie knew that he hadn't been in a good mood at the time of their previous encounter, and had inadvertently cursed the man.

"Hmm... You're trying to dodging the bullet here kid. That day when you came into the Old Song Tavern, you abused this old man, didn't you?" the middle-aged man said out aloud: "You said that my cherished wine wasn't good enough for you, wasn't that an abuse? And then you said that there isn't a man who is worthy of drinking on the same table as you! That sentence clearly indicated that I wasn't qualified enough to keep you company... That certainly qualifies as an abuse, doesn't it? Hmmm..."

Jun Mo Xie inwardly exclaimed twice as he stared at the face of that 'old man'; then looked at the man's body from top to bottom, and guessed that the man was no more than forty... [He's claiming to be an old man? Has the word 'old' lost its value in this world? He's in his thirties... forty at best... and he's still calling himself an 'old man'? That's a bit weird...]

"Finally willing to admit it?" the middle-aged man smiled slyly: "If you're really sorry, then how do you think you should apologize for it?"

Jun Mo Xie was left speechless, [is this person real?] Unable to come up with anything else, he said: "I would make amends to you, but being shameless is the style at this time of the year."

"Cough..." The middle-aged man coughed for a second and then broke into laughter: "Only a real gentleman is capable of cursing another man without making it seem dirty. But how did a young

lad such as yourself manage to get away from an old man like me?"

"Ten years could be the same as one, and one year could be the same as ten. If we meet again and I'm the father of seven or eight children by then, then I could also claim to be an old man, but would I really be old? Who can say for sure..." Jun Mo Xie snorted back.

"Ha ha ha... So be it, but stop teasing me; come and join me for a drink." The middle-aged man laughed heartily, and then started pulling Jun Mo Xie along.

"Do I know you? What makes you think that you can pull me for a drink so casually?" Jun Mo Xie frowned.

"When you meet someone by chance, you always stop for a drink; no matter east or west. Then, why should I care about your identity?" The eccentric middle-aged man smiled: "Since we have agreed that we were destined to meet by fate, then why shouldn't we drink a few cups of wine?!"

"You've got a point!" Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt as if this this guy had an appetite for sly words and he suddenly felt as if he had met someone he could be friends with for the first time in his entire life; naturally Jun Mo Xie was interested in having a drink with that man now.

In fact, the hitman had never made many friends in his previous life either; he had always been a bit of a loner...

"Are you waiting to see Yu Tang's state teacher, Fei Meng Chen's entry into the city?" the middle-aged man smiled subtly.

"Why not? I think that a scene as lively as this one must be looked at; after all, the state teacher of another country is making his entry into ours... it should be a fun sight." Jun Mo Xie smiled merrily.

"Watch the crowd? That's good, but in the end they are all just a bunch of this Empire's enemies accompanied by an old bastard,



who will now be allowed to openly walk around the city with selfish intentions concealed in their hearts!" the man's smile seemed to be fading at this point: "Today we are welcoming them, but no matter how enthusiastically we honor them, when the two armies come face to face in war, no one will show any leniency while killing the other! So, what's the point of such a big charade?!"

"Yu Tang Empire's state teacher or not, I don't really care!" the middle-aged man seemed very dissatisfied.

"Well said." Jun Mo Xie applauded: "That remark itself is enough to drink two cups of wine."

"You say that the Old Song's wine isn't good enough? Have you ever tasted the rarest of their rarest wines?" the middle-aged didn't seem to be mocking him, and it appeared as if he was genuinely thinking of a very rare and high-quality wine.

Jun Mo Xie chose to keep his head down, and said: "I will not dilute the argument by speaking against something I've never experienced; the facts always speak louder than words to a fair mind!" The middle-aged man laughed since he realized that he'd have to prove his argument, and drew Jun Mo Xie along with him.

The gates opened and the Great Prince received the Yu Tang Empire's state teacher as the guest strode into the city with at least a dozen horses by his side, and rode to the Prince's side through the welcoming ranks of the City's royal soldiers, which lined up along the street to greet him. As they strode through the street, the Great Prince maintained a tall and straight posture on his horse back. Seemingly in high-spirits, the Great Prince would often talk and smile with his guest while pointing at the streets, almost as if he was introducing the city to the Yu Tang Empire's state teacher.

The middle-aged man turned around to look at the Prince one last time, sighed, shook his head, and then turned away.

The Middle-aged man led Jun Mo Xie through some of the

narrower alleys of the city, and kept turning left and right on short intervals, almost as if he was extremely familiar with the map of the city, and soon reached the Old Song Tavern. Jun Mo Xie looked at the man's dressing and wondered, [that seemed a bit weird for a man of his status, right? How's this man so familiar with the trails of this market?]

"The last time we met at this Old Song Tavern, you told me that you had tasted better wines... so now quickly bring out that better wine and show it to this old man." As Jun Mo Xie heard these words, and the manner in which they were spoken, he suddenly felt as if he had been betrayed. [His posture seems to resemble that of a hitman looking at the bounty on the head of his employer's enemy... ...]

"What? What do you mean by that?" Jun Mo Xie widened his eyes as he stared at the man.

## Chapter 148: It was you!

---

"I come to the Old Song's tavern to drink wine. Apart from this, I only have one more hobby; and that's to taste the best wines in the entire Tian Xiang Empire. I largely appreciated your words the last time we met, and I even went about asking about you in the entire Tian Xiang City in order to find you. When I finally saw your face in the crowd today, I was only obliged to laugh at fate. You told me that you've tasted better wines, so now you need to prove it." The middle-aged man rubbed his hands to conceal the embarrassment on his face. But the look on his face seemed more conspiring than embarrassing to Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie was silent for a while; ever since he had come into this world, he had been using other people to extort his needs, but today this middle-aged man had given him a taste of his own medicine. There were tiny clues sprinkled all along, but Jun Mo Xie simply hadn't been able to spot them... ..

[This is an insult to my name! The young master Jun simply cannot allow people to find out about this! You pretended to be an 'old man', and this young master treated you properly! Why would you do such a thing?!]

[How do I get out of this situation now?!]

The thin middle-aged man hunched a bit and took a few steps backwards as he said: "We have a truly honored guest in our presence today; remember I told you about that youngster the other day but you wouldn't believe me... Well, he's here to save my face, and you'll finally get to meet him. Come, come out quickly." The man said these words not to Jun Mo Xie, but to someone else...

The thick-skinned middle aged man went inside into the back of the shop. As for his two body guards, they had already disappeared from sight and were presumably hidden in the dark somewhere nearby.

Jun Mo Xie's heart hesitated a bit as the middle-aged man returned with a slightly older man since it seemed that he had seen this man before. The feel and the stature of this man wasn't evidently familiar, but Jun Mo Xie still felt a bit strange in his mind. As that man smiled at Jun Mo Xie, the young master Jun started thinking harder about his identity.

"I've heard very highly of your words, and I've thought a lot about these ones in particular: 'the true act of drinking is to drink to one's emotions! Or even to one's thoughts! Pouring wine into one's belly cannot be considered the true act of drinking wine. That is simply the act of wasting good wine!' this sentence of yours won my heart over."

Old Song graciously greeted his guest as he continued to speak: "Obviously, I've been fermenting wine for decades now, and in the world of making wine, no man can boast to be better than me. But you defiled my lifetime's work in one sentence... that is a bit sad..."

"Yes, just pouring wine into one's belly is nothing short of wasting it." Jun Mo Xie looked at the two men as they set a wine jar on his table, but was still unable to tell their real intentions.

"Ha ha, I would like to know why the young man considers it to be a waste of good wine?" Old Song seemed very modest as a ray of light shone through his muddy eyes.

"What is wine?" Jun Mo Xie asked a question: "The hearts of the men in this world love wine, but why? What is the point of wine?"

"What is wine?" Old Song repeated the question to himself, feeling a bit disconsolate. He had just claimed that he was the best wine maker in the world, but then, what is wine? Even he couldn't come up with a good answer to this question. [If you say that wine is just another beverage... Then that's an insult to wine. But beyond that, what is it?]

"Wine is an emotion!" Jun Mo Xie switched his tone to a very serious one: "So the act of drinking by that ideology changes with

the emotion. If you drink in a merry state of mind, then the wine will make you happy; if one drinks in celebration, then the wine becomes the celebration; if one drinks in a depressed frame of mind, then the wine becomes a broom which sweeps the worry from one's mind, and makes one forget! When one visits a friend or a close confidant, then the wine is a concert. When one says good bye to a friend, the wine becomes a token of farewell! When soldiers drink wine on the battle field, the wine becomes the wine of blood since it will help in killing the enemy!"

"Next comes wine tasting; when one is tasting a wine, the mood of the taster becomes the true taste of the wine." Jun Mo Xie poured himself a cup and drained it down in one single gulp, and then said with a sparse look on his face: "When wandering uncertain and alone is a faraway land, the wine becomes a flavor of homesickness! When toasted by a stranger in a foreign land, the wine becomes a symbol of a new friendship!"

"Good words, amazing words! Splendid! That was really enlightening, young man!" Old Song and the middle-aged man seemed hooked to this passage, and stared at each other dumbstruck for a while; Old Song was the first one to snap out of the thought and started to praise again.

"What was so enlightening about this phrase?" Jun Mo Xie sneered: "There's no high-end and low-end wine, I feel that it's all about the difference in mental state of the drinker! Tasting wine is gentleman's game, but a real wine taster is one who has drunk with thousands of different people since only then will one be able to taste the different emotions of wine!"

"There are no poor or rich when it comes to drinking wine; regardless of the status of a man, if the man knows how to drink, then they can experience the different flavors of its emotion. If one doesn't drink with emotion while tasting different wines, then the man only adds to their knowledge of the wine's effect on the taste buds, but will never be able to feel the wine since they are just

devouring a cup with no feelings!"

"So when it comes to the act of tasting wine without feeling any emotion, I can only rate it as second-grade wine drinking since it is not the real act of drinking but just another elegant act. Although one still won't spoil the name of the wine, but the man will not be a true gentleman to the act of drinking!" Jun Mo Xie stated generously.

The middle-aged man and Old Song seemed as if they both wanted to say something, but both men were strongly refraining from interrupting him, and were patiently listening to his words to get to the bottom of his ideology. However, both men were laughing within their hearts at the words of this juvenile as they inwardly agreed and disagreed to his words at different points, and both men could tell that his words were eluding enough to mean different things to different people.

Jun Mo Xie looked sideways and said: "The act of sampling wine is nothing more than a cliché. Regardless of whether one drinks in a pub over a conversation, or inside a brothel over a pleasurable interaction, or in a mansion with friends, or over a business or a political deal, they drink with emotion, and will still always be superior to wine tasters!"

Both men remained silent after listening to Jun Mo Xie's 'enlightening' words, but nodded slightly as they felt a strange but faint sense of pride: [we've been drinking for decades, so we should be regarded as true wine drinkers, right?]

The young master Jun wasn't done yet, and extended his two fingers as he gently shook them: "Based on these two terms, your wine would fall into the second-grade... .."

"Nonsense!" Old Song was finally infuriated by Jun Mo Xie's words, and thundered out loud to defend his product. [We both are confident that I'm the best wine maker in this country; even though your theory is right, but I've steeped decades of my life in

making wine, so calling my wine second-grade is surely taking it a little too far!]

Jun Mo Xie paid no attention to the two angry men, and continued: "You're still not convinced that your wine is second-rate. You have steeped decades into making and tasting wine; so your seniority in that respect cannot be denied, but this so called wine tasting seniority has a precondition since you do not enjoy the wine. Your wine may be of quality, but since you sell it for the experience and not the emotion, it qualifies as second-rate since the experience itself is insufficient in terms of the true act of drinking wine!"

Jun Mo Xie shook his two stretched-out fingers again: "This is the reason that you believed that I possess a wine which is better than the Old Song Tavern's wine. Based on my knowledge of wine, I can bluntly say that your wine is harsh on the throat since it lacks the emotion."

Even though his passage seemed to be twisting words to force logic, it was already beginning to sell.

"Your words were very rational and opened my eyes to a new horizon; however, when it comes to wine, this Old Song has travelled the world, and it is demeaning to say that my wine is harsh on the throat since that would mean that the other wines are even worse off!" Old Song seemed very displeased since Jun Mo Xie had called his wine second-rate and couldn't help raising his eyebrows in a challenging manner.

[I have obviously spent my whole life in making wine, and no one can dare to say that their wine is superior to mine. When it comes to the world of making wine, no one possesses the secrets of my wine making, and then this kid is actually calling my wine harsh?] Old Song obviously couldn't help being angry, but still couldn't come up with any plausible rebuttals to defend his production since he knew that even though his wine was better than the majority of other wines in the market, but it wouldn't be

surprising if there was one wine which was better in every respect. On top of that, based on Jun Mo Xie's theory, the act of drinking wine had nothing to do with the quality of the wine by itself!

Jun Mo Xie sensed that the man was feeling extreme indignation, so he didn't argue back.

The middle-aged man pricked his ears as he looked from one man to the other, and then he suddenly narrowed his eyes and said: "Old Song, if our little brother can come up with a wine which is a hundred times stronger than yours, then what would you say?"

"I would accept him as my teacher!" Old Song raised his eyebrows again in a challenging manner as he blurted out. At this moment, his entire body was completely straight which seemed to reflect a strong sense of self-confidence and pride!

In addition to his confident and proud posture, there was a trace of sincerity in his body language, almost as if he would really accept a better wine maker as his teacher!

Jun Mo Xie's heart suddenly jumped into action as he instantly confirmed the identity of Old Song! [He turned out to be!]

Previously, when Jun Mo Xie had resolved the situation at the Huang Hua hall with his uncle, Jun Wu Yi, they had realized that they were being followed by a mysterious Xuan Qi expert, who later turned out to be a Sku Xuan expert! Although Jun Mo Xie's artifice had scared the man away, but this man was still stronger than his uncle, so there was no way that Jun Mo Xie could have ever forgotten about him! After careful analysis, Jun Mo Xie had come to realize that this man was indeed stronger than the likes of Xiao Han, and was only slightly inferior to his grandfather, Jun Zhan Tian!

[Who would have ever thought that there could be an association between the Old Song tavern's owner and that Sky Xuan expert?!]

While uttering those last few words in a fit of rage, Old Song's



mood had inadvertently fluctuated a bit, exuding a mild trace of his Xuan Qi.

Even though this exposed Xuan Qi fled through the atmosphere in a very small quantity, it was enough for Jun Mo Xie to recognize the association between the two figures, which had now started to coincide in his mind. Like a slow-motion movie, the two silhouettes continued to come closer in his mind, while continuing to resemble each other more and more with every passing frame; every action, and every movement of the two figures continued to repeat in Jun Mo Xie's mind, until the two figures combined to form a whole and became the same person!

[I'm certain!]

[Old Song, it was you!]

## Chapter 149: A mysterious master

---

As he discovered this interesting truth, Jun Mo Xie curved his lips since he hadn't intended on going through with this bet at first. Given his own status in life, picking a fight with someone like Dugu Wudi would be worthy of his status, but was a petty bet against pub owners worth it? The answer was of course no.

However, if the owner of the said pub turned out to be a Sky Xuan expert?

The verdict would obviously be reversed again.

"What is, and what isn't, can be made clear since I have the means to convince you." Jun Mo Xie smiled revealing his white teeth. His mood had suddenly become very good, and he started to stare at Old Song like a hungry wolf stares at a plumb lamb.

Even though Old Song was a Sky Xuan expert, he couldn't help feeling a chill; [this kid's eyes are so evil!]

"May the best man win! Young man, a bet is a bet, and what will you do if you lose?" the incited middle-aged man looked at Jun Mo Xie. He knew that Old Song wasn't easy to beat, but he also felt that this mysterious boy wasn't ordinary either. [Perhaps this bet between these two will turn out to be a very interesting event, but should I be a little scared as well?]

[If I stay out of their bet and only watch from the sidelines then there shouldn't be any reason to be scared from any trouble, or should there be?] A razor sharp light gleamed within the eyes of the middle-aged man.

"If you lose then I only ask that you never demean my wine ever in the future, simply because you're unworthy of beating its quality." Old Song was carefully watching Jun Mo Xie: "Indeed, your standpoint on wine makes a lot of sense, but it doesn't mean that you can insult my wine! This is, after all, is a craft which has

been passed down from one generation to the other for centuries, and one shouldn't demerit a wine unless they are capable to fermenting a better one."

"That's settled then!" Jun Mo Xie replied unambiguously. Faced with this bet, he didn't have anything to lose even if he lost the bet.

The middle-aged man seemingly couldn't wait for the contest to start: "And so it is!", "But to be fair, shouldn't there be a witness to assure that the two of you use fair and just means? Otherwise the other person will always feel a bit suspicious. So I believe that there must be a witness present while the two of you ferment your wines; not only should there be a witness... .. there should also be a referee and a judge to announce the final results!"

[These two seem very fierce about this contest, so I think that neither of them will produce the ordinary stuff. If I get to judge this match, then I would get an opportunity to enjoy both the wines simultaneously. No matter who wins, I will get to taste to excellent wines; this will be a once in a life-time experience!]

With this thought going through his mind, the middle-aged man couldn't help feeling elated. [Old Song, young man, it's time that I get to taste the best of your wines, ha ha... ..]

"Great!" Old Song saw the calm and composed look on Jun Mo Xie's face, and suddenly felt a pang of lacking self-confidence inside him, almost as if his soul was subtly telling him that he could lose.

[What a joke... He's just a kid; It's one thing to drink wine, but when it comes to making wine, I have accumulated decades of experience, and if I brew my signature wine, then I how can I lose to him?] This thought helped in settling Old Song's heart a bit, but he could still feel a vague sense of defeat... [this is a good thing either way! I could ascertain that I'm the best wine maker if I win, but If I lose then I'll find out some new things and I'll be able to take a step in the forward direction...]

"Three days from now, I will close my shop early so we can all

meet here; how does that sound?" Old Song proposed.

Jun Mo Xie smiled and nodded. His mind was thinking, [I don't know if this mysterious Sky Xuan expert is associated with an organization... Could he be associated with the Huang Hua Hall? But he said that he's a fellow human at the time. I had managed to scare him away then, and he had run off quite hastily, so maybe he isn't working with the Huang Hua Hall... ...] Jun Mo Xie looked Old Song and smiled slyly.

A less than Silver Xuan novice had managed to fool and scare away a powerful Sky Xuan expert, how could Jun Mo Xie not enjoy knowing this truth?

"A couple of pounds of beef, and two jugs of wine." A voice unexpectedly echoed from behind, "Also, in three days from now, I will help you in judging the bet!" the categorical nature of this voice was extremely rare, almost as if he was an Emperor who was announcing his decision to his subjects.

His words didn't sound like an inquiry, they sounds like a decision; certain.

But this was the first time that this voice had been heard inside the pub, and it didn't belong to the three men present. On top of that, this voice seemed thunderously powerful!

The middle-aged man was a low skilled man, and would certainly not be able to defend himself without his guards, but Old Song was a Sky Xuan expert, whereas Jun Mo Xie's senses had been amplified by the Hongjun Pagoda and 'The Art of unlocking the heaven's fortune', but this man had somehow been able to conceal his trail for them all. In fact, none of them had even realized when this man had walked into the shop!

At this point, this man was sitting a few feet behind the trio.

The three men turned around simultaneously to look at this unknown man who was sitting around a table at some distance

from them. Even though this person was human, it seemed that his back was as erect as a javelin. His face seemed very extraordinary as well, and was devoid of any lines; almost to the point where his face seemed to have been carved out from marble, while being completely devoid of expressions. His long hair was naturally falling over his shoulders unrestrained, and was covering about half of his face.

This man was wearing a black gown, and even though it was just noon at this time, but his face and breath gave out the feeling of an impending night fall!

Neither of three men could tell the age of this man... he could have been thirty, forty, or even fifty... In fact he could even be eighty, but there was no way of telling his true age...

[This person is a true master, a master of masters; a master at the peak!]

One look at the man and Jun Mo Xie had already reached a conclusion! [The weather has become very unstable in the Tian Xiang City, and this man seems to be here for the same reason as several others. He is surely here for the Xuan Core, and which ever force is capable of sending such a man, must certainly be a very strong contender for the prize!]

In addition to this, Jun Mo Xie could also sense a very familiar atmosphere around this mysterious man - A solitary aura!

This solitary aura seemed to be couple with pride; his loneliness was his arrogance!

Just the way Jun Mo Xie was in his previous incarnation!

Like a lonely wolf in a prairie... although the wolf is lonely, but he'd also fearless; he doesn't want this feeling of loneliness to change since he enjoys it!

"Who are you?" Old Song and the middle-aged man seemed a bit wary all of sudden.

"Someone who loves wine." The man's eyes were downcast and he said lightly: "So, beef and wine please!"

Old Song lowered his gaze as he said: "Dear guest, please wait." And then went inside the shop.

The middle-aged man chuckled and said: "If that's the case, then we'll look forward to seeing you in three days from today." He could already sense that this man was something extraordinary, [he seems like a legendary character from a folklore; if this person says that he will be the judge, then he won't be biased in any way.]

[Such people don't like being offended and they don't offend others either.]

"Little brother, I'll see you in three days. Good bye. Ha ha, don't let this old man down." The middle-aged man laughed as he raised his hand towards Jun Mo Xie, and then turned away.

After he went out, his two body guards came out from hiding, and positioned themselves behind him: "Royal Highness, should we track that youngster to get a better idea of his true identity?"

"No, that's not important." The middle-aged man chuckled, but then his face suddenly became serious: "What about that other man? What do you know about his history?"

"Did a person just walk in? No, ah." The two guards glanced at each other, completely puzzled.

"Well, forget it." the middle-aged man's heart was secretly analyzing the situation; [my two guards are first class elementary Earth Xuan experts, and are sufficiently strong to defend me from any threats in the capital under normal circumstances. But even though my guards are fairly strong, they didn't even see the shadow of this man when he walked in...]

[Who is this guy?]

Old Song's Tavern

Jun Mo Xie interestingly looked that man in black, and then suddenly smiled and said: "Is everything okay in the savanna?"

This sentence caught the attention of the man in black, but even then his expression didn't change as he slowly raised his eyes to look at Jun Mo Xie. At this moment, Jun Mo Xie was very surprised to find that this man's eyes seemed as boundless as a sea; like they were as hidden in depth as a starry night-sky! It felt like his eyes could trap a person into feeling a sense of being wanted.

"How can you tell that I come from the savanna?" the man in black asked slowly in an unhurried tone. Each and every word from his mouth came out with precise clarity.

"Your shoes, they don't belong to this region. And then there's your belt, the knitting on it is of a unique flax which is found only in the savanna; these two were enough to deduce your origin." Jun Mo Xie smiled and said down in front of the man.

"These alone are not sufficient." The man in the black gown was now looking the tabletop in front of him: "And I did not allow you to sit in front of me; and therefore, you do not deserve to!"

"If this isn't enough, then what about that unique savanna body odor of yours?" Jun Mo Xie smiled: "And then there's that aura of a solitary wolf around you, can these be enough? I didn't want to stand, so I obviously sat down. Whether I sit, or lie down, what difference does it make?"

Then Jun Mo Xie switched his tone to sharper note, and said: "As for the subject on qualifications, if I feel that our standards aren't matching, and if I sense that you aren't capable of drinking with me, then I will naturally stand up!"

The man in black stared at Jun Mo Xie for a long while, and then suddenly revealed a perfectionist's smile and said: "Interesting words, I guess it really wouldn't make a difference if you sit or lie down anyway."

This man seemed really strange; even though he laughed... even his laugh reflected a strong sense of loneliness. Although he laughed at Jun Mo Xie's words, it still seemed like he was just laughing to something else entirely.

At this point, Old Song returned with a jar of wine in one hand, and some beef in the other. He looked at Jun Mo Xie, but didn't say anything. Then, he set the food down on the table and turned away.

The eyes of the man in black remained fixed at the tabletop as he picked up the jar of wine and devoured it down in one gulp without making sounds. Then, the man said in a faint voice: "Tian Xiang City is quite extraordinary, even a bartender is capable of being a Sky Xuan; good, this is interesting!"



# Chapter 150: I drink for the loneliness, not the wine

---

Old Song's entire body started to tremble as a faint blue light flashed from his body; he eventually calmed himself down and said in a hoarse voice: "This old man admires your vision, but I just wish to blend into the city and make an honest living for myself in my late years since no one bothers a bartender for being a Sky Xuan expert... .."

The black clothed man replied lightly: "If you wish to brew wine in peace, then that's good and I will not bother you."

Old Song turned around to leave, but then whispered softly as he left: "Thank you for your kindness."

Jun Mo Xie smiled and said: "Old Song, please give me two jugs of wine. Today this young master will make an exception and drink your wine again." Old Song acknowledged his order and went inside the shop. His heart was inwardly surprised at the ease with which this youngster was behaving around this mysterious expert, since he could sense that this mysterious expert was capable of killing them both in a hundred different ways; [this guy is behaving very recklessly.]

"You will not share my wine?" this time it was the man in black who raised his eyebrows and asked a question.

"I do not take favors from others... if drink your wine then I'll owe you a favor. In this world riddles with debts, the debt of gratitude is the most difficult to repay." Jun Mo Xie smiled casually: "Besides, drinking wine after spending money is more comforting."

"That's reasonable." The man in black replied, and then continued to drink his wine quietly. Then, he wiped his mouth and said: "This wine is really good. Kumis always tastes better with

beef..."

At this time, Jun Mo Xie's order was also delivered to their table. Jun Mo Xie immediately opened the cork and started to drink. His drinking speed wasn't lesser than the black-clothed man's.

Although both men were sitting on the same table, they were both concentrating on drinking their wines alone.

The man in black was drinking at a fairly slow pace now, but his speed was very consistent, and unhurried. Even his eating speed was very slow, and very casual.

Although he was drinking wine in the company of another man, it seemed as if he had built his own world, and had excluded all elements of the outside world from his conscious altogether.

After drinking seven or eight cups of wine, the man in black suddenly discovered something unexpected. This discovery suddenly elated the impression of the youngster in front by several levels in his eyes.

He was drinking out of loneliness, but the actions of the youngster in front of his eyes seemed even more desolate than his own. Since he was drinking in a solitary manner, he was his own entertainment; but the boy in front didn't even seem to be drinking wine... it appeared as if the youngster was drinking cups of loneliness!

At his mental level, he was drinking wine to distract himself from his solitude, but the boy in front seemed to be enjoying the loneliness! [He's able to endure this solitary feeling with such an open-mind that he's actually enjoying it... what kind of a superior mind does he have?]

[His mental level... it seems that he's even superior to me?!]

[Who is this mysterious teenager?]

Even though the two men were drinking in a solitary manner on the same table, their charms were mutually exclusive. Even though

Jun Mo Xie was able to integrate into this man's world, but the man was finding it extremely hard to enter into Jun Mo Xie's!

A long while later, the man in black was further surprised to realize that he had paying a lot of attention to the boy in front, but the youngster didn't seem to be taking any note of his presence!

[It seems that I'm not even present here, in his eyes.]

The mysterious man's Xuan Qi cultivation level had already transcended to the peak, so he could naturally sense that this young man's Xuan Qi was near-pathetic; given his age, [his cultivation level can only be described as ordinary... maybe even trash! I could just kill him by just blowing air!]

[But then why is such a boy able to maintain this kind of a mind-frame?]

[Cultivation is easy for children from large families as long as they are sincere and interested in training since they can find good guidance easily. Detoured youngsters are rare, but it shouldn't be this surprising!]

[However, this kind of mental level is hard to find... Even a senior military officer is unable to maintain this mindset... ... what kind of penance is he concealing in his heart?!]

[Moreover, he's very young at the moment, but somehow he feels a lot older!]

"Kid, you're something special!" The man in black slowly stated.

"Do you still think that I'm not qualified to sit here?" Jun Mo Xie asked without looking up as he continued to focus on his drink.

"In terms of your age, your Xuan Qi is low since your meridians have suffered heavy damages, which is resulting in your abnormal cultivation level. So in terms of Xuan Qi, you're ordinary, but being able to drink alone in front of me while being able to maintain such a mind-frame isn't an ordinary feat; even the most experienced men are unable to do such a thing."

The man in black exposed a rare smile. "Moreover, it seems that you're even more desolate than I am; but it's very interesting to know that someone could get so lonely at such a young age!"

"We're in the same boat." Jun Mo Xie looked up at him coldly: "You were special enough for me to borrow your desolation, which enabled me to enjoy my drink; but now I'm unable to. If you had continued to drink alone, then I would have continued to enjoy mine, but now that taste has changed, and has become rancid."

Jun Mo Xie stood up and produced a silver coin: "Interesting people can also get boring in time. You really shouldn't have spoken first... there are many curious people in this world, and now you've just added yourself to that list." Jun Mo Xie walked away without looking back again. But before he left, he said a few more words: "Since you've acknowledged my qualification, I must stand up now..."

The man in black suddenly remembered Jun Mo Xie's earlier words: "... ..as for the subject on qualifications, if I feel that our standards aren't matching, and if I sense that you aren't capable of drinking with me, then I will naturally stand up!"

The black-clothed man's face immediately changed. [Did this kid just imply that I'm not qualified to drink with him?]

[I am the Solitary Falcon; and ever since I've risen to fame, no one has ever dared to act like this in front of me. And now this boy just implied that I wasn't even qualified to drink with him, and then mocked me right before he left...]

[This is a strange feeling...]

Then the Solitary Falcon recalled what Jun Mo Xie had just said, and started smiling again: [We were indeed curious about each other, but then I opened my mouth first. Answering my question could have led to the collapse of his mind frame. If my words disrupted his drinking and upset him, then his actions were plausible.]

[Boy! Even if you don't know who I am, I will still remember you!]

The Solitary Falcon had always been proud and aloof, and had always aimed for the skies; 'the Falcon of the Savanna' had never considered any man to be his equal; he had always despised others, and had always gone about his ways without bothering about the opinions of others. But he never expected that he'd also be looked down upon one day!

There was a big difference in the ages of the two men, and moreover, their Xuan Qi levels were simply beyond comparison, but even then this young man had insulted him...

And after looking down upon him, Jun Mo Xie hadn't even explained his reasons! This had left the man feeling very dejected, and had angered the Solitary Falcon's heart.

[After three days, I will return to make trouble for you! We'll see how qualified I am then!] The Solitary Falcon laughed inwardly as he continued to eat and drink.

[Soon enough I'll have the last laugh!]

Jun Mo Xie was walking with a sense of pride in his heart.

The hitman Jun didn't know who that man in black was; neither had Jun Mo Xie been able to understand his true intentions!

In fact, ever since the Jun Mo Xie had laid eyes on the Solitary Falcon, he had figured that the man was something unusual. At the time when the man had successfully identified Old Song's Xuan Qi level, Jun Mo Xie's suspicion had been confirmed. Jun Mo Xie's 'Art of unlocking the Heaven's fortune' was beyond Old Song's comprehension, but the man in black had realized something unusual about Jun Mo Xie. Jun Mo Xie was conversely also able to sense that the man was at least the base of Spirit Xuan realm.

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie could sense a familiar felling of desolation which this man's body was exuding; and then when the two men

made eye contact, Jun Mo Xie could feel the composure and pride of his mind.

Obviously Jun Mo Xie had understood that this man had arrived in the Tian Xiang City to seek the Xuan Core, but he had also sensed that this man had another purpose; a purpose which may not revolve around the Xuan Core!

Even though Jun Mo Xie was unable to understand his true intentions, he could sense that the Xuan Core probably didn't have much value to this man...

But nonetheless, it still felt as if the man would try to use all means to procure the Xuan Core!

So in the end, this man was eventually to be driven in Jun Mo Xie's direction in search of the Xuan Core!

Jun Mo Xie had been looking to catch the man's attention without actually attracting interest from him, which is why Jun Mo Xie had choreographed his character very carefully in front of that man. He had intentionally ignored the man, while enjoying his company in order to make the man curious, which would tempt the man into breaking the silence... and eventually he would make the man feel despised...

[The eccentric are always odd; so one should always do the opposite of what's expected. Not so proud now, huh? Now I'm more proud than you are! You don't enjoy your solitude? Then you cannot be more desolate than me! I'm the only one in this world who comes from another!]

For now, Jun Mo Xie's plan had been successful, and the Solitary Falcon still hadn't realized that the entire scene had been choreographed by Jun Mo Xie...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie started planning on his course of action for the contest with Old Song in three days' time... ..

## Chapter 151: Tang Yuan's medical examination begins

---

By the time Jun Mo Xie returned home, Tang Yuan had been waiting a long time for him. In fact, Tang Yuan had reached the Jun residence minutes after Jun Mo Xie had left the place.

"Is it tomorrow?" Jun Mo Xie crossed his legs as he sat down and asked.

"Yes, tomorrow!" Tang Yuan nodded like a rooster on the way to the butcher's. Although his eyes still reflected a slight trace of hope in them: "Third young master, my brother, I'm relying on you here."

Then the fat man moved closer to Jun Mo Xie and hugged him!

"Fatty, don't make me vomit, okay. If you do as I say, you will be fine." Jun Mo Xie hadn't been able to comfort Tang Yuan these past few days, and as a result the Fat man's hands and feet had been trembling with fear the entire time.

The Eunuch Old Zhu, was definitely going to be very thorough with his investigation, and would go far beyond checking just the Xuan Qi of the applicants. In fact, given his disposition, it was evident that he'd play by the rules, and was highly unlikely to favor anyone without merit. Moreover, he'd execute the process very meticulously. No matter what task His Majesty asked Old Zhu to carry out, the Emperor would always carry a sense of trust that the task would be carried out to the letter.

In addition to being very meticulous and precise with his work and responsibilities, Old Zhu had another rather strange habit: An extreme obsession with cleanliness.

Obsession with cleanliness isn't a problem in its own, and many people are cleanliness oriented. The habit of keeping their environment neat and clean isn't an issue when it comes to normal

people, but the Eunuch, Old Zhu's obsession was way over the top. He would bathe twice each day, regardless of the season; even excess work load couldn't deter him from taking two baths a day. After each wash, he'd change his clothes right down to his undergarments.

Even if someone touched a tree on the road, Old Zhu would refrain from coming in direct contact with the man from the fear of catching an illness; even His Majesty couldn't help feeling a bit strange about Old Zhu's obsession with cleanliness. It is said that even when His Majesty offers Old Zhu a seat to sit on, the Eunuch first takes out his towel to wipe the chair, and only then does he sit on it; but only half way. He refrains from sitting on the chair properly to avoid heating his buttocks... these strange actions of Old Zhu were known to leave the Emperor stunned and wondering about the man's sanity...

As for his personal belonging, no one was allowed to touch them. Regardless of the value of an item, if someone touched his belongings, then the Eunuch would discard the object; obviously the person would have to pay back in some respect... ..regardless of which body part of the said person came in contact with his personal belonging, the said body part would be chopped off, even if the contact wasn't deliberate...

The all-seeing Emperor had decided to make the best use of Old Zhu's obsession and had bestowed him with the charge of the Imperial Palace's cleanliness. Obviously, the palace maids were always complaining under his charge. However, the effect was quite marvelous, and the Imperial Palace was regarded as one of the cleanest places in the entire kingdom!

Old Zhu's obsession with cleanliness was a well-known matter, and since everyone knew about it, most people tried their best to avoid coming in contact with him altogether for the fear of offending the Old man as the aftermath was usually considered to be quite devastating. Naturally, Jun Mo Xie had no difficulty in



finding out about this matter.

Jun Mo Xie was planning on doing the exact diametric opposite of this, and was hoping that it would help in destroying Tang Yuan's chances of passing the examination!

The Old Eunuch took his work and responsibilities so seriously, that in case there was a problem with Tang Yuan, he wouldn't refrain from mentioning it in his report; even if the fat man belonged to a very influential family.

So naturally, Jun Mo Xie was planning on taking advantage of Old Zhu's obsession with cleanliness to strike out Tang Yuan's chances of getting in!

"Fatty, take this medicine pill one hour before your medical test. Then, when this comes into play, everything will..." Jun Mo Xie winked.

"I will not... this is so disgusting... .." Tang Yuan hesitated as Jun Mo Xie handed the pill over to him.

"Then there's nothing that I can do. I have given you a solution, but the rest is up to you. You decided whether you wish to live the life of an insect or that of a free man... hmm, hmm... .." Jun Mo Xie hummed twice.

"Okay!" Tang Yuan clutched the pill tightly in his hands as the fat flesh on his face distorted a bit: "I'll go all out this time!"

"Face it like a brave warrior!" Jun Mo Xie patted him on the shoulder with a friendly look on his face: "I wish you the best of luck, and I'll silently be standing behind you as you succeed in this mission; my spirit will be there to support you."

"Is there anything that you can do about the beating that I will get after I fail this test?" Tang Yuan asked in a worried manner: "After this happens, I'm pretty sure that my father will peel my skin off, and he will probably never give me any money again..."

"I can only sympathize with you in that regard..." Jun Mo Xie

sighed deeply as he looked at his friend's impassioned face: "This will be a thing of the past soon enough, and you'll forget about it sooner than you think. But make sure that you remember this: You mustn't forget to skip your breakfast... Don't eat anything in the morning, okay?"

Tang Yuan nodded solemnly: "I will remember that."

Once Tang Yuan was out of sight, Jun Mo Xie bent down and squatted on the floor while he laughed his lungs out; it took him a while to regain his composure and posture again... ..

Jun Mo Xie was quite confident that plan would work.

But Jun Mo Xie could've never imagined that this issue with Tang Yuan would become a very special and insanely hilarious incident, which would amuse the entire Xuan Xuan continent for centuries to come, making this story a legend, and Tang Yuan a near 'celebrity'!... ..

Tang Yuan was on his way out of the Jun residence when he ran straight into Jun Zhan Tian. Since the two men came face to face, there was nowhere for Tang Yuan to hide. Therefore, he stepped forward and made his salutations.

"Fatty, you came here to see Mo Xie? Did you lose your wife again?" Jun Zhan Tian glared at Tang Yuan: "What are you doing? Look at Mo Xie, he's completely changed his life around; you also need to grow up!"

Tang Yuan started panicking since he didn't wish to lose face in front of the general! Some times when youngsters are faced with a powerful and majestic presence, they tend to stammer if they are unable to find an answer for a question: "No, no." He had already hidden his hand behind his back subconsciously.

"Nothing? Then why are you looking so scared?" the Old man seemed a bit puzzled: "What are you holding in your hand? Stretch out your hand so this old man can see it properly."

"No, there's nothing... .." Tang Yuan immediately got nervous and started shaking his head. He took one step backwards, and then suddenly tripped over something and fell to the ground with a thud.

Jun Zhan Tian laughed out loudly: "You look like a scared little child... don't be afraid of my position, it's not like I'll go to war with you... .." then Jun Zhan Tian stepped inside the Jun residence laughing, not bothering himself with Tang Yuan any further.

Tang Yuan stood up and wiped the sweat off his forehead, and then suddenly realized that the pill had disappeared from his hand; he presumed that the pill must have fallen down when he tumbled over. This obviously wasn't a trivial matter, so Tang Yuan immediately knelt to the floor in search of the pill, and it took him the greater part of the evening to search for his lost life-saving pill. Due to this ruckus, Tang Yuan confused Jun Mo Xie's directions, 'Don't forget your breakfast', and started to believe that Jun Mo Xie had asked him to eat a hearty breakfast instead of going empty stomach!

[I don't think that eating breakfast is a good idea... .. but the third young master specifically told me to eat, so I must trust his judgement. I'll eat properly before I leave for the examination]. Since this thought had now crossed his mind, his stomach naturally started growling for food.

Next morning, Tang Yuan stuffed his belly round and smooth, burped, and then followed his father on his rickety horse to the Imperial Palace.

Minster Tang was very proud of his status. Therefore, in order to prevent any mishaps, he had already put Tang Yuan through a full body examination, and was hence confident that there would no issues with regard to his son's qualification since being overweight was unlikely to be a problem.

[What should I be afraid of? As the saying goes, a man mustn't worry about his weight!] Minister Tang looked at his fat son atop the struggling horse and smiled.

Once they reached the Imperial palace, Tang Yuan sat down in the designated waiting area in anticipation of his impending medical examination. When only one hour remained, he quickly swallowed the pill which he had received from Jun Mo Xie. Since his throat felt a bit dry, he irrigated it with some cold water to comfort himself.

A total of nine people had applied for the position, out of which four people belonged to high-class families, while the other five were talented scholars. Seeing such strong competition for the post, Minister Tang was relieved that he had already arranged for his son's selection!

He was completely unaware that the plan his son had formulated with the help of his best-friend, Jun Mo Xie would turn into a big headache for him. If their plan was successful, then he would lose a big chunk out of his life's savings...

In reality, Minister Tang was already doomed to lose his saving...

Old Zhu's examination method was very strict and scientific, which had left the applicants very nervous.

Everyone had heard that even though Mu Rong Qian Jun had been selected the last time around... He was left limping for nearly a month afterwards... ..

[So what exactly did he do to Mu Rong Qian Jun during the examination?] As the applicants started becoming increasingly nervous, they started harboring sympathetic thoughts for their predecessor...

[If we get selected, then there's a chance that we might even end up getting crippled in the process! If we wash out, then it will be a big humiliation... ..]

## Chapter 152: Chapter 152 - The Super Amusing Incident

---

Tang Yuan become even more nervous since the person before him had already been called-in for an inspection. The fatty turned his fat neck and looked around, but saw his father staring right back at him!

Minister Tang knew that his son was reluctant about this whole affair, and was keeping an eye on him since he was afraid that his son might run away in the middle of things. He saw the manner in which Tang Yuan was gazing around, and shouted in a low tone: "Don't embarrass your old man!"

Tang Yuan retreated his neck, grumbled a few words, and then looked down again. Then, he suddenly felt a burst of churning inside his stomach, which was followed by a grumbling sound from within his body, and his face immediately turned pale. He turned to his father, stood up and cried: "I want to..."

"You want me to kick your butt again?" Minister Tang opened his eyes widely as furiously glared at his son: "If you don't pass this test then I'll break your legs after we get home; and if you say another word, then I'll break your legs right here!"

The pale-faced Tang Yuan clutched his stomach and sat down again, and gradually tried to suppress his inner desires.

But he still couldn't help controlling the urge to curse Jun Mo Xie: [Why didn't you tell me that this pill will give me... gas? This is so wrong ah.] He was completely unaware that he had mistaken Jun Mo Xie's directions since he had remembered, 'Don't forget your breakfast', instead of 'Don't' forget to skip your breakfast'. The mix up of words made the two situations completely different...

Plus, he had drunk some cold water, which amplified the pill's

effectiveness and made it twice as strong!

Even though the end result would be the same in this case, but the turn of event which would lead to the result would be poles apart... ..

The two youngsters next to him were murmuring amongst themselves. The two boys belonged to the Meng and the Song families respectively: "Brother Song, you know that Old Zhu... what does he do to people in there?"

"Don't ask me... I don't know. But I've heard that the examination is supposed to be very cruel." The boy surnamed Song expressed his apprehension in a low voice.

"Cruel?" Tang Yuan raised his voice and said: "Did you know that Mu Rong Qian Jun wasn't able to walk properly for months after his inspection? That's way beyond 'cruel' if you ask me..." The two youngsters suddenly went pale as well.

Minister Tang fiercely look over at his son again in order to stop his son from spreading rumors, but felt very proud inwardly. [Hmm.... He's finally getting the hang of things..... he just successfully cracked his opponents down by putting them under pressure... good, he's finally living up to my name.]

Tang Yuan leaned back in his chair with a clear conscious with respect to his words, but then he suddenly felt another burst of reactions inside his stomach, almost as if something was moving left and right inside his stomach, and his face become even weirder. [I can't wait any longer; Jun Mo Xie, I curse you. How could you have forgotten to tell me that the pill would give me gas... ...]

Just as he was about to dash away to resolve his situation, a voice called out: "Next, Tang Yuan."

Tang Yuan's face suddenly became green. He retreated deeper into his chair, unwilling to leave it. Minister Tang angrily got up

from his chair, and grabbed his son's fat body and propelled him onto his feet. Then, he shouted as his son finally came to his feet: "He called your name you evil creature; now don't keep the old man waiting!" then, he raised his leg and kicked Tang Yuan in the buttocks, and sent him flying to the floor... ..

Tang Yuan entered a long and narrow corridor, and was led to a room at the end of the passage by a young palace eunuch. The room's temperature was quite low since the thick curtains were blocking out the Autumn Sun; naturally Tang Yuan couldn't help feeling the cold on his skin. On top of that, the Old Eunuch in front's complexion was as white as snow, and then the man was dressed in spotless white robes, so much so that even his socks were white, along with his hair, eyebrows and beard... There was no other color on his body!

Tang Yuan suddenly recalled the legend of the 'Soul Reaper', and suddenly his stomach didn't seem to bother him as much...

"Tang Wan Li's grandson? Shed them off." Old Zhu's name was quite strange, Zhu Zhu Zhu. His face didn't show even the slightest trace of emotion as he looked at the fat youngster, and then pointed to a piece of white cloth on the floor: "Strip naked, and stand on top of that."

If there was a beautiful woman in front, Tang Yuan was guaranteed to strip faster than any man alive. But at the moment, he had been asked to strip not by a beautiful woman, or any woman for that fact, but by an Old Eunuch...

Under physiological pressure, Tang Yuan started dillydallying, almost as if he was refusing to shed his clothes.

Old Zhu raised his eyebrows provocatively, and then grunted: "Ah?" He hunkered down in his chair, and even though he didn't move, Tang Yuan felt a surge of immense pressure, which numbed his fat body like an avalanche of snow...

"Eunuch... uh... can you... please... turn away?" Tang Yuan's face

twitched as he asked while gripping his belt.

"Take 'em off!" Old Zhu blinked as he repeated himself angrily. But it seemed as if he was beginning to enjoy it!

"Quickly!" he seemed to be showing no trace of politeness even though he was talking to the son of a minister.

"As you say." His stomach started feeling even worse as he untied his belt, and then turned away once again as he grimaced: "Eunuch, can I just... ..." Tang Yuan had already given up at this point, and was now more worried about his stomach... ..

"Humph!" didn't seem interested in repeating himself again. His eyes flashed a blue-colored light as he extended his hand and withdrew a small knife; 'Chi' 'Chi' sounds were heard as his blade fluttered through Tang Yuan's clothes, revealing his bare fat; his belly almost stooped down to his knees.

Tang Yuan shrieked, and then used his hands to cover his lower body; he didn't really need to though... .. His fat belly was enough to conceal everything he didn't wish to expose to the old man in front.

Zhu Zhu Zhu coldly glared at Tang Yuan and then started walking around him in circles as his keen and sharp eyes probed every part of Tang Yuan's bare body.

"Lift your left arm and show me your armpit!" Since Zhu Zhu Zhu coldly ordered Tang Yuan, the fatty hastily did as he was asked to. Even though it was autumn, the room was slightly colder than the rest of the palace, but still wasn't unbearably cold. However, as the Old Eunuch approached Tang Yuan's body, Tang Yuan started feeling a strangely cold nip in the air. As the chill bit his soul, his stomach started getting even worse... ..

Zhu Zhu Zhu was about three feet away from Tang Yuan's body at this point, and was constantly issuing new orders in an electric cold voice: "Raise your right hand!"



"Use your hands and pick up your stomach so I can see the rest of you!"

"Lie down and part your legs!"

"..."

Tang Yuan wasn't able to soothe that feeling of coldness, nor was he able to get accustomed to the Old Eunuch's commands. Sweat started dripping from his forehead, and it seemed that he simply couldn't wait to leave the room... ..

The snow-white Zhu Zhu Zhu was expressionless throughout. He approached closer and said: "Get up, then turn around and bend down, so I can put this stick up you!"

[What? No! Tang Yuan screamed within his psyche. I don't want to walk around weirdly... This old man is perverted! I don't know how I will ever be able to escape his clutches... ..]

"Hurry up!" Zhu Zhu Zhu repeated himself again.

Tang Yuan hesitated as he slowly bent down since doing such an action would make things even worse and more uncontrollable. He was well aware that if something went wrong then certain things would come out with a gush, and he knew that he won't be able to hold himself back once things started in motion. He tried to bend down several times, but was unable to since he knew that things would be beyond his power of control if he did... ..

Old Zhu was enraged by this since he thought that the fatty was deliberately causing mischief. Therefore, he pushed Tang Yuan and forcefully bent him over by ninety degrees. Then, Zhu Zhu Zhu used to two strips of wood he was holding to part Tang Yuan's backside, and then leaned forward slightly and looked intently.... With eyes wide-open... ..

At this point, Tang Yuan finally lost control, and just focused on controlling the voice from his throat as his body contracted, which is why only a 'pop~~~~~' sound was heard while the tragedy took

place... ..

A golden colored substance turbulently ejected from his body... .. by this time, Old Zhu had come in close proximity of the youngster's body; since he had never imagined that something like could this could ever occur, the completely unprepared Eunuch was unable to dodge the incoming attack... ..

Outside, Minister Tang had been served with tea since he was a man in a high-position. He sat in his seat sipping his tea, confident to hear the good news about his son's selection.

He had already arranged for the rest, but he still needed his son to qualify in the Old Eunuch's inspection. [I really don't think this necessary, but once he's passed this Old man's test, he's through for sure... I've already talked to every minister and official!]

Several of the other applicants were also from powerful families, but were quite disheartened to see the determined look on Minister Tang's face; in fact, their escorts had already left in dismay. Minister Tang was simply sitting there with a smile on his face; [you wish to compete with the Tangs? Ha ha, this is really funny!]

At that moment... ..

A furious roar sounded from the chambers inside! That roar was filled with the pain of a living death, extreme remorse, and extreme hatred! Almost as if someone had suffered a pain so shrill that it had instantly transformed their life into nothingness! The roar pierced through the entire Palace!

It was Eunuch Old Zhu's voice.

This roar was followed by another, even more furious one: "Get out, you're disqualified!" these four words crashed over the entire Tian Xiang City like thunder, and thousands of people were able to hear it clearly; each and every person who heard this voice was clearly able to assess the extreme resentment behind the voice's origin!

The roar carried as far as Jun Mo Xie's house, and the young master Jun raised his eyebrows and smiled as he understood the special meaning behind this roar. Pleased with himself, he reached out and grabbed the teapot, poured himself a drink and sipped a mouthful as he said: "Fatty Tang, you actually did it kid! Now you're truly worthy of being Jun Mo Xie's future partner! I will never doubt your ability again!"

He paused, and then broke into laughter, unable to control it any further: "I really I wish I could have seen the look on that Old Eunuch's face... ..", little did the young master Jun realize that the Old Eunuch's face was a lot angrier than he could have ever anticipated, and well... looked a million times worse... ..

# Chapter 153: Disowned

---

## The Imperial Palace

After that thundering voice, a 'Bang!' sound was heard, and then a huge body came flying out of the door. The fat on the body vibrated as it slammed into the wall on the opposite side of the waiting room, and then dropped to the floor below with a 'pop' sound.

Simultaneously, an unspeakable stench filled the room... ..

That body was Tang Yuan's!

But at the moment, the fatty was completely unconscious, and the corner of his mouth was constantly flowing blood while his two eyes were completely shut as his naked body lay on the ground. His buttocks were covered with a yellow-colored substance...

His originally perfectly-round buttocks were now imprinted with palm marks. His buttocks were swollen and seemed to be bleeding as well. As for his bones, perhaps they were broken, but it was hard to tell... ..

The hearts of everyone present were beating at the speed of lightening, while their faces were constantly twitching since neither of them knew what had happened to this fatty; [what did he do to make the Old Eunuch Zhu so furious?]

The Eunuch was still inside his chambers, his face was covered in despair while his entire body was trembling; his calm, composed and proud look had been completely obliterated... ..

Old Zhu's eyes were covered in a yellow colored paste, his hair, eyebrows, white robes.... Were all bathed in a golden colored tinge now... as for his mouth... He was vomiting ceaselessly... ..

Jun Mo Xie's plan had gone rogue due to a mixture of different circumstances... and coincidentally, the victim of this accident

turned out to be Old Zhu... and Tang Yuan had ended up bathing the Old Eunuch in a waterfall...

The correct description would be... A yellow river had broken past the Dam which was holding it in place... ..

Minister Tang was furious!

Anyone would be after watching his son being beaten into a pile of broken bones and torn flesh!

[Why? Because my son is bit fat? Even this old bastard should have controlled himself... This is too much! It looks like my son is breathing his last breaths...]

It could be said that Tang Yuan's life had been spared only because of his patriarchy! Jun Mo Xie had only intended for Tang Yuan to fart at the time when the Old Eunuch parted his buttocks, but due to unwanted tampering with his plan, the effect of the medicinal pill had been intensified, resulting in this out-pour. The Eunuch, who was obsessed with cleanliness had never expected for such a calamity to occur, and would have killed the fatty, but refrained since he knew that the Tang Family was important to the Emperor!

"Zhu Zhu Zhu! What is the meaning of this? You need to explain yourself, Old man!" Minister Tang shouted out loudly as his heart trembled from the ache of watching his son's tragic condition, and it seemed that he was already prepared to dismember the Old Eunuch's body!

After a long while, a cold and dark voice resonated from the inner chambers: "Tang Qian Yu, if this fatty wasn't Tang Wan Li's grandson, then I would have already killed him by now. If you both didn't belong to the Tang Family, then I would have already killed you both! Now lift you foolish son and immediately disappear from here while you still can, otherwise you'll end up changing my mind!"

"And, all those who are waiting outside can go take a hike too!" The Old Eunuch's thundering voice was followed by sounds vomiting, and everyone could tell that the Old Eunuch was in a very bad condition himself...

[I've heard that the Old Eunuch is very cleanliness oriented, but what could have this fatty done to make him this angry?]

Everyone looked at each other as they tried to guess, and then immediately fled the scene... [staying here is too dangerous now!]

Although Minister Tang was extremely furious, he didn't stand there to argue; a wise man knows when the odds are against him... He quickly took his son to the doctor since the wounds were extremely serious!

Minister Tang had already realized that he would only find out the truth the following day; Tang Wan Li stormed into the Imperial Palace to find Old Zhu and demand justice for his grandson's condition... Grandfather Tang simply couldn't imagine that his decades old friend would ever do such a thing to his grandson; [why did you do this? This is completely insane!]

As an end result of believing that the Old Eunuch's actions were 'completely insane', Grandfather Tang was forced to return dejected, depressed, and furious. Fatty Tang's condition required a lot of care and assistance from everyone in the household, and everyone was constantly kneeling over and around his body to provide him the required care. Even though Grandfather Tang and Minister Tang were furious with Tang Yuan's actions, they both knew that it was more important to improve the status of body's injuries at the moment... ... his justifications and punishment could wait until a later time...

However, Grandfather Tang and Minister Tang were still extremely furious, anxious, and sad since they had spent a huge sum of money to open up this channel for fatty Tang, and were already preparing for throwing a party in celebration of their

success at the time this mishap occurred.

[Why would our son do such a thing at such a crucial time? And it's not like he just did it... he did straight on the Old Eunuch's face, eyes, and even his mouth...]

[Let's not forget that the Old Eunuch is so cleanliness oriented that he can't even stand the thought of something like this!]

Grandfather Tang and Minister Tang were sitting beside Tang Yuan's bed as they watched his shattered body...their mouths were constantly repeating: [I've heard in the past that 'diarrhea can be incited by pressurizing situations', but I always thought that it was a joke... But now I know that even though this is a rare thing, it can still happen...]

Once Tang Yuan emerged from the shock, Grandfather Tang furious expelled him from the house, even though his bodily injuries were still quite serious! "From now on, you're no longer the Grandson of Tang Wan Li! You're no longer a Tang! Quickly get out of my eyesight and disappear forever!"

Things had obviously gone too far!

However, the fatty was still so loyal that he chose to keep Jun Mo Xie's role a secret! He screamed twice, and requested that he be escorted to the Jun residence.

The Tang Family agreed to his request for three reasons: First, Tang Yuan and Jun Mo Xie were close friends, and Jun Mo Xie would certainly give him asylum in this hour of need. Secondly, Tang Yuan's body still hadn't fully recovered, in fact, the injuries were still quite serious, and Jun Mo Xie being his friend would certainly look after him... Thirdly, the two families were located quite close-by, so even though they had disowned Tang Yuan, they could still visit him easily if they were unable to control the desire to see their son...

When Tang Yuan's departure time came upon, he demanded two

things: [first, I want to take the big cupboard in my room with me; second, hand over the laundry guy to me, I want to club him to death.]

His first demand was fairly easy to understand, the big closet in his room contained all the savings that he had accumulated over his lifetime. He would naturally wish to take it with him since it would help him in settling down or whatever else he needed it for. As for the laundry man of the Tang Family, Tang Yuan was being ruthless in this case; that servant was a very smart and intelligent scholar, who even though was working in a very lowly position at the moment, was slowly working his way up the ladder! Even though he was working as the laundry man inside the Tang Family, he had his eyes on the prize, and Tang Yuan had always hated him to his bones!

Since Tang Yuan was being kicked out of the family, this man would now be allowed to carry out his plans with complete freedom, and fatty Tang was sure that this two-faced man would try to occupy the position of the Family's head.

Tang Yuan naturally didn't want such a time bomb to exist inside his family's courtyard in his absence, and since the fatty didn't know when he would return, he wanted to rid himself of this worry...

As Grandfather Jun left the Jun residence for the Imperial Palace, he saw an arrogant smile on his grandson's face... the first of its kind.

[Tang Wan Li's grandson actually excreted on Zhu Zhu Zhu's face... ...] once Jun Zhan Tian had verified the world's most hilarious news, he staggered back home, laughing the entire way, and told everyone about it. Jun Mo Xie's facial expression suddenly transformed into that of a rooster on the way to the butcher's...

[Oh god, what did you do you fat idiot! You actually released your... on his face?] The Hitman Jun had collected all the



information about the Old Eunuch before formulating his plan; he had also found out that the Old Eunuch was at least a Sky Xuan expert, and that the man's real strength was strong enough to be comparable to his own grandfather, Jun Zhan Tian!

Seeing that his grandson didn't even smile upon hearing such a funny tale, Jun Zhan Tian obviously asked the reason.

Jun Mo Xie replied in a voice which seemed to resemble something between weeping and laughing: "It looks like I might have had something to do with this... .." Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi almost choked as they heard his words, and started at him with a stunned look on their faces.

No one would ever be able to find out Jun Mo Xie's involvement in this affair, unless Tang Yuan ratted him out... but if the Old Eunuch ever found out that this accident was man-made, then... ..

Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi shouted out while their entire body started to sweat.....

"I only intended for him to fart when the Old Eunuch checked his buttocks... ..that's all, really. And I just gave him a pill to make him fart... .." Jun Mo Xie innocently looked at his grandfather and uncle: "Tang Yuan didn't wish to become an officer, so... .. I was just trying to help him out; I never intended to hurt anyone..."

They stared at him dumbstruck. They had never imaged that such a hilarious incident would be artificially fabricated; by none other than their own Jun Mo Xie! They obviously understood that this matter could never be made public; otherwise the consequences would be too severe!

# Chapter 154: The Debauchee Alliance

---

Jun Wu Yi and Jun Zhan Tian had no idea that this issue surrounding Tang Yuan was one of the most insignificant ones, which could be traced back to Jun Mo Xie. They were completely unaware that Jun Mo Xie was audaciously and innocently smiling at them after causing the majority of trouble which the Tian Xiang City had found itself in over the last few months... .. they had no idea that he was behind the Imperial Tutor Li's injury, and the reason behind their enemy's state teacher's visit... ..also, he was the reason why so many advanced Xuan's were flocking to the city...

"This has gone too far, no one shall be allowed to know about this!" Old man Jun stated: "That good old Tang Wan Li must be going green with madness, and I hope that he doesn't find out about this... .. he shouldn't, unless Tang Yuan rats you out..."

Jun Zhan Tian sighed, and then said: "Thanks to the heavens that he is Tang Wan Li's grandson, if he was anyone else's boy, Old Zhu would have blown him to dust on the spot. Mo Xie, you're lucky that your friend made it out alive, but this was way too dangerous... If anyone finds out, and especially if Eunuch Zhu finds out about the reality behind this incident, then even the Old Tang will not be able to save the two of you."

"What do you mean? What's so special about being Tang Wan Li's grandson? Even though fatty and I were only trying to make mischief, we never had any intention of hurting anyone... ..but what does this have to do with his grandfather?" Jun Mo Xie simply couldn't fathom that the Old Eunuch would possibly have enough influence to harm a 'Jun' and a 'Tang'... [He might be a Sky Xuan, but he's still just a palace eunuch.]

"Zhu Zhu Zhu is far more than just a palace eunuch, Mo Xie. I know you've matured a lot lately, but you need to be more careful before setting sail again..." Jun Zhan Tian stated in an earnest

tone.

Jun Mo Xie stared at his grandfather questioningly.

"Mo Xie, I agree that you didn't know about this... but Zhu Zhu Zhu is far more than a palace eunuch... he used to be a military general... he was a part of Empire's army, and was considered just below Old Dugu and me..." Grandfather Jun seemed to be getting a bit emotional at this point.

"Is ah?..." this time it was Jun Wu Yi who interjected: "Father, you said that that you've never worked with Old Zhu before... and that he's never served with you or Dugu Zhong Heng... ... Didn't general Zhu Cong Long die in the battle as the legend states?"

Jun Zhan Tian shook his head: "This is a secret which only a few people know apart from His Majesty, Tang Wan Li, Old Dugu and myself... Many years ago, when the Emperor was only the crown prince, he took his army into battle. The Jun army was flanking the right side of the enemy; the Dugu army was flanking the left, and the Prince was supposed to go head-on. At that time, the Tian Xiang Empire was still taking shape, and was only a very small Empire. The prince was ambushed, and we all arrived a little too late to rescue him. As a result, the prince was captured by the enemies along with two of his generals, Tang Wan Li, and Zhu Cong Long. The enemy wanted to rot the prince's body with vermin to stifle our military's motivation... But Zhu Cong Long stood out as a hero and valiantly disguised himself as the prince, and was then detained by the enemy for conducting their tortures..."

"Tortures?" Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi glanced at each other as they finally saw the light. They could finally see all the lies clearly!

"Obviously, we charged at the enemy at night to rescue our prince, and killed their attackers. Somehow, we were able to carry Zhu Cong Long away from the danger at the last second. But by the time we rescued him, his body had already stopped resembling

that of a human being. His upper and lower body had been eaten away by vermin, poisonous snakes, rats... his injuries had brought him on the doorstep of death... .. he had sustained at least a thousand wounds on his body; even his crotch had been torn to pieces... This general..." Jun Zhan Tian sighed regretfully.

[So that's why! That's the reason why such an accomplished expert is only a palace eunuch! And that's why he's so obsessed with cleanliness... ..]

Jun Mo Xie was finally able to understand, [no wonder the Old Eunuch occupies such a favored position in the palace... he suffered so much for the King... his majesty wouldn't allow such a loyal servant of his to be mistreated at any cost... ..]

This was another trait of the hitman, he couldn't admit that he was wrong; of course, he'd acknowledge it within his heart, but he wouldn't be able to bring it onto his tongue very easily!

"The war continued and we emerged victorious, but Zhu Cong Long was left with no desire to live. He was so shaken that he couldn't even talk about his trauma... he simply lost all courage to live, and even refused all medical treatment; he wouldn't drink or eat, and it seemed that he would die soon. Tang Wan Li was looking after him at the time, and Old Tang kept telling him, 'you saved my life; if you die, then I won't live in this world either.' Tang Wan Li stopped eating in protest, but Zhu Cong Long remained indifferent to his hunger strike for the initial three days, and his condition continued to worsen. Then, Tang Wan Li took out a blade and started cutting himself in front of Zhu Cong Long's eyes; he kept saying, 'I will kill myself in front of you before I watch you die'....."

Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi glanced at each other with dismay in their hearts. The tragic atmosphere of that moment from the past had left their hearts gloomy, but they were still very fascinated with the strength of their previous generation's brotherhood.

"Soon, Tang Wan Li had cut-off almost thirty pieces of flesh from his own body..... then, suddenly Zhu Cong Long broke into tears, and started eating his food. But Tang Wan Li fell down.... The condition of his injuries was far worse than the General's....."

Jun Zhan Tian continued: "At the end of the war, the prince ascended to the throne as the new Emperor. Tang Wan Li was given the status of nobility, and Zhu Cong Long volunteered to become a palace eunuch. He changed his name to Zhu Zhu Zhu and dedicated his life for safeguarding the Emperor in secrecy. The general Zhu, who died in the battle protecting the prince, is still alive in the man named Zhu Zhu Zhu!"

"No one has ever been able to find out that Zhu Zhu Zhu and General Zhu Cong Long is the same person since he changed his appearance....."

The entire room had gone silent by the time this secret was fully revealed. The breathtaking tale of their unshakeable friendship and brotherhood seemed to have taken control of Jun Zhan Tian's heart!

[No wonder grandfather said that any other man's boy would have been killed on the spot!]

Just as Jun Zhan Tian finished, a servant came in to inform: [A regiment from the Tang Family has arrived at the door asking for the master of the house... They are carrying an injured and half-dead Tang Yuan with them...]

Grandfather Jun started to panic: [has my grandson been exposed? They have come to our doorstep!]

They walked out nervously, and were informed that Tang Yuan had been excommunicated from the Tang Family, but the womenfolk of the Tang Family didn't wish to leave him out in the open, which is why they wish for him to stay with the Jun Family for now... ..

The womenfolk of the Tang Family were afraid that the Jun Family might refuse fatty Tang since his reputation was very degenerate. But Grandfather Jun straightaway nodded in approval and had him carried away to Jun Mo Xie's courtyard. Feeling guilty, the Tang Family's representatives promptly bowed their heads in courtesy and then quickly left, believing that fatty Tang was at the reason behind the mishap...

"Third young master... ..this is all because of you... You almost got me killed." Tang Yuan stated as he lay on the bed upon his stomach, after the two of them had been left alone. Zhu Zhu Zhu's palm had damaged his buttocks to such an extent that the fatty would have no option but to sleep on his stomach for a long while.

"You you you, you never told me that the pill would give me gas... ..!" Tang Yuan gnashed his teeth grimly: "You sent me into the palace after giving me a laxative! I realized that something was wrong, and even though I tried to restrain myself, but once the Old Eunuch put those sticks up my butt, I ... I was unable to restrain myself any longer and ended up... .."

"Stop it!" it appeared as if Jun Mo Xie would end up vomiting... blood: "I only gave you a mild laxative, so how did this happen?!"

"I did as you said... I ate a belly-full before going to the palace, and then ate that pill before seeing the Old Eunuch, but then... .. This happened... .." Tang Yuan strained his voice hard as he tearfully condemned and accused Jun Mo Xie.

"What?" Jun Mo Xie finally understood where things went wrong, "You ate food in the morning? Didn't I specifically tell you not to eat anything under any circumstances? And you still ate a 'belly-full'? That obviously acted as a catalyst, and made the laxative even more potent... Why would you do such a thing?"

"Ah?" Tang Yuan immediately remembered Jun Mo Xie's exact words, and then started shaking: "I did the exact opposite..."

"Okay, but either way you still got what you wished for since

your purpose was still accomplish. But what about this issue?" Jun Mo Xie asked disdainfully: "According to my original plan, you would have gotten out of the palace looking a lot better than this... .." Jun Mo Xie retched loudly: "You should be glad that I'm letting you live!"

"Sure, but you don't scare me right now. That Old Eunuch actually turned out to be a Sky Xuan expert! A blue light flashed from his hand when he raised his blade to cut my clothes, and he actually managed to strip me naked without even scratching my flesh! I obviously gave up then, and this is what happened as a result... I was at his mercy, and I reckon that the only reason I'm still alive is because he's friends with my grandfather!"

Fatty Tang actually seemed a bit proud: "Fortunately, by the time Grandpa kicked me out of the house, I was already prepared for it. I have been saving money for a while now, and I know that it's not much, but it's enough to get by for a while." Then, he suddenly became nervous and said: "Third young master, you'll have to gamble again... But be careful... I cannot lose this money... this isn't my family's money, it's my own..."

Jun Mo Xie was left dumbstruck; [he hasn't even changed one bit after getting kicked out of his family?]

Fatty Tang winked: "Third young master, before you say something, let me tell you this... .. you don't know this, but my brother has been kicked out of the family three times now. So even though it's surprising to outsiders, you see why I'm not worried... ..?"

Jun Mo Xie was left completely dazed at this point... Ultimately, he was unable to hold his neck in an upright position, and ended up landing it on the coffee table in front; twice!

# Chapter 155: Challenges of the Yin Yang Escape

---

"You're the vomit of your entire family!" Jun Mo Xie yelled out: "Fatty, you've been given shelter here by my family and me, and if you don't work seriously in building our business empire then I'll slice you in broad daylight! And make sure to remember these words correctly!"

"I was born to do business." Tang Yuan lifted his fat neck off the bed with great effort, and said: "Tell me your plan; and then let's look at its downsides, and once we're ready, I'll stuff all the world's gold and silver within the embrace of your arms!"

"Our arms!" Jun Mo Xie corrected the sentence: "Either way, since you've put me in-charge of the money, I will not allow you to spend any money recklessly; not even if we have the biggest stack in the entire world!"

Jun Mo Xie removed a sheet of paper from his clothing as he said: "I don't have the time to explain everything to you; this is a written account of my business plan. I don't quite understand all the aspects of it, but since you claim to be an expert, you shouldn't have any difficulties in understanding everything." Then Jun Mo Xie patted Tang Yuan twice on his wounds, and waltz out of the room as Tang Yuan screamed curses.

Tang Yuan muttered to himself: "I've been doing business all my life, so why would you draft out a business plan and hand it over to me? I could make one even in my sleep!" he closed his eyes as he tucked Jun Mo Xie's paper under his pillow, and then fell into a deep sleep.

Jun Mo Xie didn't find much time to interact with Tang Yuan over the next two days since the young master Jun was extremely busy practicing the Yin Yang Escape law. Even while sleeping, walking and eating, the young master Jun wouldn't think of



anything other than the Yin Yang Escape law, [the ability to vanish at any time is a very important lifesaving skill. Who could harm me if I was able to master this law? Even if a peak Supreme Xuan attacked me, then I could simply use this method to disappear.... How can someone kill something they can't even see?]

Jun Mo Xie tirelessly continued to practice the Yin Yang Escape law. In order to tune his body up for the practice, Jun Mo Xie would cleanse his entire body with Xuan Qi almost fifty times a day, and would extract more Xuan Qi again, until he was completely exhausted.....

Although the Hongjun Pagoda had a strong supply of Xuan Qi, Jun Mo Xie was still running short. The practice of this law required a massive surge of Xuan Qi, and the usual trickling from the Hongjun Pagoda was simply insufficient. Jun Mo Xie would incite the Hongjun Pagoda into supplying insane amounts of Xuan Qi, and then once he had gathered enough, he'd make the Pagoda stop, and then the cycle would return to its start.... Again and again.

Due to Jun Mo Xie's continuous and concentrated effort, his skills had advanced quite significantly over these past two days.

But there were still a few downsides to it: he had no teacher to guide him, which meant that he was forced to rely on his own means. This was tantamount to shooting in the dark, and Jun Mo Xie's experiments were turning out to be very painful.

At the end of the two days, Jun Mo Xie was left completely exhausted, and depressed, and even though he had tried everything he could think of, his methods had still been completely ineffective. The only effect that he had been able to witness was the look on the Lolita's face, who was under the impression that the young master Jun had lost his mind.....

"Little Ke, can you still see me?"

"Of course I can see you, what do you mean? Are you playing a

joke on me?" Little Ke widened her big and round eyes and tilted her head as she looked at Jun Mo Xie.

"Ah....." Jun Mo Xie resumed his research.

".....Master, why are you walking that way?" Little Ke looked up at him.

.....

".....Master, why are you taking your clothes off?"

"Master, your hair is so messed up now....."

.....

"Master, why did you bang your face into the wall? It must have hurt ah!"

..... Jun Mo Xie was forced to end his bitter wall-experiment.

"Master, you're acting really weird today....."

"Master, that posture is really weird....."

"Ah! Master..... Heavens, what are you trying to do.....stop it..... if you hit your head against the tree, then you'll get a headache, and then we'll have to take you to a doctor....." The Lolita was completely terrified.....

"Ahhhh!" Jun Mo Xie was going mad, "What am I missing out on? I've tried everything!" after trying hundreds of times, Jun Mo Xie finally sat down under the large tree in the yard. Jun Mo Xie had paid a very heavy price in the process of practicing this law, and his forehead was already exposing a lump from the time he had bumped it against the wall in the hope of getting a result.....

He had been leaping up and down, falling bang and boom everywhere.....

He was sitting without any clothes covering his body at the moment, and one could clearly see the blisters and bruises which covered his body.....

As for vanishing into the wind..... Jun Mo Xie was unaware that this technique was the core law of the Yin Yang Escape..... "Damn it, what else do you want me to do now?"

"I've been over everything....." Jun Mo Xie sadly looked at the scars on his body, and then suddenly bowed his head, and tucked it into his thighs, and rolled onto the ground.....

Little Ke was frightened at the sight of his plight!

Ever since Grandpa Jun had made his son, Jun Wu Yi the master of the house, he was rarely ever present in the house. But Little Ke was a bit afraid of Jun Wu Yi's personality, and would try to avoid him as much as possible, which is why she went to Guan Qing Han for assistance. Once she started to cry, Guan Qing Han reluctantly came over to help.

When Guan Qing Han came over, she found Jun Mo Xie curled into a ball with his head tucked into his thighs.....

He had no clothing on his body; even his buttocks were bare-naked..... His dazzling white and smooth body just lay bare on the ground.....

"What are you doing?" Guan Qing Han was a bit surprised as she coldly looked at her brother-in-law: "You like abusing people like this?" [I don't know if this guy is completely mad, or just evil.... Just look at him, he's looking like a beggar right now!]

Jun Mo Xie seemed a bit dazed as he raised his head while murmuring like a mad-man, while the veins in his eyes were red with blood. He continued to blankly stare at Guan Qing Han for a long while without making any sounds, and then suddenly her thought crossed his mind, and he jumped up and banged his head against the tree, and fell right back on the ground below, and his eyes started to lose focus.....

Guan Qing Han laughed at his ridiculousness: "Why would you try to stand up like that? What's next..... this third generation heir

of the Jun Family is really one of a kind."

Jun Mo Xie's mind was completely immersed with the study and research of the Yin Yang escape law, and he was completely indifferent to everything else in the world at the moment. Things had reached a stage where he would walk straight into a brick wall to accomplish his goals; in fact, even if he hit the wall and ended up hurting himself, he'd walk into it again until he reached his goal. [What is Guan Qing Han talking about? Does she even know how beautiful she really is?!]

Even though he was absurdly dedicated to his work, he still hadn't been able to obtain the desired result thus far.....

He frowned as he pondered for a while and then suddenly jumped up again, and landed shakily on his feet.....

Jun Mo Xie twitched a few times, and then giggled: "I need to put more effort into this.... Then I can go and peep on my beautiful sister-in-law while she bathes....." and then he suddenly felt as if he'd faint.

The heavens know that he would have wished to vanish before saying this sentence out loud! In his state of concussion, Jun Mo Xie probably wasn't even aware that he had uttered these words out loud.....

[Oh my god, oh my god, what did he say!]

[...He wants to peep while I bathe... ...]

Guan Qing Han's entire body shivered with anger as she went pale!

"Miss..... he is concussed, and he's just talking nonsense, you don't take his words literally..... young master has changed a lot recently....." Little Ke started to blush as she stammered while trying to defend Jun Mo Xie under the pressure of the situation.

Guan Qing Han's anger exploded and she scolded in a cold tone: "Little Ke, you're trying to save this monster even now?" then

without saying another word, she straight away kicked Jun Mo Xie in the leg..... then she kicked him again since she hadn't vent out her anger properly.

Jun Mo Xie was completely surprised, which clearly reflected on his face, and his face suddenly changed looks several times in an instant.

Guan Qing Han was still silent, but her eyes had started to tear; that one sentence of Jun Mo Xie's had shamed her to the extreme! Then, she raised her hand to strike Jun Mo Xie's face.

Jun Mo Xie stepped backwards and managed to evade her strike. His voice expressed a clear and authentic air of surprise: "Sister-in-law, what are you doing?" in this condition of pain, his instinct was prompting him to tear her into two pieces!

"You know well, you bastard!" Guan Qing Han thundered as she continued to press harder.

Jun Mo Xie calmly kept dodging her attacks: "I don't think I offended you today, so why are you doing this?"

"You didn't offend me?" Guan Qing Han was surprised at the shamelessness of her brother-in-law, and was even more infuriated to realize that she was unable to reach him. Then, suddenly she pulled out the knife she was wielding around her waist, and waved it towards Jun Mo Xie's shoulder to stab him.

Jun Mo Xie was in a state of complete shock, [why are you doing this? Why would you attack me with a knife?] Confused, he scrambled to escape her blade. His body had already sustained hundreds of bruises, and was obviously completely exhausted. Moreover, since his Xuan Qi was completely depleted as well, it was getting extremely hard for him to dodge Guan Qing Han's onslaught since he was unable to fight back!

Left with no other option, he made a quick decision and then quickly turned around and ran. Little Ke jumped-in to try and

block Guan Qing Han, but was obviously unsuccessful..... Tang Yuan could also hear the noise, and started shouting while lying on his bed: "Kill it....."

At this point, the gatekeeper trotted over: "Master, Lady, two adults from the southern province have arrived to pay a visit."

Guan Qing Han made an 'ah' sound while her knife fell to the ground.

Jun Mo Xie crooked his nose and muttered: "Why me? And now her family has arrived at my doorstep?"

# Chapter 156: Buried alive

---

The gatekeeper was completely unaware that the Jiang Nan delegation had arrived with their own ulterior motives. [I have no idea why so many people are flocking to the Tian Xiang City in this time of turmoil..... What is going on here?]

[Now even my own people are trying to steal from me?] Jun Mo Xie frowned, sensing that something was amiss.

The entire Capital was in a state of chaos at the moment.

The days were as normal, peaceful and calm as ever since no one would dare to cause a commotion in broad daylight. But the City's night patrol had been finding an increasing number of dead bodies in every part of the city with each passing night. Often the City's patrol would find unknown and strange devices on the bodies of the deceased. The department of justice and the Imperial army had been keeping a close eye on the movements inside the city, and were completely confused by these events since the major gangs within the city didn't seem involved.

However, all the major gangs of the city seemed to be aware of this instability, and had already tightened their securities, which was making it even harder for the authorities to investigate into the matter. The result of the final investigation left everyone shell-shocked:

The deceased don't belong to the Tian Xiang City; they comprise of every major faction outside the city, and many of the dead bodies discovered belonged to renowned and accomplished foreign individuals. Even though the encounters which lead to their deaths happened in silence, the majority of the deceased were advanced Xuans. In fact, all the dead bodies procured so far are above the base of silver Xuan realm.

These incidents are becoming more and more frequent, with the most recent one involving the Mu Rong Family.

Then as the investigation continued, we were able to discover that three out of the City's five major families were involved in the fray; namely, the Song Family, the Mu Rong Family, and the Meng Family. Although there is no concrete evidence of the roles of these families, but it is evident that they are involved! Even the third prince seems to be faintly involved.....

How can we investigate our own houses? Although the officials weren't able to get to the bottom of the matter, but they couldn't help muttering to themselves: [are we witnessing a major revolution in the capital?]

The secrecy with which these factions were operating was making them even more nervous.

On one particular night, a variety of Xuan beasts flew over the capital city concealed in the dark curtains of the night, causing fireworks, and leaving only corpses in their path.

The Solitary Falcon had been the most active rogue on the city's streets over the last couple of nights. He had ventured out in this chaos out of sheer curiosity, and even though he was quite disheartened on not finding anyone worthwhile to cross sword against, but he still crushed any opposition he faced to sate his mad desires. In fact, it could be said that he had been killing every person he encountered in the street at night, irrespective of the strength of his victim. Of course, the Solitary Falcon didn't consider his action unjust: [I never intended on killing you. I was simply trying to learn something from your skills..... it isn't my problem that you're so useless that I couldn't even learn a single thing from your useless experience. How can I be blamed for someone else's incompetence?]

Had he been able to learn anything from a person he dueled against, then he would have allowed them to live on, but unfortunately, no one was able to show sufficient skill to deserve that chance, and were hence massacred by him..... this was another reason behind the chaos in the city. He was one of the



main reasons behind the deaths of several Silver, Gold, Earth Xuans.....

The whole city was in a mess!

The Solitary Falcon was walking towards a large building at the moment. He hadn't been able to learn much in the two nights he had spent exploring the talent on the city's streets so far, after all, it was quite hard for him to find inspiring talent at his level.

Therefore, the Solitary Falcon had decided that he would focus his attention only on people above the Earth Xuan realm from now on. But finding such experts was a hard task, and he needed to find himself a large network of spies who were capable to finding such people.....

[There is no way I'll find skilled experts roaming around the streets of this city...]

Therefore, the Solitary Falcon had decided to approach one of the largest gangs of the Tian Xiang City: The Jin Yang gang.

This was the only shortcut that he could think of. He was confident that the Jin Yang gang's network would be sufficient to give him an insight on the whereabouts of high level Xuan experts within the city. [They might be one of the largest factions in this city, but even they cannot reject the offer of currying a favor with a man like me!]

The Solitary Falcon was obviously very confident..... or maybe a bit overconfident!

"Boom!"

The thick door of the Jin Yang gang's building was suddenly shattered to pieces, and the sawdust from its remaining fragments filled the atmosphere of the lobby. The handful of people who were sitting and drinking tea in the lobby weren't expecting company, and naturally stood up in shock.

[Who would dare to walk into the Jin Yang gang's building in

such a manner?!]

A figure slowly emerged from the within the cloud of sawdust; long hair, black clothes!

"I'd like to see the leader of Jin Yang gang!" the Solitary Falcon stated his demand in a rather dominating fashion since he could clearly see that the men in front of his eyes weren't capable enough of calling the shots for such a large organization.

Even though these men belonged to the one of the largest gangs in the city, but they were no more than mere ants in the eyes of this intruder. The Solitary Falcon was well aware that he could decide the fate of their existence at his whims and fancies, so why would he bother being polite to such men?

The Jin Yang gang's men looked at each other in confusion for a long time, unable to decide the course of action, and then suddenly started shouting as they withdrew their weapons and charged towards the Solitary Falcon. The Solitary Falcon grunted as he withdrew his sword, and then painted the room in the bloody colors of a setting sun. The room quieted down as soon as the swords of his victims fell to the ground.....

### Jun Mo Xie's courtyard

Jun Mo Xie's infatuation with the Yin Yang Escape law hadn't diminished yet, and he was still busy practicing the method diligently. In fact, it seemed that his desire had been propelled further, almost to the point where he seemed willing to suffocate himself in the process of achieving his goal!

Guan Qing Han's kick had enlightened Jun Mo Xie, and he had suddenly realized something. As a result of his realization, he had prohibited everyone from coming into his courtyard. So much so, that even Little Ke wasn't allowed to witness his training at the moment. He had realized that the Yin Yang Escape law was beyond the imagination of the men and women of this world; so naturally, if he was able to succeed, then it would cause a sensation.... Jun

Mo Xie was well aware that this news would spread faster than any other.

Jun Mo Xie had made tremendous progress after some arduous experiments over the course of the evening: he had succeeding in traversing up to ten feet while holding his breath for a period of three seconds.... Obviously, while being invisible!

The ability of being invisible for a span of three breaths shouldn't be underestimated by any means since this time frame was enough to kill a dozen men!

Delighted by his achievement, the young master Jun had started practicing the ability to escape into the ground. [Escaping into the ground ah, now that's the stuff legends are made out of! Imagine if I could vanish into thin air while fighting an enemy, and then my sword sticks out from the ground and kills them all in one swoop! What could be more fun than the sight of their comrades' expressions?]

With this thought controlling his mind, Jun Mo Xie accumulated all the energy he could muster, and then suddenly zapped his body into the ground below his feet, leaving no trace of his existence on the ground above. It was at this point when he realized that he suddenly realized his mistake: he had successfully managed to escape into the ground, but what about getting out.....

For the fear of failure, Jun Mo Xie had used the entire energy which he had been able accumulate and had managed to escape several feet into the ground. Obviously, he couldn't help feeling pleased with the result, but soon started to realize the problem he had landed himself in: He had used the entire energy he had accumulated in order to escape into the ground..... but he would need the same amount of energy to get out as well.....

[What now?]

[What do I do now? Stay calm, stay clam; it's just soil!]

As he started to feel the enormous pressure of the soil on his body, Jun Mo Xie began to realize something for the first time in his life... ... [the earth is extremely powerful!] But that wasn't the least of his concerns; the biggest concern was the fact that there was almost no air in the soil which he was stuck in. Obviously, there is no way one can live without air. [Will I have to rely on brute strength to climb out now? I don't even know how deep I'm buried...]

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie's courtyard's ground was no longer made of average soil. At the time when the Hongjun Pagoda had gone berserk, his courtyard's ground level had sunk by almost three feet due to the enormous pressure of the aura, making his courtyard's floor even stronger than the average everyday granite due to compression. Climbing out of such solidified soil was obviously not an easy task!

Jun Mo Xie frantically called upon the Hongjun Pagoda, but it seemed that the Pagoda was feeling a bit lethargic at the moment..... Jun Mo Xie had used the Hongjun Pagoda almost a hundred times today in order to assimilate the aura he needed for his practice since he was itching to succeed in his endeavor....

[Are you mad at me Pagoda? Damn it, you just had to pick this time for taking it out on me? Ah, I'm suffocating here! .....you want me to beg?]

He started to choke due to the lack of air, while the enormous pressure of the soil started to interrupt his blood flow, and it seemed from his heartbeat that his heart would pop out of his mouth at any time. It started to seem as if the Hongjun Pagoda had abandoned him in this moment of need. The hitman could barely even move his fingers due to the pressure of the soil....

At this time, Jun Mo Xie's thoughts started taking a bizarre turn, and he started cursing the Pagoda within his mind: "Nothing good has happened ever since this damned broken Pagoda has waltzed into my life! You can shake the entire city in one go, but now

you're choosing to sit idly while I'm being suffocated to death?"

It wasn't long before Jun Mo Xie was no longer able to endure the pressure. Soon, all he could feel was the pulse in his brain..... he had already started feeling dizzy, and he was certain that he would lose consciousness very soon. He desperately tried to push his energy into his Dan Tian in the hope of kick-starting the Hongjun Pagoda several times.... No response.

His mind started becoming increasingly unstable, and soon he had given up the rational way of thinking.....

At this point, a golden image suddenly appeared inside his mind, and the Hongjun Pagoda gradually started to rotate at a very leisurely pace. The young master Jun didn't even have enough strength to curse at this point, so he just quietly waited...and prayed.

## Chapter 157: Business Guru

---

As the Aura started to circulate through his body, Jun Mo Xie started feeling some calm again. The Aura started circulating around his Dan Tian and then slowly progressed to the rest of his body, and that feeling of suffocation instantly vanished. However, Jun Mo Xie was still a bit frenetic, and the moment he had accumulated a third of the energy required to rescue himself from his predicament, he used the Yin Yang Escape law to propel himself out of the soil!

Puff! Jun Mo Xie inhaled fresh air once again as his head popped out of the soil, leaving him with a feeling of resurrection. As he greedily breathed the air again, he started to realize just how sweet and comforting the atmospheric air can be.....

Wheezing and panting, Jun Mo Xie still hadn't realized that he had only been able to rescue just half of his body, while the other half of his body was still buried in the ground.....

"Master!" a high octave voice sounded all of a sudden as the little Lolita came up running and crying: "Master who did this to you? Who could be so cruel? Buried alive, ah....."

Jun Mo Xie remained speechless.....

[I cannot tell this little girl that I buried myself alive, right? That would be too shameful! No, I definitely can't tell anyone that..... stop yelling, are deliberately trying to tell everyone? That would be very embarrassing for me!]

He went to great lengths to convince the young Lolita to stop with her tears, meanwhile constantly trying to pull himself out of the ground by sheer force. But he was unsuccessful in pulling himself out since the solidified ground had almost no chinks or gaps, and the constant struggling was causing more and more pain to his legs and feet.

Although he knew that Little Ke was surely on his side, it was still better for Jun Mo Xie's sake that this information stayed out of people's ears. Jun Mo Xie wanted to pull himself out using the easier method, but he knew that Little Ke wouldn't be able to sustain the shock.....

[I can't use the Yin Yang Escape to pull myself out in front of this girl.... So now what? Dig a hole in the ground? Or pull myself out using Yin Yang Escape? This little girl will go crazy if I use the Yin Yang Escape.... But watching her reaction would definitely be fun...]

Jun Mo Xie started digging a hole in the ground, and then climbed out of the ground, and lay down on the floor exhausted.

He instructed the little Lolita to keep her mouth shut, and then got up to return to his room, when suddenly.....

"Good Heavens! Ah ah ah ah ~~~~~" a cadence roar mingled with a strong aria from within Tang Yuan's room shook the entire firmament. The volume of the voice left the young master Jun squatting on the floor from fear.

In this world or the previous, the hitman Jun had never been embarrassed twice in the same day in this manner before!

"Third young master wow, I'd kiss you brother wow..... Mo Xie, you're my brother; no, you're my savior! Where did you get that? Come over here....." another heaven-shaking cry resounded from fatty Tang's room. The surprise in the voice resembled that of a pervert who had just laid eyes on seven heavenly fairies taking a bare-bodied shower in the rains.....

Jun Mo Xie nervously opened the door to fatty's room, and wasn't surprised to see that the fatty's personal maid was already trembling with fear in one corner of the room. This however, was quite awe inspiring about fatty's voice..... his inspiring call had already received acknowledgement from the watchdogs of the Jun residence, who had started barking now.

"Heaven ah ah ah~~~~~" Fatty Tang continued to chant as he looked at Jun Mo Xie with tears in his eyes, while his body seemed to be twitching to leave the bed. The look of excitement in his perfectly round and small eyes seemed to resembling the look of a pilgrim who had just seen the sacred Buddha .....

"Oh come on! You better lie down..... hurry up and lie down....." Jun Mo Xie stepped forward, [if I let this fatty fall down from his bed, then I reckon that the fall will completely disable his body. I need him to be functional.]

"I, I, I, I ..... I .... You ..... you...." Tang Yuan's eyes were tearing while his lips were trembling: "I am me... I you... You ... you..."

"What I you me?" Jun Mo Xie squinted his eyes as his patience started to give in: "Fatty, don't call me your brother, I'm one step away from sending you to the dogs.... It's the middle of the night, and? Even if you don't wish to sleep, at least let the rest of us get some rest. At least take some pity on my watchdogs, they've been up all day... they are tired, why don't you let them rest a while? Now, why are you shouting in the middle of the night?"

"I, I, I ... .. I, damn, I thought I would die!" Tang Yuan looked at Jun Mo Xie with tears in his eyes: "Third young master, I really don't know where you got this from.... Your idea will bring the world to an order... this idea will blow the mind of the entire world.... This is truly genius; I've never been so surprised in my entire life... me, I could worship you; like a surging river of endless rain, like the immortal waves of the seas, like the boundless white of the snowy mountains! You're really....."

"Stop!" The series of boot-licking comments had left Jun Mo Xie dizzy. His order ended Tang Yuan's flattery, and so he asked: "What are you trying to do?"

[Tang Yuan is certainly up to something; I know I'm very talented, he's right about that, but why would he go on and on about it!]



"The business plan....." Tang Yuan's hand trembled as he took out the paper: "Did you write this yourself, or are you passing someone else's work as your own?"

Jun Mo Xie nodded in confusion: "Yes, ah? Why would you think that this was written by someone else?"

He had really written the idea himself. Jun Mo Xie had often needed to play someone else's identity in his previous life, which obviously required to him to have some knowledge about everything, such as planning, business, stock market.... In fact, Jun Mo Xie had once ventured into a prestigious business school to learn somethings!

He could talk about the simple things. But he wasn't capable of going into the details.

"You asked if I was in?" Tang Yuan grabbed Jun Mo Xie's hand in excitement, and said: "Master, master, I'm in. Please accept your follower's respect.... No no, master, you must accept me as your disciple..... accept me as a disciple....."

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt a blob of mass wrapped around his hands, and quickly tried to pull his hands free, but was unable to since he was already quite exhausted. He had really never expected that Tang Yuan would hold on to his hand like it was a matter of life and death. The fatty continued to tear and beg: "master.... Master, you must take pity on me.... Accept me as a disciple....."

"Fatty, if you ever do this again, then I'll throw you in a pit alive. Now will you let go of my hand?" Jun Mo Xie threatened ferociously, and then said: "This plan... do you think it's worth something?" [why is this fatty acting out like this...?]

Fatty Tang reluctantly released Jun Mo Xie's hand as his sharp eyes cried with dissatisfaction: "Any good? If your egotism had any limits, then you would have known that this plan is obviously the ultimate business plan! This is an unprecedented invention! Any businessman would come begging to you and would study under

you! You're being too humble right now, you're a once in a generation genius business man!" Fatty Tang replied in excitement.

"Uh? Is it really that good?" Jun Mo Xie was a bit skeptical. [How did I become such a great business genius?] After all, he had never really done business in his life, and had at best disguised himself as one. This information was a gist of everything which he had heard in his previous life, and he was hoping that Tang Yuan would be able to make head or tail of it. But he had never expected this kind of a reaction from Tang Yuan.

Jun Mo Xie hadn't expected that his broken knowledge of business from his two lifetimes would receive this sort of a reaction.....

No knowledge is terrible!

But bragging more than you know is ever worse!

Tang Yuan took two deep breaths and then rolled over to his show his backside. Even though turning over was quite painful for him, he endured the pain with a straight face: "Third young master..... quickly look at my ass and tell me if it's still bleeding?"

"I feel like vomiting!" Jun Mo Xie retched loudly: "Damn, you do know that I'm only keeping you here because you have nowhere else to go, right?"

Tang Yuan suddenly started to laugh in embarrassment: "Do you know I can barely eat or drink these days..... I'm surviving on medicine....."

Jun Mo Xie sternly looked at Tang Yuan and said: "Fatty, do you seriously think that the idea will work?"

"Trust me! This is definitely the gold mine for a business man! The world will never see such a great business plan again! We just need to follow this business plan, modify it at best, and you and I will become the richest business men in the entire world!" Tang

Yuan seemed very sure: "Third young master, as long as you have the goods, this Tang Yuan will open shops in every corner of the continent, and even the beasts from the Tian Fa forest will come to shop with us if they have the money for it!"

"That's good!" Jun Mo Xie exhaled: "You will manage everything on your own from here on. I mean it, you're responsible for all of it, the marketing, buying land, construction, jobs, shops, security... etc etc.... don't come looking for me! I really have no interest in any of this!"

"Don't worry, I understand, and I won't bother you. We'll be rolling in mountains of gold and silver soon! Just you wait and watch!" Tang Yuan seemed very confident of himself, while his eyes continued to stare at the paper in amazement.

"Then I'll go and get some sleep, and we'll talk later tomorrow." Jun Mo Xie started to leave.

"Get out of here then. And don't disturb me, I'm going to have some fun here....." Tang Yuan waved almost as if he was waving a fly away, while his eyes still hadn't parted from the paper.

"Really! You disrespect me like that after calling me your teacher! You're one disobedient disciple!" Jun Mo Xie mocked his friend, but didn't receive any response. Tang Yuan didn't even seem to be paying attention to his presence anymore....

The hitman Jun bitterly left the room.....

## Chapter 158: Hai Chen Feng

---

Although the training had been very agonizing but Jun Mo Xie was pleasantly surprised to realize that his body's Xuan Qi had seen a significant rise. In fact, he was even able to execute the Yin Yang Escape law with much more ease than before.....

But the most surprising thing which Jun Mo Xie was able to realize was: Even though the Hongjun Pagoda was very powerful, it wasn't very reliable. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie figured that he would have to rely on his own strength in crunch times!

[I cannot rely on external forces, so I must concentrate on increasing my own strength.]

Jun Mo Xie still hadn't prepared himself for the convention at the Old Song's shop yet, which was scheduled to take place the following afternoon. Therefore, once Jun Mo Xie had restored his expended Xuan Qi using the Hongjun Pagoda, he went straight to the wine warehouse, and started tinkering...

Under the boundless curtains of darkness, Jun Wu Yi emerged out of a big house with a mask concealing his face, while his robes were drenched in blood. A bunch of young boys and girls followed after him and towards their independence with hope and appreciation in their eyes.

It shall not be assumed that the blood which stained his clothes belonged to him. This blood had splashed out of the bodies of countless experts who were involved in the trafficking of young children.

The house in the background now housed several dismembered bodies. In fact, this was the third time that Jun Wu Yi had visited this mansion.

Jun Wu Yi had finally learnt to agree with Jun Mo Xie statement: "Some people ignore the law of the land, and use it to shield their

inhuman activities. Such people can only be exterminated from the face of the land. Sometimes, dealing violence with violence is the only right path!"

Independent of careful investigation and secretive tracking, no one would have ever imagined that such a rich and imposing house could be harboring such filthy criminals.

The first time when Jun Wu Yi had ventured into this mansion, he had entered with the intention to injure, and not kill. And then he had sent an anonymous message to the City's patrol; [arrest these people and bring them to justice under the eyes of the land's law.]

A day later he found out that these criminals had vanished from the prison! Jun Wu Yi launched several inquiries and found out that these people were well connected and had managed to escape with help from officials, and were now seeking treatment in secrecy. Angered, Jun Wu Yi had decided to rush into their place of hiding and had drenched the mansion's floor with blood!

Jun Wu Yi had already learnt from his experience: [Since the law doesn't sanction them a fair punishment.... my sword will! I'll bring them to justice on behalf of the heavens!]

His frozen smile basked in the glorious moonlight for a while, and then a blue light flashed as he faded into the darkness again!

In another corner of the city, a blue-robed man was sitting on the edge of his bed in silence.

A black clothed man was sitting in front of him, adorned in countless bandages. "Brother, if there was any other way, then I wouldn't have asked you to travel all the way to the Tian Xiang City.... Brother, I'm in a lot of trouble, and I can't find a way out! Brother, if you don't help me then my entire life's work will be over in front of my eyes....."

The speaker, dressed in black clothes was Jin Feng Lie! The

master of the city's largest gang faction, Jin Yang gang!

He had confronted the Solitary Falcon at the time when the latter had intruded into the premises of his establishment, and had been knocked down on the ground by the Solitary Falcon in just three moves. He was only alive because the Solitary Falcon had shown him mercy. He belonged to a class of men who were already considered eminent and unapproachable in the eyes of common people, after all, he was the leader of Tian Xiang City's largest gang faction!

Jin Feng Lie was already midway through the Earth Xuan realm, which could be considered unattainable for normal human beings, but in the eyes of a Supreme Xuan, he was no more than an ant.

After proposing the terms of surrender, the Solitary Falcon had deliberately given Jin Feng Lie two days' time to consider his options.

The Solitary Falcon knew that Jin Feng Lie's surrender was only a matter of time, unless of course the man was able to find an expert competent enough to compete against him, in which case, he'd get to have some fun and test his skills. Obviously, the Solitary Falcon didn't reveal his real identity.

He obviously knew that Jin Feng Lie would have surrendered in a heartbeat, if he did.

Unfortunately, Jin Feng Lie was unaware of this!

"Brother Jin, you say.... Did you say that he beat you in three strokes?" the handsome-faced blue-robed man asked calmly: "Three strokes.... You know.... Even I can't beat you in just three strokes.... In fact, if I tried to, I would probably not be able to succeed. As far as I can tell, this man's Xuan realm is above mine....."

"Brother Hai..... do you, you....." Jin Feng Lie remained tongue-tied as he choked his throat with the words 'you will sit idly while

he washes his hands with my blood?'.

The blue-robed man stood up, and started pacing back and forth inside the room; his blue-colored robe fluttered around his body like the waves of an ocean.

But the heart of this man was already sinking into a depression. He had already reached the peak of Sky Xuan more than a decade ago, but hadn't been unsuccessful in making the next breakthrough ever since. He too desired to obtain the Xuan Core, but was well aware that there was little hope for his success in this case as well, but was still hoping that he'd get his hands on the prize by a twist of fate. Although, he had never imagined that he'd be running into such a big problem beforehand.

This blue robed man was known as Hai Chen Feng, and he had always lived his life free and easy like the waves of the oceans, acting on his own moods and whims. For people with such skill, it is often hard to determine the difference between right and wrong.

Ten years ago, he had arrived in the Tian Xiang City and had ended up spurring a clash with a very powerful family of the city. Although he was defeated in the battle which took place a result of the falling out, his life was spared. If it weren't for Jin Feng Lie's care and protection, the seriously injured Hai Chen Feng would have succumbed to his injuries.

After his recovery, Hai Chen Feng assisted Jin Feng Lie with the Jin Yang gang's operations, and they managed to establish the gang as the strongest one in the city's territory in just one year's time, after which Hai Chen Feng left the Tian Xiang City.

He had returned to the Tian Xiang city with the hope of using the Jin Yang gang's network to procure the Xuan Core. After all, the Jin Yang gang's network was ingrained into the roots of the city, and his deep-rooted connection with them would obviously increase his chances of winning the Xuan Core.

He had never expected that the Jin Yang gang would come asking

for help at a time when he wanted their help!

Hai Chen Feng's heart was suffering unbearable angst, and he simply couldn't help asking himself: [Is the Tian Xiang City a forbidden territory for me? Why can't I ever set foot in this place in peace? Why is it that every time I come here, I find some big trouble waiting for me?]

[According to Jin Feng Lie's story, the strength of this man in black is at least as much as mine.... Probably more.... what should I do?]

He continued to pace about, only to realize that he still couldn't console his heart. Then, he raised his head and sighed deeply as he made his decision: [I'm Hai Chen Feng, and I must act here..... This man in black is either my doom, or he's dead!]

He looked at Jin Feng Lie gently: "Brother Jin, you go and tell that man that I will be waiting for him in the forest, south of the city.... three days from now!"

"Thank you Brother Hai!" Jin Feng Lie was overjoyed: "I knew that my Brother wouldn't just sit idly!" Over the years, Jin Feng Lie had grown confident that Hai Chen Feng would never fail at any task. Naturally, Jin Feng Lie firmly believed that even though his enemy was extremely strong, he'd never be able to defeat his Brother; Hai Chen Feng!

Jin Feng Lie was already thinking of going and celebrating.....

He had never even considered that even Hai Chen Feng wasn't invincible!

He was completely unaware of the bitter hardships that Hai Chen Feng's mind was going through at the moment!

[The appearance of this mysterious man in black reeks of an ominous sign! I believe that even if I win by a fluke, my victory will still be extremely tragic, and I will definitely be rendered incapable of competing for the Xuan Core. This is the last time that I will try



to help Bother Jin. Whatever the outcome of this battle is, I will leave the Tian Xiang City immediately after the battle, and I will never return again!]

"Brother Hai, you came to the Tian Xiang City for the Xuan Core, right?" Jin Feng Lie looked very excited: "I will immediately send out search groups to explore all angles surrounding this matter... ha ha ..... in fact, when I heard that you're coming, I immediately realized that you're here for the Xuan Core, and I set about in making the arrangements to help you get it." Jin Feng Lie smile and said: "If a power like you is being assisted by the Jin Yang gang, then I believe that procuring even a level nine Xuan Core shouldn't be an issue."

"No! You're wrong.... I didn't come here for the Xuan Core." Hai Chen Feng slowly shook his head as a trace of bitterness flashed in his eyes: "It's been a decade, and I've dearly missed my Brother. I came here especially to meet you, and spend some time with you."

[Since I've already assessed the dangers of my predicament, what's the point of getting him involved? I will carry the pain of the consequences of this matter... alone.]

"So....." Jin Feng Lie couldn't help feeling a bit sad, and so he said: "That..... since you've come especially to see me, you must spend an extra two days with me.... And you'd have made the breakthrough by the time we meet next, right?"

Hai Chen Feng's lips curved into a bitter smile as he gently shook his head, [breakthrough? I've already given up on that!] "After three days from now, I will leave this city, irrespective of the result of the battle. I will leave the city immediately and I will never return again my Brother. So we only have three days to spend together Brother....."

## Chapter 159: The warriors return

---

"Ah?" Jin Feng Lie suddenly stood up despite his injuries "What do you mean by that?"

"What do I mean? Brother Jin, you need not be present in the woods when I confront the man." Hai Chen Feng turned away and sighed: "I will deal with this man in black alone!"

[If you're there and you see me losing, then wouldn't you recklessly jump in to save me? It is completely unnecessary to increase the number of casualties.]

[Whether I defeat him or die trying, it's better that you don't witness either... ..this is the least that I can do after so many years of friendship to save you... ..]

Once Hai Chen Feng was finished speaking, he turned around to face the wall and sat down cross-legged, unwilling to speak any further.

"Brother Hai....." Jin Feng Lie cried out as a sudden and heavy feeling clogged his heart. His mind was crowded with concerns about his friend's safety: [was involving Brother Hai a bad thing? Is Brother Hai's life in danger? Brother Hai has always been very confident about himself.... I've never seen him worry like this before. I think everything will be fine once he gets his confidence back! Brother Hai has never ever failed at any task before!]

Since Hai Chen Feng didn't seem interested in any further conversations, Jin Feng Lie sighed in a low voice and then exited the room.

Jun Mo Xie sensed a difference in the aura around his courtyard, so he put on his robes and stepped out into his courtyard under the twilight sky.

Jun Mo Xie's small courtyard was at present housing over two hundred men, who were neatly organized in lines. They stood up

straight as soon as they saw Jun Mo Xie, brushed their uniforms, and shouted in unison: "Master, we've returned!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled in return. His eyes scanned each and every one of the men in his courtyard, and then inwardly nodded in approval. The incompetence of these men had been completely annihilated by the training they had undergone, and these originally useless soldiers had now turned into iron-blooded warriors with the blood thirst of an unrestrained beast.

"What's the report?" Jun Mo Xie asked with a smile.

"The report, Master, is this; twenty seven men dropped out of the training, nineteen lost their lives, making our total downsizing of forty six, while the remaining two hundred and fifty four men stand here in front of you! One hundred and thirty people broke into the ninth layer, eighty four men advanced to the Silver Xuan, while another thirty six men advanced to the peak of the Silver Xuan realm. A total of four men have already made it to the Gold Xuan! Also, we hunted down all the Beasts that we were required to, young master!" one of the men stepped out from the ranks and debriefed Jun Mo Xie. The man's voice was clearly expressing his excitement! These people seemed very happy and proud of their progress!

"Very good!" Jun Mo Xie praised approvingly: "You all have done a lot better than I expected. Can everyone feel that change in their bodies?"

Jun Mo Xie's sentence left the entire lot laughing in embarrassment as they recalled their days in the forest, and the times when they didn't even have enough food to eat..... who could have ever imagined that they would return victorious, and the suicide training mission that their young master had sent them on would force out their skills! The strength of these men had more than doubled over the course of their training!

"Remember, you've only managed to achieve this result because

you pushed yourself to the limits! Pushing oneself is the only way to tap into the infinite potential of the human body! Even cowards can become warriors! But if you stop pushing yourself, then your body will start decaying, and the warrior inside you will transform into a coward!"

Jun Mo Xie continued in a loud voice: "You have made excellent progress and it is your right to celebrate, but let me tell you that you've only taken your first step. Even the best of you has only reached the Gold Xuan, what's the value of that in this world? There's still Jade Xuan, Earth Xuan, Sky Xuan and then the Supreme Xuan realms left! There's a long way to go, and I find it very strange that you haven't realized that yet..... always keep your eyes and ears open and one day you may be able to attain the Supreme Xuan realm as well! There's still a long way for you all to go, but haste makes waste, and you need not look too far now. Just keep pushing yourself everyday... one step at a time, and unknowingly one day you'll realize that you've achieved the heights you could never even have dreamt about!"

"Yes! We honor and respect the young master's instructions!" everyone replied in unison.

Before accepting the training mission, these men didn't really think very highly of Jun Mo Xie. But these men were alarmed to realize that Jun Mo Xie's instructions had helped them in avoiding several life threatening situations inside the forest, owing to which these two hundred and fifty four men were convinced of Jun Mo Xie's leadership qualities and foresight.

"You must go and report to third uncle, and he will assign you to your tasks." Jun Mo Xie waved his hand.

"Master....." several of the men stepped forward in excitement: "We know that we don't deserve it, but..... Master... can you allow us to follow .... You?"

"Third Uncle will make the decisions." Jun Mo Xie smiled since

he knew that Jun Wu Yi would assign these men back to him. The uncle and nephew duo had a very clear tacit understanding in this respect!

Tang Yuan's snoring was loud enough to shake the very foundations of the Jun residence, and occasionally he'd even scream out: "ah.... My ass is paining.....!!" Everyone preferred his snoring over his complaining.

The Sun had just risen in the sky when Jun Wu Yi rolled out in his wheelchair and came into Jun Mo Xie's courtyard. Jun Wu Yi could sense that Jun Mo Xie's courtyard seemed a bit different again, almost as if the already sunk ground level was missing a chip now!

It was a lot harder for Jun Wu Yi to manipulate his wheelchair these days since he had gotten used to walking around on his own two feet during the night time. But he still enjoyed sitting in his wheelchair since it gave him a very solid alibi for all his covert operations.

"You assign them work." Jun Wu Yi said: "I'm very busy at the moment."

"Busy killing people?" Jun Mo Xie's keen sense of perception sensed the taste of a very familiar feeling coming out of his uncle's body: "Uncle, you're becoming very selfish... you actually went out alone for a party..... why didn't you invite me along?"

Jun Wu Yi hesitated as he looked up, but couldn't help a laugh: "I came back, took a bath and changed my clothes.... But the little devil you are.... You still figured it out."

"Killing isn't just a manual labor; it's a job which requires a lot of mental strength as well." Jun Mo Xie smiled interestingly: "Those who kill people, do it out of anger or sadness or hatred, which evokes an outrage in their minds at the time of the deed. Therefore, once you've killed a person and dismembered their body, your mind also loses its focus and purpose. After killing

someone, the hostility of that viciousness continues to linger within one's temperament, and the killer tends to become socially elusive and odd; even a war general is no exception to this."

"This is one of the reasons why most people are unable to progress very far in their lives!" Jun Mo Xie smiled coldly: "So after killing people, it is very important to clean up your mind as quickly as possible, by doing something that you enjoy. This is necessary to relax and loosen up your mind, or else you'll never rid yourself of that hostility and you'll eventually lose your mind. Drinking is always a good way to do just that, which is why most warriors are alcoholics; in fact this is the main reason why most military men drink!"

"Therefore, just taking a bath isn't enough, Uncle." Jun Mo Xie winked: "However, I don't think that a lot of people will be able to tell this apart from me, so you needn't worry about it ha ha ha....."

Jun Wu Yi blushed with embarrassment since he had never even imagined that Jun Mo Xie would catch his lie: "Now even toddlers have the audacity to tease an old man like me!"

Jun Mo Xie looked up skywards: "Uncle, you'll have to get me an aunt before you go about calling yourself an old man!"

Even though these words were only meant as a joke, they had a base in reality as well. Even though Jun Wu Yi had been crippled for over a decade, his Xuan Qi had never slacked off, which reflected on his face, and even though he was in his thirties, he didn't look any older than mid-twenties. His young looks coupled with his middle-aged demeanor made his personality and appearance very contrasting.

[And now he's also suddenly claiming to be an old man? What's wrong with this world!]

Jun Wu Yi was speechless: "And why would I need to do that?.... When the youngest generation of the house starts maturing, the

previous one automatically becomes old....."

"So according to that, if and when I have nieces and nephews as old as I am at the moment, I should also be calling myself an old man?" Jun Mo Xie deliberately asked this with difficulty: "But I'm only sixteen years old!"

"Of course." Jun Wu Yi replied sternly.

[What kind of a justification is that.... this world is going crazy!]

Jun Mo Xie practically collapsed to the ground. [How's being uncle to a sixteen year old a valid reason for being old??? God, let me die now.... I can't take this anymore!]

"You've nothing important today, right?" Jun Wu Yi smiled gently: "Remember to come back early in the evening today, we have guests and we need to entertain them by hosting a feast tonight."

"Uncle, why are they here?" Jun Mo Xie took the opportunity to ask his question.

"Given then current situation, they shouldn't be here for more than two reasons. One is obviously the Xuan Core; and secondly, they are here to fetch your sister-in-law, which they have already conveyed."

Jun Wu Yi brandished a faint smile: "Qing Han has been staying with us for several years now, which has been greatly detrimental to her reputation, so if she's decided to return to her home, then the Jun Family must compensate her in whichever way possible. For example, telling the world that she's going back by her own free will and hasn't been abandoned by us for any reason!"

"The Xuan Core situation is difficult to assess, so we'll have to put that aside for now. As for sister-in-law's return, I'm afraid that it's not that simple either.... They've only been conveying their interest of taking her back verbally all these years, so why have they showed up here in the middle of all this fanfare? Third Uncle,

doesn't something seem a bit fishy? And there's the perspective of sister-in-law's identity and happiness.... She chose to be a part of the Jun Family, and has been so all these years..... wouldn't this be a mockery to our name and her decision?!" Jun Mo Xie skeptically analyzed the issues.



## Chapter 160: I'm not late, you just got here early

---

Jun Wu Yi faintly knitted his brows: "Mo Xie, you and I must clearly understand that Qing Han's future lies with her own family and not the Jun Family. Although Qing Han lives with us in the capacity of our daughter-in-law, she's just so in-name and not by law since there was no wedding ceremony to indict her into our family. Whether we look at this aspect from a social or moral perspective, she really cannot be considered a Jun. Her emotions took control of her at the time of your Brother's death, and she was unable to make a radical decision under the influence of her grief."

"But Qing Han is still young, and she may still have a shot at living a happy married-life ahead in her future. Both the families have been very clear on this subject, and in fact, both the sides made sure that this could be made possible in the future. In fact, at the time when your brother died, your grandfather made it very clear that Qing Han will only live with the Jun Family till the time she decides to. We decided that as long as she chooses to live with us as a part of our family, we will use all our power to make sure that she doesn't get any flak from the society about it!"

"But if Qing Han decides to go, then we must do everything to make her happy. If it's for her good, then the Jun Family must even use its influence and try to get her married into a good and powerful family. Keeping her here and unmarried all her life isn't fair to her. Do you understand my point?" Jun Wu Yi looked up at setting moon of the morning sky; the regrets that his eyes were trying to conceal were clearly visible in the light coming from the heavens above. "Qing Han would have made a very good bride for this family, but unfortunately your brother wasn't lucky enough."

"Third Uncle, if a good match can be found for sister-in-law, then I would surely be very happy for her, but I've always thought.....

strangely of her family's intentions!" Jun Mo Xie frowned as he suddenly felt a little strange within his heart.

"If her family is thinking of her and their interests alone, then we must also be able to think of our family's interest, and we must make sure that they don't exploit our family!" Jun Wu Yi stated this frame of sentence in the most imposing of demeanors, as would be expected of a Sky Xuan expert!

"Now that's the spirit Uncle! Spoken like a true Sky Xuan war general!" Jun Mo Xie praised.

"Beat it!" Jun Wu Yi kicked his nephew in the buttocks and sent the young master Jun flying. A Sky Xuan expert's kick is no trivial matter, and the hitman Jun was sent volleying into the air with his arms wide open, clutching the escaping air for support.

"That's what you should get!" Jun Wu Yi chuckled. It was rare for him to find an opportunity to play around with his nephew.

The young master Jun splendidly rolled in the air, and then safely landed on his buttocks. He slid forward for a while before he was able to get up again. Being a Sky Xuan expert, Jun Wu Yi was skilled and powerful enough to apply his force in the right spot which sent him flying with actually hurting him in the process.....

Jun Mo Xie smiled evilly as he landed on the ground, almost as if he had just obtained a level six Xuan Core!

As the afternoon hours approached, Jun Mo Xie started making preparations to depart for the contest's venue.

Jun Mo Xie took out two jars of wine, and boarded his most reluctant choice of ride - the red palanquin, which started wobbling its way to the Old Song's tavern soon after.

Old Song was already waiting anxiously in his wine shop.

Old Song had initially decided to close his shop after half-a-days' business today, but then changed his mind later, and decided to keep his shop shut for the entire day instead. Therefore, he

directly listed his shop as 'closed' for the entire day since half-a-days' business didn't mean much to him anyway. Naturally, he decided to use the time to make his preparations for the contest.

A wine contest was one of the rare and great joys of his life! It ignited the same kind of excitement and nervousness in his heart that a martial expert would feel before a duel with another.

Although he was sure that the kid wouldn't be able to come up with a wine which would be a hundred times better than his own, but his heart was still full of expectations. [No one can ferment a better wine than me, but since the kid had boasted so much about his skills, I'm hoping that the kid would be able to come up with something worth looking forward to...]

The usually dirty pub was now spotlessly clean.

There was a green carpet on the ground. The tables and chairs which lacked an arm or a leg, had been replaced with good-quality tables and freshly crafted rose-wood chairs, which had been neatly arranged in files.

The twenty four tables with two chairs each made for a seating arrangement which was enough to seat about forty-eight people.

The corners of each wall were adorned with large pearl-shaped pigeon eggs which were hanging down from the wall, exuding a soft and lustrous white light which was brilliantly reflecting the white wine glasses set on the tables. The magnificently decorated pub would give any customer a feeling similar to that of a heavenly reverie.....

The middle-aged man excitedly stepped into the pub, and cried out in alarm and surprise, while his feet retreated a couple of steps as some doubts sprung up in his mind: [Ah yes, this is the Old Song's pub, but how did this small pub suddenly become even cleaner and more luxurious than my palace?]

[This usually dirty pub has now suddenly transformed into a

heavenly paradise..... I'm not inside a dream right now, am I?]

Old Song hurried over to greet the confused and amazed middle-aged man: "Old Song, you're an odd character. You're taking this contest so seriously that even the Emperor would think twice before coming here."

Old Song obviously knew his real identity; therefore he didn't really feel the need to hide much from the man.

"I can't comment on that, but even if wine is just another drink to most people, it's everything to me! I have a hunch that this contest is something that I've been waiting for a long time now! This might turn into one of the most precious moments of this Song Shang's life." Old Song stated solemnly.

"Song Shang? So you're Song Shang?! The Song Shang, 'Send a wine before the kill' Song Shang?!" the prince was completely taken aback for a moment, and then immediately smiled: "But why have you been hiding that from me all this time?"

"Hiding or revealing... what difference does it make?" Song Shang smiled bitterly. [What's left to conceal after that black-clothed man exposed my Xuan Qi? ]There was no way to hide here anymore, and if it wasn't for this wine contest today, then Old Song would have closed his shop a long time ago, and would've set out in search for a new place of refuge.

"According to the legend, Song Shang was quite the romantic, sophisticated, but also a bit weird. It is said that he used to send a jar of wine to his future victims before he came to murder them. Allegedly a gentleman, people say that he used to say 'You must gift a man a jar of wine before you visit him'..... but I don't know why someone like that would change?" The surprised prince asked with a smile.

Song Shang shook his head faintly as a thread of bitterness flashed across his eyes, but didn't say anything in reply.

The Prince naturally realized that Old Song wasn't interested in talking about his past. Therefore, the prince gestured to the cute ten year old boy who was standing next to him, with the intention of introducing the boy to Old Shang. Even though the boy seemed very graceful and fearless in front of complete strangers, his hands were secretly clutching onto the Prince's clothes.

"This is my boy." The prince stroked the boy's head affectionately.

"Good ambience." A faint voice sounded behind them. The Royal Highnesses and Song Shang turned around at the same time, only to realize that the man in black had appeared out of nowhere and was casually sitting on the chair behind them with a calm look on his face; even though he had complemented the new look of the pub, it seemed obvious that he didn't really care about it.

Having the vision of a prince, the middle-aged man could clearly tell that this man in black was something extraordinary; [he has to be some sort of a legend from some folklore, else there would be no reason why an assassin of Song Shang's class would be so scared of this man.]

Now that some of the secrets had come to life, the tavern went completely silent.

[We are all present here to witness a wine making contest.... The judges are here.... But the opposing party hasn't arrived yet.]

[Is it because of stage fear?]

The Hitman Jun was never the one to worry about stage fright. He was always more likely to worry himself with winning the match rather than worry about silly things like stage fright. However, even the young master Jun had never anticipated that a small wine making contest, which he had just jokingly made a bet on would be dragging influential characters like a world renowned expert, a Sky Xuan expert and some members of the royalty including a prince to witness the proceedings!

And now all these influential characters were stamping their feet as they sat and waited.... For him to arrive.....

Half an hour went by.... He didn't arrive; another half an hour passed by.... No sign of him.....

[What does he think of himself!]

The men seemed a bit angry; even the man in black was no exception. Wherever these three men went, people waited for their arrival. These three weren't accustomed to waiting for anyone.

A long while later, the man in black raised his eyebrows, while Old Song also moved his gaze in the entrances' direction almost simultaneously. However, the prince didn't realize why they did so until he heard a commotion on the other side of the alley's entrance.

Jun Mo Xie's palanquin was slowly swaying its way through the alley, while an extra two men were leisurely walking in front of his palanquin with a jar of wine in their hands.

The alley leading up to the Old Song's tavern was so narrow that Jun Mo Xie's procession barely left any space for the other pedestrians in the alley; hence they all squeezed to one side to allow the palanquin to pass through.

Although the palanquin was already quite wobbly, the hitman Jun had asked his bearers to make it sway just a bit more than the usual.

He felt that this deliberate movement would add some more flair to his arrival, and well..... he had been missing the roller coaster rides from his previous life for a while now.

As Jun Mo Xie parted the newly setup curtained entrance to the tavern, and stepped in, he found the prince staring at him with wide-open and round eyes: "Boy, are you preparing to get married to someone today?"

Old Song continued to stare at his competitor while the prince

broke into laughter.

Jun Mo Xie looked around the room, only to realize that everyone seemed a bit dissatisfied by his actions: "Didn't we say 'evening'? Why did you guys get here so early?"

This remark earned him the angry glances of the three men! In fact, even the usually expressionless man in black narrowed his eyes.

[Forget about blaming himself for arriving late, he's actually blaming us for coming early? This guy is a piece of work!]

# Chapter 161: The eight great masters

---

Jun Mo Xie smiled as if he wasn't at fault and then waved his hands to gesture his two men to bring forth the jars of wine they were carrying. The eyes of everyone present immediately shifted to the jars as the two men set them on the table.

"What's this? Only two jars?" the prince was somewhat disappointed.

"You think these two jars are insufficient?" Jun Mo Xie batted his eyelids: "These jars are worth eleven thousand taels of silver each, which makes their combined worth twenty two thousand taels of silver."

Old Song grunted: "I've never heard of a wine which costs eleven thousand! The price of this is over hundred times of what a wine should normally cost, so this itself is an eye-opener for me." It was rather obvious that Old Song was being sarcastic.

"A man with limited knowledge and experience always thinks big of himself! You haven't seen every nook and corner of this world yet." Jun Mo Xie replied back bluntly: "What are you waiting for? Hurry up; I need to go back early tonight."

[I've really never seen a blend of wine which is worthy of being this expensive!]

The arrogance of the youngster obviously angered the three men. The man in black sized up the jar: "The wine looks fairly normal to me; I don't think it's that special."

"You really won't be able to tell the quality of the wine, and which one is better unless you've tasted them first!" Jun Mo Xie replied coldly.

The three guests sat down on their chairs. The two judges had already made up their minds; [if the two wines are similar, or even if this youngster's wine is slightly better, we'll still vote for Old



Song! Just look at this kid, he's way too arrogant!]

[One small jar of wine for over ten thousand taels of silver? No one can afford this! This wine could empty the state treasury!]

"Oh? I didn't realize that there was a little girl present here!" Jun Mo Xie looked at Yang Mo: "You're very pretty! You'll certainly turn into a very beautiful woman once you grow up! He he...."

"I'm a man! I'm a big man!" Little Mo Yang retorted furiously as he let go of his father's clothes and clenched his fists tightly, while his big and round eyes glared sharply at Jun Mo Xie.

"Really? I don't think so.... You even sound like a girl." Jun Mo Xie shook his head as he tilted his head to glare back at the boy: "Maybe you should peek down your pants and confirm it."

Jun Mo Xie was obviously joking around; young boys don't have coarse voices!

"I'm a man!" the little boy tightly clutched his waistband as his face started to flush with the embarrassing thought of removing his pants to affirm his manhood.

"Maybe you're a man....." Jun Mo Xie smiled evilly: "But you still look like a young female version of him." He said pointing towards the prince.

"I am a man!" the little guy shouted back in a sharp voice: "And that's because he's my father!"

"Ha ha....." everyone broke into laughter at the same time. Jun Mo Xie rubbed his hair: "Well good, I won't say that again, so let's just believe that you're a man, okay?"

"Well, well...." The little guy didn't understand Jun Mo Xie's words properly, but came closer to him and whispered in his ear: "If you don't believe me... then I'll remove my pants and show you."

Jun Mo Xie was left dumbstruck and..... beaten!

Even though the boy whispered this into Jun Mo Xie's ears, everyone obviously heard it. The men present in the shop were all experts, and their senses were extremely sharp; even if the boy had whispered this in an even softer tone, they would have all still heard it very clearly. Everyone obviously burst into laughter once again, and the atmosphere in the room suddenly eased down.

Jun Mo Xie secretly smiled..... the hitman was experienced enough to understand that it is better to have a contest in a harmonious environment since it helps in maintaining order.

[This kid is definitely going to be somebody someday!]

Realizing that the kid had a lot of fire within, Jun Mo Xie decided to leave the kid alone..... for his own good.

Old Song went into the back room, and returned carrying two jars in his hands. The thick cover of dust on the jars made it evident that these jars had been in storage for a long time now.

"Since you've only brought two jars of wine, I must also produce only two; for the sake of fairness." Old Song was very proud of these two jars of wine. He had travelled across mountain and rivers to procure the materials for this wine during the prime years of his life, and had fermented this wine with all his skill.

"This wine is twenty-eight years old. I crossed snow-cladded mountains, glaciers, rivers, lakes, forests..... I spent five years travelling around the world to find the right materials for this wine during the prime of my years." Old Song's face reflected a hint of sadness: "These two jars contain the last remaining samples of my finest creation."

His words incited a strong interest in the hearts of the Solitary Falcon and the prince.

"You travelled the world for five years to find the right ingredients for making a wine....." the Solitary Falcon shook his head: "That sounds a little far-fetched to me! But that itself makes

this wine worthy of greatness!"

"Worthy? He he....." Old Song smiled in a strange manner, seemingly a bit hurt: "This wine is the best wine that I've ever made.... The best in the world!"

"Well.... The quality of the wine is secondary, but your sheer dedication is worthy of praise." Jun Mo Xie applauded: "However, dedication isn't synonymous with success. The quality of the wine isn't decided by the effort that goes into making it."

The three men immediately glared at Jun Mo Xie; it was obvious that his words had offended them again. [Dedication isn't synonymous with success? Okay, maybe this wine isn't the best in the world, but what is he trying to imply here? Does he mean that the referees may be biased?]

The Solitary Falcon looked at Jun Mo Xie coldly. The youngster he had taken a liking to earlier, was now turning to someone really annoying. [He's singing a completely different tune now, and it seems that he's also questioned my ability to judge?] He couldn't help asking in a cold manner: "Young man, what do you mean.... Dedication isn't important? Off all the success stories from the past, can you recall even one where the person managed to achieve something great without persistence?"

"Dedication is important, but it all depends of the value of that dedication.... And whether the goal is worthy of it or not!" Jun Mo Xie stated fearlessly: "Dedication paves the way for success, and should always be admired, but if you're dedicated to a lost cause, then you're no more than a fool!"

"And yes, all the successful people in the world have always had one thing in common, persistence! Once they identified a goal, they never back off, and worked very hard to build something great, which is why their stories serve as an example to us all. For example, Tian Xiang's founding Emperor, Yang Kai Tian, worked his Xuan Qi to the peak, everyone knows about that! So you're

right about that! But there are several other masters at the peak, but they never made it to the top like the Emperor did!"

"The masters of this world? What do you know about them?" the Solitary Falcon started taking interest in Jun Mo Xie's words once again.

"The world only believes in the eight great masters. The first ranked master is untouchable, Yun Bie Chen. People say that he walks with level nine Xuan beasts by his side. It is said that he reached the peak of Spirit Xuan several years ago! They say that he's capable of turning the entire world upside down on his own!"

"Yes," the Solitary Falcon nodded slowly. His Royal Highness and Old Song had also heard about this man's name, and knew what he was capable of. Yun Bie Chen was practically a legend! An immortal legend!

"The Second isn't as strong, but is still a legend in his own merit, Li Jue Tian! People say that he's indifferent to everything, and only acts according to his own fancies.... But his Xuan Qi is already at the peak of the world, and I believe that no one can question that fact!"

"The third should be Blizzard Silver City's overlord, Han Feng Xue." The moment Jun Mo Xie mention his name, a wave of emotion rippled across the Solitary Falcon's face.

"The fourth is Mo Wen Tian!" Jun Mo Xie's eyes were constantly scanning everyone's reactions secretly: "This master is said to belong to the Tian Xiang Empire."

"Fifth, would be the cold-blooded Li Wu Bei."

"The sixth is a great scholar from the Shen Ci Empire. It is said that he's a mortal enemy of Mo Wen Tian's, and that they would do anything to kill the other! This person, Shi Chang Xiao, is also rumored to be inside the Tian Xiang City at the moment!" Jun Mo Xie smiled coldly.

"The seventh great master choses to live in seclusion perennially, Meng Hong Chen."

"As for the eighth, huh ..... " Jun Mo Xie smiled calmly: "That's difficult to conclude."

"What's so difficult to conclude?" the Solitary Falcon raised his eyebrows, and coldly looked at Jun Mo Xie: "It's nothing more than a name. Is it really that difficult to say it?"

"The Eighth position is tied in the eyes of the world between two people." Jun Mo Xie smiled in a mysterious manner: "The Savana's Solitary Falcon and Kuang Feng's Feng Juan Yun are both considered to be rank eight. It is said that they tried to sort this out by the means of a battle almost half-a-lifetime ago, but their battle bore no result! Therefore, the eighth spot is shared by the two of them!"

"What difference does it make if there was a winner or not? That Feng Juan Yun doesn't deserve his reputation! He's nothing in front of the Solitary Falcon!" the Solitary Falcon snorted.

"I've also heard the same before. I've heard that the Solitary Falcon often goes off to snow covered mountain peaks alone in order to improve his martial skills; in fact, it is said that he trains with hundreds and thousands of bald eagles! If this rumor is true, then the Solitary Falcon is sure to be a tough man!" Jun Mo Xie said this with a look of worship on his face: "If such is the case, then the Solitary Falcon is definitely superior to Feng Juan Yun!"

The Solitary Falcon couldn't help feeling a sense of greatness: "I didn't think that a young man like you would actually know so much about the eight great masters of the world.... I guess you're more knowledgeable than I imagined."

Old Song and the prince simply didn't get it: [Everyone knows about this... there's nothing great about this! This doesn't exactly qualify as some great knowledge...]

# Chapter 162: The competition... had already begun

---

Old Song and the prince simply didn't get it: [Everyone knows about this... there's nothing great about this! This doesn't exactly qualify as some great knowledge...]

[Okay, the Solitary's Falcon's feats about fighting the bald eagles in the snowy peaks for years, and that too alone is quite amazing, but then Feng Juan Yun is also renowned for wiping out entire wolf packs. That's almost as good the Solitary Falcon's accomplishments, so how's his reputation false?]

But since these two men were quite involved in their discussion and were convinced about the rankings, neither of the other two objected.

"In addition to the eight great masters of the world, there's also the king of all killers, Chu Qi Hun." Jun Mo Xie couldn't help pondering over Yang Mo's words: [how good must he be to earn the title of the king of all killers?]

[Is he even stronger than I used to be in my previous life? Really..... now I'm getting very curious ah.]

Just the thought of this ignited a war cry in Jun Mo Xie's heart: [Just the way there can't be two tigers on the same hill, there can't be two leaders in the same industry! Even more so in the assassination business!] By the virtue of being the uncrowned king of assassins in his previous life, Jun Mo Xie's ego simply couldn't tolerate this competition.

At this moment, Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized that there would be a battle between Chu Qi Hun and himself one day, [I'm afraid that there will be a battle soon or later! Its fated.... Inevitable!]

"Kid, even though I won't question your knowledge, you must know that I won't agree with you no matter how much you insist."

Even though the Solitary Falcon's words were challenging in nature, he still managed to say it in a very cool and calm manner.

"I still don't agree with the explanation. I agree that the Solitary Falcon has fought bald eagles atop the snowy peaks for years, but why is that enough to make him better than the others?"

Jun Mo Xie sighed and said: "Everyone knows that the eagles around the peak of the snowy mountains aren't normal vultures, they are Xuan Beasts. Although they aren't high grade Xuan Beasts, but thousands of them make up for the lack of quality with sheer quantity. We all know that fighting is one of the best ways to improve Xuan Qi. Plus the biting cold of the mountains also tends to have a very mysterious effect on Xuan Qi. And, if one is able to beat so many vultures, then their combat experience obviously increases many fold. Furthermore, the flight trajectories and attack action of these vultures can be very unpredictable.... which teaches a practitioner several new styles!"

The Solitary Falcon smiled and nodded to indicate his agreement, [he has an excellent perception]: "Yes, that's very true." the Solitary Falcon added with a smug look on his face, which ignited a strong impulse to spit on it within Jun Mo Xie's heart: [Just look at that expression on his face... you may be a great warrior, but have you ever heard the term modesty? Don't tell me that... you're the Solitary Falcon...?! You do have a look of mystery about you...]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized one simple truth: [An ordinary man or an official, rogue or an expert... We're all just wearing masks. And that's what protects us... and comforts us in front of strangers.]

"Although the Solitary Falcon's practice methods are the fastest methods to temper Xuan Qi, but they are also amongst of the most dangerous ones; and for this reason, the Solitary Falcon is worthy of being a great master!"

Jun Mo Xie was somehow holding back the strong desire to vomit

as he continued to praise the man. He knew that it was necessary to lay the ground work for his victory, and it would come at the cost of suffering through this....

The Solitary Falcon was obviously very pleased to know that his efforts are winning recognition from some people, but was simultaneously unhappy to see that some others were looking at his methods disdainfully.

"But!" Jun Mo Xie stopped before it started to sound like he was overdoing it, and then quickly took a sharp turn: "Since this is a well-known short cut, don't you think that others would have also tried this? Do you actually believe that a method which has been known since the ancient times was only attempted by just one person? But still, only one man was able to become one of the eight great masters, and the others are unheard of?! What does this reflect?"

The Solitary Falcon's entire body immediately straightened-up: "That they're dead!" the thought of all the bones buried in the snow atop the snowy peaks ignited a sense of pity in his heart, but mostly it made him feel proud about his accomplishments.

"The Old man is right!" Jun Mo Xie wantonly continued to praise: "The shortcut is never equivalent to the easier methods.... All those men were either buried in the snow, or became food for those vultures."

"They certainly found the right direction, and also chose the right method..... In fact, they were extremely dedicated. I'd even go as far as saying that they were even more persistent than the Solitary Falcon because they continued to try till the time of their deaths!"

"But the world only knows the Solitary Falcon's name... and no one knows who those other guys were! They all took the same approach as the Solitary Falcon, but we still haven't heard of any of their names? There is only reason behind it..... the Solitary Falcon



succeeded; and they failed! It's simple!" Jun Mo Xie smiled.

"The anecdotes of the so-called 'successful' people tend to turn into inspirational stories for the rest of the world, not because of the story itself..... but because they eventually succeeded! The men who failed took on the same tasks, and even their experiences could be transformed into stories... and their stories would actually be even more epic, shocking, heart-wrenching, but they wouldn't inspire anyone because in the end they failed and found themselves buried in the ground!"

"Anyone can have a story, and anyone can become a legend; but there must be a prerequisite - you have to succeed! Wealth provides physical comfort, whereas poverty provides spiritual comforts. But we only hear about the rich because they worked their way out of poverty, whereas the poor remained stuck in their miseries!"

Jun Mo Xie had said too much in just one breath, so naturally his mouth felt a bit dry. He grabbed the tea pot, and poured himself a drink, and then drank it. However, no one perceived his actions to be rude since everyone was busy pondering over the profound meaning of his words.

"All I'm trying to say is - even though Old Song worked very hard, and was extremely persistent, but his wine has only ever qualified to be a good quality wine in the eyes of ordinary men, and not necessarily the best one.... because he still hasn't managed to achieve what the Solitary Falcon has..... success!"

Jun Mo Xie had cleverly drawn this big circle back in Old Song's direction.

Jun Mo Xie had doubted the black-robed man's identity from the beginning. Jun Mo Xie's suspicion had escalated at the time when he exposed Old Song's true Xuan rank. The entire talk about the eight great masters was just a test to see if he defended the Solitary Falcon; which he did. And his sharp reaction to his nemesis's

praise made it a little too obvious....

[He is the Solitary Falcon!]

[It's obvious now! I think even Old Song and the Old man know it now.... but if they still can't see it, then it's better to beat myself to death with a pillow than explaining it to them in detail!]

But the best thing was that since Jun Mo Xie had identified his real identity despite the fact that he was trying to conceal it, it could now be used without him ever realizing about it!

[This kid is very.....pleasant to listen to!]

"It is as you said..... good or bad.... We'll only find out after we taste the wines...." Old Song was obviously a bit gloomy now. [If we start this contest now, then he'll win even if our wines are similar in quality!]

[First he comes late, then he offends everyone, and then rambles incoherently to force his fallacious logic!]

[Although, he does have a point...]

Even though no one had said it, but the contest had already begun at the time when Old Song narrated the background story of his wine!

Even though Jun Mo Xie had only played around with words, but he managed to obliterate whatever slight advantage Old Song had gained early on!

This was all a part of the competition....

But the biggest advantage that Jun Mo Xie had managed to exploit was the Solitary Falcon! Turbulent winds were rising in the Tian Xiang City, and the Solitary Falcon could be used to turn the tables any time! Jun Mo Xie had been intending on using him to do just that, and had already started laying the ground work.....

"Yes good. Now let's start the wine tasting! Soon we'll know which wine is better." The man from royalty was obviously calmer

than Old Song and the Solitary Falcon. After all, he was a member of the royal family, and hence had always been associated with different circles as compared to the other two men. Admiration and worship have always been two mutually exclusive terms.

The Solitary Falcon might be a great warrior, but it wasn't enough to compete with the Emperor of an Empire! If someone tried to assassinate him, then the unprepared master would be likely to fall prey and may not be able to escape his death, however a King's legacy would continue to live on long after he's gone.

"Yes, perseverance may not necessarily pave the way for success, but you need to be persistent in order to be successful!" the Solitary Falcon closed his eyes and considered his words as he slowly stated them: "Your words make me feel as if there's no real need to admire any man!"

"Uh?" Even though Jun Mo Xie disagreed inwardly, outwardly his tongue hummed a different tune altogether: "Yes, we only need to understand our goals clearly, and then move forward step by step; we shouldn't pay any heed to the failures of our predecessors, or worry whether the succeeding generation will be able to catch up or not. We should only be concerned about our path to climbing the peak, not of some else's!"

"Well said!" the Solitary Falcon laughed: "We should only be concerned about our path to climbing the peak, not of some else's!" this sentence demands a drink!

Jun Mo Xie smiled and pointed his hands towards Old Song to indicate that he should go first. This action startled everyone present; as far as tasting food items is concerned, the first impression is always the hardest to beat.

Therefore, it is most important to be the first.... Else, even if both items taste the same, the first one will undoubtedly be proclaimed the winner!

[Is he really that confident?] Jun Mo Xie's actions had raised a big

question in everyone's mind.

Old Song didn't hesitate, and immediately grabbed four glasses, and quickly and quietly placed them in front of everyone with just one wave of his hand.

The free flowing, natural and smooth movement of the master earned him the admiration of Yang Mo, which clearly reflected in the boy's eyes.

Then, he opened the cork of the wine flask, and the aroma of the wine's flavor instantly the room's atmosphere; the Solitary Falcon and the prince couldn't refrain from closing their eyes... or inhaling the scent.

The two wine lovers had tasted all kinds of wine over the course of their life, but neither man had ever smelt such an exotic and strong flavor before. Naturally, they couldn't suppress their strong desire to taste it.

They hadn't even tasted the wine yet, but were already convinced that they had never tasted anything better!

"This is definitely better than anything I've ever tasted!" The Solitary Falcon judged from the aroma: "This wine is indeed the work of a true master; I think that only one or two masters are capable of fermenting anything even close to this!"

Jun Mo Xie's brows wrinkled, [although this wine seems rich and mellow, but the smell is obviously too strong. It's almost like an expensive perfume.... It's useful to attract others by spraying just a little on the body, but if the flask breaks then it will just destroy one's nose....what a cliché❖❖!]

Song Shang clutched the jar in both his hands with a solemn and sacred look in his eyes. A blue light flashed from his hands as the wine sprayed into the air and flew into the wine glass, filling it straight to the top..... not even a single drop fell out of the cup!

And then the second glass..... all the four glasses were full in a

matter of moments. The wine created a magnificent and fragrant rainbow as the wine continued to flow through the air, but not even half a drop fell out of the glasses.

"Please!" Old Song raised his hands and invited everyone to drink, but didn't touch his own cup.

# Chapter 163: Pushing it to the limit

---

Song Shang had contested and won several wine making contests over the span of his life, and so he was obviously not short on confidence! In fact, he would usually remain calm even if he was contesting against hundreds of people at once.

His confidence in his ability had always been absolute! Therefore he had always been sure that no one is capable of beating his wine's quality! [No one can beat me!]

However this time Song Shang found himself in a very different situation; he was nervous. Unable to understand the reason behind this nervousness was making him even more uncomfortable. On top of that, the pressure he was being subjected to was coming from by a teenager! He slanted his eyes and glanced at the two jars which Jun Mo Xie had brought with him, [is his wine actually better than mine?]

Although this wine making contest was the most insignificant one that he had ever participated in, but the quality of the wine he was producing was unprecedented!

Even though there were only two judges for this contest, but one of them was the King's Brother! And the other was amongst the finest and most powerful experts in the Xuan Xuan continent!

And then, the only spectator..... was a prince!

As for the stake of this bet..... that too was unprecedented. Song Shang wasn't just betting his reputation on it, he was also gambling with his freedom!

"If I lose, then I'm willing to accept him as my master!"

Since this sentence had been spoken in the presence of a Prince, it was as solid as a contract!

[This is ridiculous! I'm a renowned wine maker.... He's nothing in front of me!]

[I'm just nervous because I've put up my best wine for this contest... and these guys will finish it all!]

[But then I can't really say no to these guys then, can I? Offending a prince isn't the best way to seek refuge in his country...]

Even though he was unaware of the mysterious expert's true identity, he knew that the man too wasn't to be offended under any circumstances!

Therefore, even though this was only a small bet, Song Shang had still somehow landed himself on sheer cliffs and precipitous rock faces!

Since he had already decided to ride a tiger, it was hard to get off now..... fighting with his back against the river was the only option left!

"Amazing wine!"

The prince raised the glass to his mouth, and took his first sip. Then, he allowed the wine to roll in his mouth for a while, absorbing the flavor and smell, and then swallowed it down.

He gently closed his eyes and enjoyed the aftertaste of the wine as it brought a wonderful feeling along with it!

[I've had a lot of wines in my life, but this wine is something different and special... I really don't think that I've ever had something this special.... I really need to drink more of this!] The Solitary Falcon's face was clearly reflecting the same feeling.

[No wonder Song Shang was so confident about his wine.... He only staked his life on it since he knew that his wine is extraordinary. Not even the imperial wine maker's wine is capable of overshadowing his work.... In fact, it's not even fair to mention the two wines in the same breath!]

Jun Mo Xie smiled as he gently started shaking the wine glass. The originally clear wine started getting blurry, and then a few bubbles started to bubble up. Upon a closer look, it was obvious

that the originally clear wine was now becoming slightly turbid.

"This isn't professional enough." Jun Mo Xie shook his head and sighed: "Impurities in wines have always been a taboo!"

Song Shang almost choked while his eyes widened in shock.

His years of mental and physical effort, skill, determination, dedication, and pains had actually been called unprofessional by a kid!

[Is this kid just ignorant... Or is this his arrogance?]

Both the judges had already finished their cups, and even though they hadn't asked for more, it was evident that their fingertips were itching to move towards the flask for more. It was obvious that they were eagerly waiting for the contest to end, so they could just announce Song Shang as the winner and then devour the rest of his wine.

"Little Brother, we should taste your wine as well now. This competition has been very interesting from the beginning, and this wine alone has been worthy of making this trip." The Royal Highness smiled gently as his remark made it rather obvious that he was already expecting Old Song to be the winner. In fact, he had been looking at Old Song's wine from the corner of his eyes ever since he had tasted it.

The prince's intentions seemed rather obvious... [after I declare Old Song as the winner, I will ask him to ditch the man in black, and then give these two wine jars to me as a gift. But I'll have to keep a close eye on this man.... if he steals this wine, then I won't get to drink it again... Anyway, Old Song said that these two flasks were the last of it...]

[As for the outcome of this contest... The result is rather obvious now. Song Shang's wine has always been the best in the city, and this particular wine is even rarer and better than anything he's ever produced before.]



The Solitary Falcon had been maintaining his calm and composure throughout so far, and even though the prince couldn't read his mind.... Jun Mo Xie could tell that the Solitary Falcon and the prince were both thinking the same thing.

"It's too early to say anything right now; the outcome of this battle should only be decided once both the wines have had their chance!" Jun Mo Xie leaned over and picked up wine jar, and slapped the cork off in one movement.....

"Bang!" the three pair of eyes flinched at the same time. Even young Yang Mo stared at Jun Mo Xie with a look of nervousness on his face.

"Huh?" The three men exclaimed at the same time.

[The smell hasn't changed even one bit... there's absolutely nothing seductive about its fragrance!]

Whenever the seal to a wine jar is opened, the aroma of the wine pours out of it.....

[But how could there be no scent? What is this kid up to?]

The three men couldn't stop their faces from turning red initially, but a closer look revealed that the even though Jun Mo Xie had opened the seal, there was still a thin layer of oil soaked paper which was tightly wrapped around the jar, which was probably blocking its scent!

The faces of the three men reddened once again since Jun Mo Xie was unwrapping this oil soaked paper at a very slow pace.

He was practically teasing their desires!

The oil soaked paper was finally removed, but there was still no scent!

The eyes of the three people simultaneously opened up wide in surprise: [wait, is that a real layer of animal skin under that oil soaked paper? It seems that the animal skin actually belonged to a

level six Xuan Beast.]

But then the three of them noticed something new again: [there's a thick layer of orange wood under the animal skin.... That's the real reason why there's no odor!]

Orange wood doesn't have any smell of its own, but it's capable of isolating any kind of smell!

[No wonder we haven't been able to smell anything so far.]

[But wait, his wine jar was already smaller than the usual size, and now this just means that the real size of his jar is actually half of its originally perceived size! This is..... way too much... less!]

[And now what?...]

Jun Mo Xie's hands stopped at the critical moment, and then he suddenly stood up and slowly took two steps back. Then, he opened his arms wide and stretched his chest; he took a deep breath, hummed a few times, then placed his hands on his hips and revolved his waist around a few times. Then he twisted his buttocks a bit, and then swung his arms around, and then started stretching and loosening up his neck a bit. Then, he crisscrossed his fingers, and started cracking them all.... one by one.....

His Royal Highness, Song Shang and the Solitary Falcon were all staring at him dumbstruck.

The three men had the same impulse guiding their hearts at the moment: [don't waste your energy in stretching your neck, let me twist it for you! I will certainly twist it like it's never been twisted before!]

Little Yang Mo wanted to ask Jun Mo Xie if he was feeling alright; perhaps out of innocence.....

Once Jun Mo Xie was done stretching his entire body, he strode forward with cat-like elegance, and removed the orange wood covering his wine without sparing any effort for the task, and then threw it down to his feet with a 'bang'.

The sound of the orange wood's fall broke the silence of the room, and all three men raised their eyebrows provocatively.

Jun Mo Xie's hands were still blocking the opening of the flask, which was still prohibiting the wine's aroma from spreading into the atmosphere. The hearts of the three men were itching: [just open the forsaken bottle now!]

As the three men continued to stare at him with a look of indignation on their faces, Jun Mo Xie looked down at his wine flask affectionately, and stated in a duck-like voice: "ah! ..... before you drink... smell it; the flavor of its scent is ten times more intoxicating than anything else!"

"Damn you!" the three men cursed in unison; even the usually calm and collected Solitary Falcon was no exception. Jun Mo Xie had obviously tested everyone's patience and had pushed it to the limit by now!

But then, the three people's cursing seized in a flash, while the anger on their faces froze in its place!

Because at that exact moment.....

Jun Mo Xie removed his hand, and allowed the aroma of the wine to infuse with the air.

An unspeakable.... Unspeakably wondrous flavor filled the entire room, suppressing their objections, almost as if a dominant warrior had stepped into a room full of cowards!

Perhaps a better description would be..... the fragrance spread through the room like moonlight from a shiny night sky, and covered every nook and corner of the room!

[This is the smell of a transcending dream!]

[This fragrance isn't from the human world.... It's from a land of wonders! No, not even that! Even a land of wonders isn't capable of producing such an amazing aroma!]

The three men felt as if the wine's aroma was the seventh heaven lingering over their heads, and a strong desire to step into its bliss was inciting them to float and rise upwards.... And upwards... and upwards.....

[What kind of a wine is this? Is it really possible for a wine from this world to produce such intoxicating aroma?!]

[Hum... I'm too moved...]

Jun Mo Xie had already poured the wine into four cups by the time the three men recovered. The wine's amber color felt quite magical in the jade-shade glass.

"Before you drink... smell it; the flavor of its scent is ten times more intoxicating than anything else!" the prince got up, having already forgotten his manners. He roared in a trembling voice as tears streamed his cheeks: "Far more than ten ah ah ah ah ah ah... .."

Song Shang picked up his glass with tears in his eyes; he held the glass so carefully that it almost felt as if he was trying to hold onto a priceless treasure.... He stared at the wine for a long time, almost as if he was unwilling to drink it; not because he was afraid of losing the contest..... he was afraid that the wine may not be anything more than a fragrance.... And drinking it would sour his current blissful state.....

Just the mere smell of the wine had sent the three men into a dream like state, and neither of them wanted to wake up from this beautiful dream!

## Chapter 164: Sky Xuan Apprentice

---

The Solitary Falcon had somehow been able to maintain his usual expressionless look, along with his composure, but still couldn't stop his face from blushing. His eyes flashed a spark of expectation as he grabbed his glass and slowly raised it to his mouth. He hesitated for a second, and then drained the cup in one gulp!

He clearly felt the liquid as the wine came in contact with his throat, and could even feel his own Xuan Qi stirring up inside his body. As he felt the wine reaching his stomach, he realized that he still hadn't finished it all, which is why he drained the rest of it down in his second gulp.....

The Solitary Falcon was just beginning to enjoy the aroma of the wine even more when he suddenly felt a very intense and extreme sense of burning inside his body....almost as if his limbs, all his blood vessels, and all his meridians were on fire!

Suddenly he felt as if his whole body had been set on fire; his body hair were erect, and even his Xuan Qi wasn't listening to his commands anymore!

The flame which was smoldering inside his body felt strong enough to give him power to beat any man in this moment; even Yun Bei Chen!

"Great wine! This is the best wine in this world!" the Solitary Falcon tried very hard to suppress his words, but was unable to. Even though this low sounding roar came from deep within his throat, the excitement in his voice was evident.

"This man is the god of wine!"

The prince also gulped his wine down, and then suddenly started staring foolishly at everyone. He got up a while later, walked around in a circle, almost as if he sleepwalking, and then returned to his seat. He kept his head lowered for a while, continuously

staring at his glass of wine the entire time, after which he mumbled with tears in his eyes: "Today I know the truth behind my life.....I've lived....."

Then he suddenly jumped up, and extended his arms, almost as if he wanted to scream out, but was unable to.... So he reseated himself and moaned: "Great wine ah ah ah ah ah....."

Song Shang couldn't suppress his body's trembling as he held the glass, still unwilling to drink it; after seeing the Solitary Falcon and the Prince's reactions, he had already realized that he had lost the contest.

He had lost without any doubt!

But at this time, especially at this moment, he was very excited despite his loss, and elated despite his defeat! Since his best work had been beaten, he had no regrets! Now he just wanted to experience the taste of this wine for himself!

At this moment, Song Shang wasn't taking this defeat to his heart; like a pilgrim on a holy trail, he just wanted to experience the supreme power!

As he drank, Song Shang felt his soul dance and sing; he could feel every inch of his muscles, each meridian of his body..... and their trembling.....

Soon enough, Song Shang's eyes started to tear while his throat started to whimper..... As his tears started to fall into his cup, his eyes become even more watery..... a little while later, his entire body started to tremble, and then he suddenly lowered his face to the table and completely broke down and burst into tears.....

"I, I, I..... since I've had the good fortune of drinking this wine today..... my life will now be devoid of all regrets..... I've had the opportunity to drink such a divine drink today.... I will even accept my death without any complaints....."

Old Song punched, and punched, and punched the table, and

then banged and banged, and banged his head against the table as he pulled his hair out while crying uncontrollably: "I've spent my entire life.... Living like a dog..... ah....."

Jun Mo Xie was left flabbergasted..... goosebumps covered his entire body as he watched the horrifying scene.

He had seen people cry before.

He had seen men cry before.

But Jun Mo Xie had never seen anyone cry like this before!

Moreover, this man was at least fifty years old!

On top of that, this man was a Sky Xuan expert!

And a famed assassin!

And now he was crying uncontrollably over a glass of wine... ..

[Is this simply because of this one glass of wine?]

Jun Mo Xie was completely baffled.

The hitman Jun had always underestimated the power of wine!

The art of making wine had undergone thousands and thousands of years of evolution!

Countless people had gone insane in search of methods for perfecting the art of making wine!

This art had been passed down from generation to generation, and those methods had undergone several changes with each passing generation.

Since Jun Mo Xie had the finalized methods on his fingertips, he had always assumed wine making to be an easy task. But he had always ignored that he was standing on top of thousands and thousands of years of cultural and methodical evolution..... he was standing on top of the life-works of thousands of geniuses!

To participate in a contest with a modern-world method of making wine in an ancient setting would be like standing as tall as

the Mount Everest in front of a normal human!

He had never realized that the methods he had used to ferment this wine had been made available to him due to the research and hard work of countless people who had devoted their entire lives to the art of making wine!

And in that ancient world, one such devoted man had just tasted a modern and refined wine.....

The impact was.... Simply unspeakable.....

Old Song's Xuan Qi had already reached the Sky Xuan realm, which ranked him amongst some of the most powerful individuals in this world, and practically made him untouchable in the eyes of the common man. But this very man had always upheld "Making wine is my best attribute". Had he invested the same amount of energy and devotion to his martial training, then his martial achievements would have crossed all barriers!

Old Song's heart was experiencing a storm of emotions, but his emotions were still comforting him in a way. On one hand, his arrogance, pride and confidence on being the best wine maker in world had been shattered, but on the other hand, he had suddenly found a wine which was superior to his best product by a very huge margin!

It was almost unfathomable to imagine Old Song's shock.....

Jun Mo Xie had just transformed into a man beyond compare in his eyes..... almost as if he was.... An incarnation of the god of wine himself!

[Oh Heavens! This world actually has such a wine! And there's a man in this world who can actually make such wine! If he isn't the god of wine, then what is he?]

From being a proud and confident man, he had been transformed into a beaten one!

This was equivalent to the defeat of his entire life's persistence!



The collapse of life's support and driving force!

The pub had gone completely quiet, and remained that way for a while; the prince was the first one to speak: "This wine making contest of today's...." his voice still harbored a lingering taste of excitement.....

[My wine is nothing compared to this youngster's wine... he's right... my wine is rubbish! My wine has no merit in front of his... there's absolutely no competition... not even one shred of it... ...I Song Shang have travelled the entire world, and I've never tasted anything this divine!]

Song Shang's voice seemed extremely excited: "I Song Shang, concede!"

Then he stood up as his eyes flashed a trace a frenzy, and walked towards Jun Mo Xie; then, he knelt down on both his knees, and lowered his head to the ground with a 'thud': "Master, please accept your apprentice's respect!"

Jun Mo Xie hastily stood up: "This....."

His Royal Highness and the Solitary Falcon looked at each other dumbstruck!

It was a while before the Solitary Falcon was able to find his words: "Old Song has accepted you as his master, little brother. Your wine is peerless, but don't disgrace him; don't humiliate him!"

The final judgement had been passed!

Jun Mo Xie remained lost in his thoughts for a long while before he finally smiled, and said: "Yes, in that case, Song Shang, get up; I accept you."

[What is going on?]

[Who says the sky cannot fall?] The prince had always taken these words as a joke... but watching Song Shang, a dignified Sky

Xuan expert, one of the top assassins of the world transforming into a disciple of an ordinary youngster was no joke... ..

Becoming an apprentice is a life-changing decision!

There are five cardinal relations in our way of life, parents and child, master and disciple, husband and wife, elder and younger siblings, and friends. Even though master and disciple relationship isn't the first priority, but it's the most important one!

A master is more important than a parent! Parents only shape one's body, but it's one's master that guides one to success in life!

[Given Song Shang's identity and status, how can he ever even think of becoming a disciple to this lowly and unknown kid?!!]

The prince had obviously underestimated Old Song's obsession with the art of wine making!

Knowledge knows no age! As far as Old Song was concerned, this was his path to enlightenment!

Even Jun Mo Xie was a little surprised, and was still pondering; [in case Old Song goes back on his word, then he could betray me anytime..... I never really thought that he would... ..]

But the hitman Jun wasn't the kind to go back on his word!

[Letting go of a Sky Xuan apprentice would obviously be a very foolish decision! Even though he only intends to learn the art of wine-making from me, but I can never be sure of trusting him given his identity of being a Sky Xuan expert! He is mysterious, and may be backed by a powerful force... ..]

[So if he becomes my subordinate, will I truly be able to control him?]

Jun Mo Xie was a bit excited at the thought, but then he suddenly woke up to the responsibility of being a teacher, and realized that he will now be responsible for his disciple's education! A superficial halo emerged within his mind, which told him to

shoulder his responsibility!

"Old Song, do you know why you lost?" Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt the urge to touch his beard, which would have made him look more respectable in appearance, but then suddenly realized that he was only sixteen, and obviously didn't have one..... left with no other option, he stopped his hand from going upwards and redirected it to scratch his legs instead.

# Chapter 165: Partnership with the Prince

---

"Master's wine is the best in the world! This disciple obviously never stood a chance against master's unrivaled expertise, and the disciple conceives it in heart and admits it in words." Song Shang's tone was full of respect.

Even though Song Shang was far more accomplished than his young master, he didn't feel even the slightest of hesitation in talking to his master with humility since he was nothing in front of his master in terms of wine making abilities; in fact, his voice even harbored a strong sense of excitement and privilege with regard to his new status.

"You can go on and on about my skill and the superiority of my wine, but you'll always be wrong. You're mistaken from the start." Jun Mo Xie stated unceremoniously: "You earlier stated that you fermented this wine almost a decade ago, at the peak of your skills, and it's the best wine in the world. It sounded like you were very pleased with your work, and that's the reason which blocked your future progress, and if you continue to believe in that then it will also ruin any chances of progress in the future."

"The moment you started believing that these two jars of wine were the best in the world, you lost; to yourself. You lost because you started to believe that you couldn't be beaten!"

Song Shang's forehead started to sweat the moment he heard this remark. [Yes, ah.... Master is right! Ever since I produced this wine a decade ago, I haven't made any progress, not even the slightest bit. I've lived every day believing that that no one can beat me... I got complacent.... I had never anticipated that I would ever lose in this manner...]

"It's almost like martial training; if a person says, 'I entered into Earth Xuan three years ago, then at this rate I will make it to the Sky Xuan sooner or later', then this person is unlikely to ever make

it to the Sky Xuan realm till the end of his days... let alone any higher!"

"But the family of such people always puts pressure on them to improve their Xuan Qi as fast as possible, which is the reason they rarely ever lax. But if their practice slows down, then even they wouldn't be able to move forward."

"Wine making however, is completely different. There's no pressure on you.... And you simply weren't persistent enough. Had you been persistent, then even if you had still lost today, you wouldn't have lost by such a huge margin." Jun Mo Xie stated in an earnest tone: "So persistence is the key."

Song Shang had already accepted Jun Mo Xie as his master, and was willing to take his every word as a command. But the Solitary Falcon and the prince were still not convinced of this situation: [This guy just gave us some very eloquent examples to prove that persistence and devotion aren't that important, and he has actually overturned his previous conclusion in the blink of an eye!]

[He's turning colors faster than one can turn the page of a book... he's such a pretentious folk!] But then their eyes resettled onto Jun Mo Xie's two wine jars, and they both swallowed a mouthful of saliva down their throats.

"A wine fermented with the most ordinary of raw products can also be the best wine in the world; in fact.... that's real wine!" Jun Mo Xie leisurely stated: "Just as in the world of martial arts, the most basic of moves are capable of producing the maximum amount of power, and can take a man to the peak of the world!"

The solitary Falcon suddenly stared at Jun Mo Xie as he stated this sentence.

A low-level martial artist may not have been able to understand the profound meaning behind this sentence, but to man of his excellence.... this sentence was nothing short of .....Enlightening!

[Punch... What is the most powerful kind of punch in the world? It's the most ordinary one... the tiger fist punch... and it's able to produce the most powerful effect. Even if one wraps all kinds of fancy flowers around their punch and hits the enemy, then the punch still won't be able to do the same amount of damage which a properly executed and concentrated basic one can!]

[This is basic law of martial arts!]

[In a duel between two experts, the most basic of moves often decide the victor!]

[The tiger fist undoubtedly focuses on strength, and is considered to be the king of all strokes, but even then it has a prerequisite: you have to hit the other party... .. and the simplest of moves is the solution to get away from it... agility...]

It seemed as if the Solitary Eagle had just been freed from his shackles, and would almost jump out at any moment! If he was able to get more clarity on this thought, then he could surely progress further! And progress a lot further! But he was still helpless since he couldn't really get the idea formulated properly in his head at the moment, and was busy thinking over it which was evident from the frown on his face.

Unintentionally or intentionally, this one sentence of Jun Mo Xie's had brought a great expert on the fringes of a great breakthrough!

While the Solitary Falcon was absorbed in his thoughts, the Prince was simply unable to wait any longer.

"Little Brother, this wine, ah, how much? It's....."

"Well, I already addressed that earlier; it's like I said, this wine is eleven thousand taels of silver per jar... do you still think that it isn't worth it?" Jun Mo Xie quietly tossed the bait.

"Not at all!" the prince hadn't even opened his mouth yet, but Old Song simply couldn't resist the urge: "This wine is a rarity in this

human world! Measuring its value in gold and silver is a profanity to the wine's quality! Forget about eleven thousand silver, even eleven thousand gold isn't enough to purchase this wine!"

In his opinion, this wine was no longer just wine; it was an art....a masterpiece! Priceless! A priceless treasure!

"It is indeed worth it in my opinion as well! This wine is indeed a hundred times better than Old Song's wine!" The prince promptly replied back, looked at Jun Mo Xie and sighed: "Although I'm afraid that I won't be able to buy too much too much of it....."

[Difficult to buy too much? It's practically impossible...] although the prince made sure that he didn't say it like it really was.....

"If that's the case..... then I guess I shouldn't be selling it directly, and I should rather go in for only auctioning it instead! Perhaps I could even fetch a higher price!" Jun Mo Xie smiled as he tacitly put forth his idea.

The three men went silent for a while as they pondered over his idea, and understood his intention soon enough. They could clearly understand the potential behind his idea!

"If you do auction it... when will you auction it? And where will you auction it?" The prince simply couldn't wait to ask this question. [Where can I taste a wine like this one once more? And when can I buy it? The price is secondary!]

"Song Shang will convey that to you since he will be involved in this auction as well." Jun Mo Xie was a bit worried about trusting Old Song in other matters, but when it came to wine, he was a hundred percent sure about the man.

Song Shang could betray anyone, but he could never betray wine! Jun Mo Xie was confident about this!

"That's great!" the prince clapped his hands in excitement. "In fact, if you face any difficulty then this old man can even help you as long as you're conducting the auction within the city.... but if

you conduct the auction outside the city then I won't be able to help you out much." [If he auctions it here then I could somehow buy some of it, or at least curry a favor with the winner and drink some!]

"I'll make the official introductions; master... this man is the Emperor's brother, Yang Huai Nong. He is the Emperor's only sibling!" although Old Song's tone was very respectful, he still mentioned this fact right after the prince mentioned that he may not be able to afford this wine too often, which was obviously rather embarrassing considering that he was a prince.

"The Emperor's Brother....." Even though Jun Mo Xie had already guessed long back that this man was quite influential, but he still wasn't expecting him to be the Tian Xiang Empire's Emperor's only brother. Even though he was slightly surprised, he immediately regained his composure: "uh, apologizes for any disrespect."

Everyone was expecting him to be shocked, and even lower his head in worship, after all he was no more than a mere commoner in the eyes of these three men; a proud and talented youngster at best. [How's such a lowly man able to keep his composure in front of a prince? He didn't even lower his head in submission like the common people usually do...]

[In fact, this kid's eyes didn't even flinch for one second!] The prince obviously wanted to express his thoughts but decided to keep his mouth shut instead..... he could tell that this kid may not be the most respectful of people around....

They were all completely unaware that the boy in front didn't care about any 'prince' or 'royalty' owing to previous life's adventures.... Moreover, they were also unaware of the immoral behavior he had exhibited in front of the second prince just a few days ago.

If the prince hadn't already taken a shine to Jun Mo Xie's personality, then he would certainly have felt insulted by his



conduct, and wouldn't have stayed to drink his wine either, and could have even.....

"If necessary, then I will be very happy to co-operate with the prince." Jun Mo Xie flashed a faint smile as he stated his words in a polite manner. It was very, very evident from his tone and choice of words that he would only co-operate with the prince if it was deemed "necessary", else he.....

"Whichever suits you best!" The prince wasn't interested in pestering him about it, and laughed as he squinted his eyes: "Although I can't afford this wine at the moment, but I certainly cannot allow this wine to get buried either." Jun Mo Xie's obvious rejection had added more oil to the flame of his interest.

"I don't know if the old man would be interested... but I'm willing to sell one share in this wine for every two million silver taels. Even if the old man wishes to pass these shares onto his next of kin, this little brother would be willing to agree." This remark came as a bit of a surprise to everyone since Jun Mo Xie referred to the Prince as 'Old Man', despite being well aware of his true identity. Moreover, the offer to sell the rights to his wine at two million silver taels per share was an obvious indication of his optimistic calculation about his wine's prospects.

"This old man is almost fifty years old now, and I only have one daughter and one son." His Royal Highness smiled: "My daughter is old enough to be married, and I hope that I can find a suitable family for her, and relieve the burden of her future from my shoulders. As for my son... he doesn't wish to follow in his father's footsteps, and therefore I've already started making the preparation for the rainy days ahead..... and I hope that he isn't as helpless as his old man someday."

.....pin-drop silence.....

The previous Emperor had two sons: Crown prince, Yang Haui Yu and the second prince, Yang Huai Nong.

Yang Huai Yu had always been ambitious, tactical, military oriented, political minded and had always taken a very keen interest in the overall governing on the Empire. Yang Huai Nong had never participated in any of it, and had always maintained a low-key profile.... Because he knew that no matter how hard to strived, he'd never be able to surpass his elder brother's skills; he obviously had no intention of destroying himself by competing in vain.

So basically, the second prince had gradually withdrawn himself from the power-chase right from the start. His lack of enthusiasm for power coupled with his long lasting distance from the Empire's affairs had brought him to the point where he didn't even care about its future.

But now the Emperor was looking for his next successor, and the prince who had always been indifferent had started thinking about the future of his children, and was even willing to seek assistance from outside the royalty! [This can mean only one thing..... he is competing against his own three nephews... and he feels that the Empire might split..... leaving him with nothing?]

[Why else would a prince plot against the monarchy in order to secure the future of his children?]

# Chapter 166: Assassins

---

"One million taels instead of two for one share." Jun Mo Xie exposed a meaningful smile: "I'm only giving you this bargain because I like you."

[He's offering the Emperor's brother a share which is worth one million taels per share, and is actually calling it a favor?]

Jun Mo Xie lowered his line of sight to look at young Yang Mo and said: "Little girl, you're a shareholder in my wine from now on.... You and I are partners now!"

"I'm a man!" the boy screamed back so furiously that it almost felt as if he was gearing up to bite his tormentor.

"We'll discuss more on this topic later. Ladies and gentlemen, Song Shang will convey the details of the auction to you later, as and when they are decided, but for now, I need to head back home." Jun Mo Xie wisely chose to hurry back home.

The identity of an Emperor's brother, and his plan to secure the future of his children was not just a very serious matter, but also a very sensitive one, which was appropriately conveyed by prince Yang Huai Nong in one sentence. It was evident from his choice of words that any deviation from his instructions would result in a torrent of his influence. Even a Sky Xuan expert like Song Shang recoiled from the threat; let alone Jun Mo Xie.

Of course, this wasn't enough to scare an expert of the Solitary Falcon's standard..... obviously.... The man's strength had already surpassed the influence of a prince. However, the prince's words were enough to shake any man alive, apart from a man of the Solitary Falcon's stature of course.

In fact, even Jun Mo Xie didn't really care much about the prince, and was only concerned with his true new partner; young Yang Mo. [I might like you prince, but when the time comes, I'll only

care about this kid's life... not your insignificant one!]

"Master, do you wish for your disciple to stay here?" Even though Song Shang had asked this question in a normal tone, it was obvious from the gleam in his eyes that he wished to stay on.

"This vast and boundless land has several paths, but they all lead to one single destination..... no matter which path you take, you must walk the path of wine-making.... But wherever you go, remember to take these two jars of wine with you; as a reminder!" Jun Mo Xie smiled: "Song Shang, you.... Since your identity has been exposed.... Are you planning on leave this city?"

Even though Jun Mo Xie had asked this question, he was well aware that Song Shang wasn't going to leave. How could he.... when he could stay here and learn to make such wine? Making quality wine had been his life-long pursuit, so how could he leave when the secret of making such wine was within arm's reach? Even if his body was dismembered into a thousand pieces, he still wouldn't leave!

Since he was done here, Jun Mo Xie turned around and greeted the Solitary Falcon once again and then turned around to leave the shop.

The Solitary Falcon interrupted his departure: "Boy, how can you leave when we're not done yet? You still haven't settled my account yet... you owe me!"

"Old man, you have no account with me, so it isn't good of you to ask me. I have no debts with you... and you have no credit over me." Jun Mo Xie smiled as he looked back at him: "People usually owe me, not the other way around; if you think I owe you... then why don't you try and find me?"

Even though the Solitary Falcon's mouth opened to curse, his eyes still revealed the hint of a smile: "Since you're playing tricks with this old man... maybe I will!"

"Well then, if you can find me later, then we'll certainly settle our accounts." Jun Mo Xie glanced over at him one last time, and then sped away: "If you find me later, then I'll definitely give you a reason to... ha ha...."

"This kid was so calm even after learning my true identity.... This is the first time I've ever seen someone with such a low Xuan Qi maintain such composure." The prince's eyes revealed a hint of appreciation as the three men gazed at Jun Mo Xie's fleeting silhouette: "He is certainly something beyond the usual!"

"I agree with you old man... this is a first for me as well!" the Solitary Falcon agreed in dismay: "He somehow managed to figure each one of us out but still managed to retain his own mystery!"

The Solitary Falcon had long realized that the youngster had figured his identity out as well, [else there would have been no reason why each and every words coming out from his mouth would be so targeted and associable...] However, the Solitary Falcon was feeling a bit bizarre instead of angry for some reason.

[I knew he was flattering me all along, but then why was I still feeling so good about it?]

"Hang on! What are you doing?" The prince stopped Song Shang's actions mid-way, and glared at him with the eyes of a fire-breathing dragon. "Even though you're the kid's apprentice now, it still doesn't mean that you can just pick up these two jars of wine and leave. Anyway, he intends on auctioning them... didn't you hear him? So, how much for them? Don't think that you can climb onto a high tree and take these two jars for yourself....."

Song Shang was in the process of stealthily taking away the two wine jars which Jun Mo Xie had left behind, and was intending on slipping out!

"I was the competitor and now his new disciple.... You're just the referee! Why should you get these two wine jars?" Song Shang glared argumentatively, unwilling to pass on the ownership of the

wine jars without a fight.

"The referees are allowed to drink the leftovers; would you disagree?" The Solitary Falcon unceremoniously snatched the two jars from Song Shang's hands: "The contest is over now, and you're the owner of this pub; it's your duty to go and get us something suitable to drink with our wine!"

Old Song didn't have the courage to say anything when confronted with the power and influence of a man like the Solitary Falcon. He bitterly turned around and went inside his shop to fetch the snacks. The Solitary Falcon and the prince hurriedly grabbed their glasses and poured themselves a drink. The prince couldn't help but feel the influence of brute strength, and the insidious effect that it could instill in the hearts of weaker men!

In a corner far away from the pub, a woman stood dressed in black robes with a black veil concealing her face. As a gust of wind fluttered past her robes, it managed to lift her veil just enough to reveal her two bright and shiny eyes, which seemed to be burning in the flames of anger.

[Jun Mo Xie.... You shamed and humiliated me! Today, you will pay for it with your life! Jun Zhan Tian won't be able to help you today, and neither would the Eighth Grand Master you just befriended.... Tonight, you'll die for sure!]

"Miss, it is about to rain; you should find cover below." A black masked man quietly came from behind her and whispered in her ear.

"No! I want to witness the ossification of Jun Mo Xie's bones to ash with my own eyes; only then will this anger inside my heart truly subside!" The black-robed woman remained motionlessly glued to her spot as she replied in a voice as cold and sharp as ice-shards: "Jun Mo Xie needs to return to his home before dark in order to attend a family dinner tonight. We've gone to great lengths in order to procure this information; therefore we must

seize this opportunity well!"

"Yes miss!"

Even though it was only the early hours of dusk at the moment, but a thick layer of dark clouds had already started to converge in sky, making the sky look a lot darker and gloomier at this time than usual. As the shrill autumn winds howled through the streets of the Tian Xiang city, the clouds continued to narrow down the last remaining strand of silver-lining in the sky above.

The city's streets had already been emptied since the pedestrians had already sensed the ominous signal of the dark clouds and the mournful winds.

Jun Wu Yi had been forced to remain restricted to his wheelchair due to the presence of his guests.....

"Why does it feel as if something is amiss?" Jun Mo Xie was sitting in his palanquin, feeling extremely uneasy on the way back to his residence. [I just won a contest, and I even acquired such a top-level Sky Xuan apprentice.... Then why am I not feeling any excitement? This is a strange phenomenon..... Something is wrong!]

[When was the last time I was this unsettled?]

[Something is definitely wrong...]

This thought silenced Jun Mo Xie's mind as a burst of horror took control of his subconscious!

Whether in this life or the previous, Jun Mo Xie had only felt this sensation when he was lurking on the fringes of a major danger!

Moreover, this feeling of discomfort had saved his life many-a-times in the past!

[Is there any approaching danger.... Is my existence under an immediate threat?]

Jun Mo Xie's entire body suddenly went cold as he

subconsciously sunk into his seat!

Whoosh! Whoosh!.....

Numerous piercing sounds sounded all around without any warning as a myriad of weapons made their way through the empty street and towards the palanquin.

Bow-arrows, sleeve arrows, throwing knives..... numerous concealed weapons flew through the sky in a mad frenzy!

These weapons rained on his palanquin even more densely than the impending natural shower!

Bang....a huge flying chain smashed off the roof of his palanquin.....

The eight men accompanying Jun Mo Xie could be regarded as some of the best guards of the Jun family, and were able to react quickly enough to obstruct most of the weapons approaching their master's palanquin. Two men were caught off-guard and sustained injuries, but even they managed to retaliate by stopping some of the weapons.

"Protect the young master!" the eight men immediately surrounded the palanquin shoulder-to-shoulder as soon as the command sounded. Even though two men had arrows poking out of their lower bodies, they stationed themselves in front of their master's ride without making any sounds of agony.

The sudden and usually dense wave of hidden weapons' attack was followed by absolute silence.... The wind however, continued to howl through the streets of the city.....

Jun Mo Xie's heart sunk: Assassins! And they are well-trained, organized.... Plus they are being led by someone very experienced!

The leader of the guards quickly issued his orders: "The enemy is attacking from the shadows, therefore we must split up in to two groups. If need be, then you two will guard the young master from the front, while the two of you will guard him from the rear. If you



need any help, then the four of us will immediately return to assist you. The young master's safety is the first priority!"

Everyone accepted the command with awe-inspiring bravery.

"No, don't! We must stay together!" Jun Mo Xie's voice sounded from within the palanquin: "The other side has more manpower, and they have a significantly higher amount of firepower as well. They have at least a dozen bow and arrows, sleeve arrows, as well as throwing knives... hammers, darts.....they attacked from a long distance, but even then their attacks were simultaneous... they are very well organized. It's useless to split up when dealing with such an enemy... that will only accelerate the pace of our defeat and ensure our deaths! We only have one hope; do you see that corner ten feet away from here?"

Jun Mo Xie quickly analyzed the situation through the screens of his palanquin and commanded. Given his ability, making the corner wasn't an issue, but it was an entirely different matter as far as his guards were concerned.

# Chapter 167: Torrent of terror

---

Since the first volley of those concealed weapons had been focused on the palanquin, Jun Mo Xie had clearly understood that he was the intended target of the attackers; and now that the upper part of the palanquin had been smashed to pieces, he was certain that the assassins were simply waiting to see their reaction. If these assassins were to realize that their target has already died, then he was sure that these people would immediately turn around and leave without even coming out in the open!

"We'll make our way to that corner ten feet away, and then we'll take the road which leads to the Jun residence." Jun Hu, the head of the guards immediately whispered his command.

"Good! Now listen to my orders; and you're not allowed to oppose me! Else you'll be removed from the Jun Family's command, understood?!" even though Jun Mo Xie's voice was barely audible, the severity of his command was evident from his tone.

The eight guards looked rather stumped by his words, but quickly realized that this wasn't the time to argue and hastily nodded.

Jun Mo Xie had been able to spot that most of the concealed weapons had been issued at the back of golden colored lights, while another five or six had originated from green colored sources. But the most surprising thing was that the number of golden colored sources was almost thrice as many as the green colored ones!

[Who is trying to get me killed? Who's capable of organizing such an expensive line-up?]

Jun Mo Xie couldn't resist drawing a comparison: [even the assassination attempt on the princess wasn't half as strong as this one! Am I an even bigger target than the princess now?]

"You will immediately abandon the palanquin; and then you'll

move forward in full speed. I'm their target! You don't need to worry about me; I'll make my escape once you're gone!" Jun Mo Xie calmly instructed.

Jun Hu shook his head as he blankly stared in his master's direction, [we will not abandon the young master under any circumstances...] "This is our only duty! We will not abandon you young master... we'll defend you till our deaths! We cannot obey that command young master!"

"Nonsense! I'm your master, and as long as I'm alive, you will listen to every word of mine! Now obey the command!" Jun Mo Xie patiently replied: "It was obvious from their attacks that they are much stronger than you guys are, so you won't be able to do much even if you stay here and fight. However, you will end up becoming a burden for me if you stay! You have to get out now so I can get out of here with ease!"

"We'll be waiting for you up ahead in that case young master! And we'll try to attract as many troops as possible towards us!" Jun Hu didn't hesitate one bit while making up his mind, [if the young master dies, then I will not wait for the martial judgement... I will immediately put a knife to my throat, and I'll kill myself.]

He ordered his men, and the eight silhouettes immediately rushed out.

"I don't care who you are, nor will I care about your instigator... since you've come to kill me, you should've come prepared to face the consequences!"

As Jun Mo Xie watched his eight guards reaching the corner, the long-lost glimmer of a familiar glory shone in his eyes: "It seems that it's unavoidable to divulge from the ways of my past today! So.....It's time to kill!"

A monstrous smile surfaced on his face as his body sunk deeper into his seat. Like a snowflake in the summer sun, his body disappeared into the ground below without a trace, leaving the

palanquin completely empty.....

The movement of the bodyguards had left the assassins baffled! They had been spying for several days now, and had even gone to the lengths of bribing local peddlers for gathering reliable information about Jun Mo Xie's activities. They were absolutely convinced that Jun Mo Xie was sitting inside the palanquin!

[But why are those guards abandoning the palanquin? Are they just trying to distract our attention?]

[But that just doesn't make any sense, ah, they didn't even peek into the palanquin to see if their master is alive or dead.... They just fled! How could such irresponsible guards exist under this sun? But my sources were sure that these guards are most loyal to the Jun Family, and weren't even afraid of sacrificing their lives for the sake of their masters!]

[This is really weird! Could it be that the palanquin.... Is really..... empty?]

[No that can't be! Just the elevation of the palanquin was enough to indicate that someone was inside the palanquin! Therefore, someone must still be in there!]

[But there must be a reason why they are abandoning the palanquin and fleeing!]

Even though his head was swarming with several different possibilities, the leader of the assassins immediately issued his orders: "Two teams will go and stop those eight guards, but make sure that you don't kill them all! At least one man must be taken captive! One team will follow after me, and we'll personally go and kill that evil bastard!"

A dozen silhouettes emerged from within the shadows of the surrounding area, and swiftly made their way towards the escaping guards. A few more assassins, who were already positioned in the direction of their escape, had already started

engaging them in combat.

Several more assassins came out of their hiding spots almost simultaneously, and then dispersed into four groups as they completely surrounded the palanquin. They quickly blocked every possible and imaginable exit route of the palanquin while their gleaming swords flickered and reflected their black masks.

"Young son of the Jun Family, you can come out now..... There are no loopholes in our plan, so it's pointless to struggle." The leader of the assassins slowly stated in a cold voice as he unsheathed his golden sword.

"You're still in there; I'm a hundred percent sure of it! If you don't come out now, then I'll set your ride ablaze!" the ominous hint of a sadistic pleasure gleamed in his eyes, revealing that he would genuinely enjoy this act of cruelty.

The man repeated himself twice, but heard nothing apart from the constant clashing sounds coming from some distance away due to the confrontation between the guards and his two other teams. Even though those eight guards were both outnumbered and less powerful as compared to their opponents, they were still bravely trying to attract as much attention onto themselves as possible. It was evident that they weren't fighting for their survival, but for that of their young master's, and were somehow able to match up to their aggressors in the backdrop of their bravery!

Amidst the fierce fighting, a flag with flowery engraving on it suddenly rocketed into the sky!

"This is the Jun Family's secret signal for help!" the leader of the assassins already knew their secret signal, and knew that they would run into trouble if they didn't hurry. Hence, he waved his hands and ruthlessly ordered: "Burn him!"

Five or six torches lit up at the same time, and were set in contact with the fabric of the palanquin and its bamboo structure. With the wind assisting their intention, the conflagration instantly took

control of the palanquin's fate, while the faces of the arsonists rejoiced as they tried to imagine Jun Mo Xie's fruitless struggle for escape.

However, their laughter came to an abrupt end.

They were surprised upon realizing that the fire only gave rise to the snapping sounds of the palanquin's structure, but not of Jun Mo Xie's screams. Moreover, the only scent they could smell was that of burning inanimate objects; and not that of a living body.... [ah, what's going on?]

[Is that evil bastard really not in the palanquin?]

Two men simultaneously exposed the chains which were nicely concealed in their sleeves. These chains snaked out towards the palanquin and ripped open the vehicle's flaming structure!

Not a soul in sight!

"Li Zhi Wu, what is going on?" an ice cold voice sounded from a distance. The graceful and elegant body of a woman was watching from distance with a flavor of extreme disappointment in her eyes.

"We've been fooled!" the leader, Li Zhi Wu was startled by the sight of a silver bolt of lightning, which pierced through the dark of the clouds. This flashing light was followed by the crisp and bombarding sound of thunder.

A torrent of rainfall came crashing down from the heavens above.

At this point, the eight body guards of Jun Mo Xie's were still engaged in a fierce confrontation with a number almost twice of theirs', and even though they were somehow hanging tough, it was evident from the rate which they were consuming their Xuan Qi, their blood would start to flow through the bare streets of the city very soon. In fact, if these men chose to flee at this point, some of them would actually be able to make an escape..... However, they were still fighting back with the single-minded ambition of

distracting their master's aggressors!

"Hey, how's it going?" a ghostly figure suddenly appeared behind one of the black masked men; the man turned around... only to find two slender fingers approaching his Adam's apple, 'chuck'..... the eyes of the assassin froze in shock while his hands trembled twice as his feet recoiled backwards under the effect of his collapsing body.

Since the appearance of this figure was too ambiguous, another one of the assassins was unable to spot it. All he saw was his collapsing comrade, and was unable to understand why his companion would choose to drop to the ground for no reason: "What are you doing?" he asked as he extended his hand to assist his companion.

As the palm of his hand came in contact with his deceased companion's body, the remaining fifteen or so of his companions hastily screamed: "Be careful....."

They were too late. The man felt a cold hand around his neck as his ears heard a crisp snapping sound of something breaking.... The man was left perplexed to find that he was staring at his own buttocks!

[What's going on? I was obviously looking in the forward direction, so why am I seeing my own butt... ...] as his thoughts seized to exist, his body collapsed to the ground while his dead fish-like eyes continued to remain glued to his own buttock!

This man was quite fortunate, especially when one considers the fact that he died a painless death, and saw only his own buttock in his last moments, and not some foreign object.....

However, his companions weren't destined to be as fortunate!

Thunderbolts of lightening continued to accompany the falling torrents of rain!

As the lightening continued to shine in the dark sky, almost

everyone experienced an incredible but frightening torrent of terror: an erratic figure suddenly appeared in between four assassins, almost like a ghost..... no one saw where the figure came from..... no one heard any sounds of its approach.....

Is he a god or .....a monster?

Like a devil from a nightmare, one their eyes could see but hands couldn't touch, the monster leisurely cut their lives short.... Helpless, they only stood there in passive acceptance of their fate!



# Chapter 168: Slaughtered

---

This erratic ghostly figure only made one action; he actually made several actions simultaneously, but it was impossible to classify them as separate actions due to the degree of their simultaneity: his left foot silently but with visibly thunderous speed went straight up one of the assassin's crotch, while his left hand landed on the throat of the second assassin, and poked a big hole in it. No one saw the speed with which his right hand reversed the neck of the third assassin, and left him staring at his own buttock....luckily; then, both his elbows landed straight into the back of the fourth assassin, who was facing the other side at that moment, unaware of this mysterious figure's presence behind him.....

Even though the assassin's back was unable to resist the elbows, and crumbled inwards under the effect of the dual-elbow strike, his body's flesh showed no signs of any injury!

As a result, the first assassin was sent out screaming into the air, bleeding from all seven apertures of his face while the next two assassins swirled around and landed on the ground. The fourth one however, was left wearing a strange look on his face..... he landed on the ground in a weird posture while his bodily blood started to fuse into the mud below.....

Anyone could tell that all his bones inside his thoracic cavity had been shattered along with his spine.....

Another thunderbolt shone in the sky, and this mysterious figure instant disappeared and reappeared in the middle of another group of six assassins! In span no less than a blink of an eye, these six assassins were already dead as well!

The rest of the assassins were staring in awe and fear.....[six well trained and cold-blooded killers were vulnerable beyond words in front this thing! He actually killed the six of them without

borrowing any support from his Xuan Qi!]

[Who in this world is capable of killing six of such expert assassins in one swoop??]

"Follow me!" the mysterious man shouted through the mask which was concealing his face; it was evident that he was addressing the Jun Family's guards.

"Please save the young master first....." Jun Hu requested even though he was panting with exhaustion. He hadn't yet finished his sentence before he found himself interrupted by this mysterious man: "Jun Mo Xie has already escaped! If you guys hadn't stayed back here then he would have already gotten home by now!"

Realizing that their young master would have somehow made the corner and might have made his way towards the safety of the Jun mansion, the eight guards finally breathed a sigh of relief, and rushed forward to join their savior.

The mysterious man didn't intend to boast, but had he not stopped to save these eight guards, then the young master Jun would already made it home! Obviously, this mysterious man was Jun Mo Xie himself.

After he had asked his guards to leave him, he had immediately removed his robe, and had masked his face with its fabric. Then he had escaped into the earth below with the help of the Yin Yang escape law. If it weren't for the task of rescuing his eight body guards, then Jun Mo Xie would have straight away made his way towards the Jun residence, after all this location was quite close to the Family's residence. Although, Jun Mo Xie's wasn't skilled enough to cover the entire distance in one single attempt, but he would managed it in multiple rounds with ease.

Everyone was staring at his figure in awe..... after all, who could have imagined that there would actually be someone in this world who could really traverse through the ground freely? This was simply unrealistic.... To them, this phenomenon was beyond all

forms of reasonable comprehension! Nothing like this had ever happened in the entire Xuan Xuan continent before. No one had ever reported such a sighting; in fact, no one had even imagined it.

However, the Hongjun Pagoda was an alien object for this world, and had long surpassed the limitation of Xuan Qi. In this world obsessed with, and limited to Xuan Qi, no was capable of imagining the existence of such an object, let alone understand the profound meaning of the 'Art of unlocking the heaven's fortune'!

[Is his skill a gift of god, or the apparition of a monster... he was able to kill off six highly trained killers in the blink of an eye... how?!] It takes the human mind a while to switch between confusion and shock, and then it requires more time to process everything in between. Although those well-trained assassin were capable of doing all this in just a few tenths of a second, this time was enough for hitman Jun to complete his task!

In fact, this time was enough for hitman Jun to eliminate them without even using his blade!

The leader of the assassins, Li Zhi Wu by now had figured out that his targets were escaping, and so he quickly started to move after them, putting all his strength to work. His body almost elevated from the ground below as the yellow colored light of his Xuan Qi abnormally dazzled through the falling raindrops, making it seem as if a bright sun had suddenly appeared in the middle of a night-like ambience!

The yellow colored lights of two khaki-colored robed men also flashed beside him as they charged right behind him at an almost equivalent pace. These three assassins had decided to take the lead in chasing after their mysterious attacker!

At the moment, Jun Mo Xie and his companions were being chased by almost a dozen killers, when suddenly a black-robed, black-masked man appeared right in front of them. He just stood there blocking their way ahead with a sword in his hand, and a

deep look in his motionless eyes, almost as if he was an unbreakable wall, unwilling to let Jun Mo Xie and his guards past.

A green-colored light flashed from his body as he geared up for the approaching escapees!

[A Jade Xuan expert! This person must be the leader of those two groups.]

This person had no intention of using his Xuan Qi to kill his escaping targets, and only intended on doing just the right amount of hard work. His only aim was to resist Jun Mo Xie's party long enough for his comrades to catch up and encircle the escapees.

Obviously, once the nine escaping men were surrounded by the remaining killers, the escaping men wouldn't be able to last long enough to see the Jun Family's on route support!

Just a matter of moments would be enough to decide the fate of their lives!

However, Jun Mo Xie's guards were charging forward like sharp daggers, knowing that they were being led by a mysterious but all-conquering spear at the front!

A green light flashed as this man stepped backwards to assess the situation better, making the water in the puddles underneath his feet splash in all directions. This jade Xuan expert was already beginning to have second thoughts!

[This mysterious figure must be one the best from the Jun Family!]

Then, he raised his sword and burst forward again. This Jade Xuan killer had been practicing his sword-play for decades and now seemed confident of matching his opposition!

In fact, it could even be said that the man was so confident of his ability, that he would even be willing to match his sword against a Spirit Xuan for a few seconds!

[Who is this mysterious masked expert? I haven't been able to see his Xuan Qi light yet, but I know that he's no rookie! Could this expert be a Spirit Xuan?]

[If I died defending my line of defense against a Spirit Xuan, then it would indeed be a matter of honor!]

Even though the heart of this Jade Xuan expert had gone numb, the fire of this thought had propelled his body to move forward and confront this mysterious expert.

[Nah, this is absolutely impossible.... This is ridiculous....if he was genuinely a Spirit Xuan expert, then he could have killed us all in the blink of an eye. So why would he chose to kill us one by one? Besides, Spirit Xuan experts can't be found everywhere.... They are Spirit Xuan masters... not cabbage!]

As his mind process this information and added more fuel to his actions, he accelerated the pace of his advance, and charged forward even faster; almost at the speed of lightening!

The eyes of this killer were gleaming so brightly in the colors of excitement, that it seemed as if he had completely forgotten the fear of death in the background of this legendary situation!

As their body's approached closers, Jun Mo Xie's body didn't slow down even to the last step, but his entire upper body twisted in a strange manner at the last moment, almost to the point where it seemed to be defying the laws of nature!

His waist had twisted in a manner which would allow him to face his attacker from the side while his face had already moved past his attacker's body!

[This is simply bizarre!]

[Is there anything that this guy can't do?]

Whoosh!

Even though the Jade Xuan assassin was taken aback by Jun Mo

Xie's maneuver, his blade still managed to pierce past Jun Mo Xie's chest-clothing and tore out his shirt. In fact, the blade was so close to his body that it's face practically came in contact with Jun Mo Xie's chest but its sharp edges were only able to slash the raindrops which fell from the sky above!

Although Jun Mo Xie's movement had been exceptionally fast, but the speed and expertise of his attacker's strike was beyond the human body's limit of making a complete escape, owing to which the blade ended up rubbing Jun Mo Xie's chest! But this minor sacrifice of his clothing was completely worth it!

Because Jun Mo Xie's bullet like body had crashed straight into this Jade Xuan experts', while Jun Mo Xie's hands had managed to reach their desired destination!

The Jade Xuan expert's feet were lifted off the ground under the effect of the huge momentum and massive inertia of Jun Mo Xie's advance, forcing his body to advance forward! Well..... Jun Mo Xie was moving forward, but he was moving backwards! Involuntarily, of course! His mind was still in an excited state, but his body had started moving against the direction of his mind's command.....

Just when the Jade Xuan expert's eyes started to change their reflection from the excitement of his brutal advance to the extremity of his shock....

Jun Mo Xie's right elbow heavily bombarded the cavity of his chest!

Boom! Snap..... however, this sound was muffled by the sound of thunder!

Even his nerve cells were too slow to react..... the pain from this first strike hadn't even reached his brain cells yet when.....

Three of Jun Mo Xie's right palm's fingers found their way to his throat and split it open! Another faint snapping sound was issued as his fragile throat's bone was pulled out of his body.....

His head was forcefully raised upwards under the effect of the second attack.....

But only to find Jun Mo Xie's left hand's two fingers waiting there. His left hand had moved almost at the same time as his right one, and now his two fingers were plugged into his obstruction's eye sockets!

A black-white and red liquid projected outwards as Jun Mo Xie pulled his fingers out!

But that wasn't the end of it yet; Jun Mo Xie's left knee was also projecting upwards to meet this Jade Xuan's crotch in the hope of a high-impact collision!

## Chapter 169: Coming out safely

---

A very fierce method! However, Jun Mo Xie wasn't regarding this method as 'fierce' or even 'ruthless', but as simply necessary! Each individual attack of this series was fatal, and their combined impact over such a short duration had made them even more so!

The reason he considered these attacks to be necessary was simple: Their path was being obstructed by a Jade Xuan, and the only way to get out was to either use the Yin Yang Escape law or go for overkill without using his Xuan Qi since he was well aware that he couldn't break through a stronger enemy's Xuan Qi protection! In case he used the Yin Ying escape law to get past the man, he was sure to stop and kill his guards!

[You will need to die my friend! It's better that you die than us! Therefore you must die!] Jun Mo Xie was well aware that he couldn't afford to stall for even one second, else he would have a difficult time in getting everyone to safety, and therefore he had raining such powerful and consecutive strikes onto the assassin's body!

As far as Jun Mo Xie was concerned, that Jade Xuan assassin only had himself to blame for his miserable death. Had the man not been so powerful, then he too would have died as painlessly as his comrades!

Even though Jun Mo Xie had landed several fatal blows onto the man's body in a flash, he had still managed to maintain his forward velocity while the body of the Jade Xuan assassin had hung onto his own as the two of them bolted forward!

Boom!

Just as Jun Mo Xie's knee landed the final blow, the body of the Jade Xuan assassin suddenly split apart. His four limbs detached from the rest of his body, and flew out in four different directions, while his head dismembered from the core of his body and flew



over Jun Mo Xie's head. The body which had been hanging onto Jun Mo Xie's, had now suddenly dismembered into a hundred fragments. The deceased assassin's bones and flesh were now flying out in different directions while his blood was merging into the falling raindrops!

Jun Mo Xie's eight bodyguards quickly made their way forward through the blood and rain without slowing down; in fact, they weren't required to slow down at all during this in-motion combat sequence! The assassins who were chasing them had also seen this sequence very clearly: in their eyes, this demonic figure had just opened up a big and red hole in the body of their lieutenant, and had just torn his body apart like a piece of paper!

The escaping men continued to breeze forward and made another corner.... and were relieved to realize that they had finally made it to safety!

A few gorgeously glittering Xuan Qi lights were quickly braving their way through the rain and towards them; the Jun Family's support troops were arriving!

"Xiao Qi!....." Li Zhi Wu was running forward as fast as possible as he continued to stare at the rainy sky while his comrade's head spiraled through the air. He came to stop as the head landed on the ground, and rolled over twice and came to a halt next to his feet. His comrade's lifeless face was turned upwards, but was missing two eyes..... His face was still carrying a ferocious expression on it... even the traces of his sadistic smile were still frozen on his lifeless face!

It was almost as if the man had been struck by lightning and had been unable to change his facial expression before succumbing to his death!

Even though these two men were unrelated by flesh, they had become brothers in bond over the numerous risky assignments that they had taken together over these past few decades! And now

his brother's dismembered face was lying next to his feet!

Even if he managed to pick up his brother's entire body, Li Zhi Wu knew that he still wouldn't be able to piece it back together!

[What is this strange feeling?]

The black-robed leader of the assassins could feel his blood boiling. He could still hear Xiao Qi boasting about his smart and quick-witted son, and about his kind and loving wife..... he even remembered Xiao Qi mentioning that he would wash his hands clean of this life after this final assignment, and would then concentrate on rearing his family along with his wife.... far away from this city; like normal people, and would live happily ever after.....

He could clearly hear his friend's words and could even see the desire in his eyes as he had said: [I'm sick and tired of this blood-soaked way of life!]

And then.... Just now his friend had obeyed his own command and had charged forward to stop their escaping targets!

And just now he had died in front of his own eyes! And had died in the most gruesome manner possible!

Just because of his one command.....

"Who are you? I dare you to leave your name behind!" Li Zhi Wu roared as he stood motionlessly in the rain.... his voice sounded as shrill as that of an old ape! "Who are you.....?!"

A crisscross lightning bolt lit up the sky once again, and the sounds of thunder started to ring endlessly from the sky above, like drums on a battlefield; powerful and heavy; suppressive and bloody!

The hitman Jun shouted back loudly: "I dare you to tell me your name!" since the Jun Family's reinforcements had arrived, the situation had completely reversed....And Jun Mo Xie had already realized that the leader of his attackers had lost his mind to chaos

upon losing his friend, and was hoping to take full advantage of it!

Li Zhi Wu shouted back hatefully: "I am..... you damn bastard..... at least have the guts to tell me your name!" He realized his enemy's intentions at the last second, and withheld his name.

But no one answered back..... However, the Jun Family's reinforcements were already galloping at full speed since they had spotted the situation.

"Withdraw!" a cold voice originated from the throat of a slender black-dressed woman. Her wet hairs were pasted against her beautiful face, and one could clearly see through her veil and tell that her pupils had gone completely cold with pain and disappointment. However, despite all of it, she was still categorical enough to issue the command for retreat.

Li Zhi Wu immediately returned to his senses, and bent down to pick up his friend's head. He tried to scream one last threat, but his voice broke before he could find his words and so he simply stared at the backs of Jun Mo Xie and his guards..... his eyes were blatantly exposing the sea of hatred which was turning and twisting inside his heart!

Then, he turned around and left without saying anything more.

[Brother Xiao Qi....I'll take you home!]

His two tragic and teary eyes quietly disappeared into the dark of the streets.

The remaining of assassins were unable to fetch the bodies of their friends, and were forced to leave their fallen behind. By the time the Jun platoon arrived, all they saw was a collection of dead and cold bodies on the floor.....

Jun Mo Xie had already settled the immediate crisis, and had somehow managed to spoil the assassination attempt on his life.....

A yellowish light flickered from far away, almost as if it was flying in the dark sky, and landed straight in front of the eight

bodyguards: "Where is the young master?"

It was the butler, Old Pang! This old and loyal butler of the Jun Family was a peak Earth Xuan expert in reality!

The eight people were left stunned upon realizing this truth in that moment! [The masked man had said that the young master is safe.... But where is he? Where did young master go? He didn't get home yet?] With no concrete answer to give, they just continued to stare at each other blankly.

Old Pang's face started to wrinkle as his eyebrows gradually started to rise, he gloomily asked: "Did you really abandon the young master and escaped alone?" his voice was already beginning to reek of his murderous intentions!

"Ah.....that's not.....that's.... a mysterious expert said that he had rescued the young master..... we were completely encircled by the enemy at that time, but he also rescued us..... the young master didn't reach home...." Jun Hu's eyes were fixed on the ground while his head was lowered with shame. He was well aware that if his young master is dead, then his life and that of his men wouldn't even remotely be enough to compensate for the loss.

"A mysterious master? Who was that mysterious master? Where is he?" Old Pang's tone continued to get colder with each question he asked: "Did you really abandon the young master on the word of an unknown man? And then you just rushed out to ensure your own safety? Is that what you joined this family for?!"

"Pop!" the eight men simultaneously knelt to the ground in the pouring rain with nothing to say in their defense, and seemingly ready to accept their penalty.

Old Pang sighed and grunted: "Jun Hu, it's a pity that we accepted you into the family, trained you and then trusted you with the safety of the young master. We gave you the responsibility of his safety! And now the fate of the young master's life is unknown! You're held in capital offense in accordance with

the military regulations! What do you have to say about that?"

"I have nothing to say in my defense; I accept my punishment." Jun Hu remained knelt on the ground as the blood and rain poured over his expressionless face.

He could have said many things.... such as, he had only obeyed the command of his young master, and that since the young master was the only intended target, he had broken away from the young master in order to attract the attention of the enemy. He could have spoken about the valor which he fought... he could have said all of it; but he chose to keep quiet. He was well aware that if anything untoward had happened to his young master, then all his explanations weren't worth anything since it would still mean that he failed in his line of duty!

"Hang on....." Jun Mo Xie jumped over the adjacent wall, and ran over: "Old Pang, please don't blame these people wrongly. If Jun Hu hadn't fought so bravely and distracted the enemy, then I wouldn't have been able to get away." Jun Mo Xie narrated the tale of Jun Hu's bravery.

"Is that so?" Old Pang's face immediately calmed down: "Why didn't you say so?"

Then he looked around and asked: "Where's that mysterious expert who saved you all? This person saved the life of the young master... the entire family is in his debt, and so he must be rewarded accordingly."

"He went in that direction, but he was too agile, and therefore I cannot be too sure which way he went afterwards....." Jun Hu raised his finger and pointed in Jun Mo Xie's direction, whilst still kneeling on the ground.

"That man was really weird..... he threw me straight to the ground." Jun Mo Xie brushed his forehead almost as if it was bruised: "He actually kicked me after saving my life and left without saying goodbye."

"What did this person look like?" Old Pang's mind started shuffling through several ideas.

"His face was masked, so it's impossible to tell." Jun Mo Xie and Jun Hu spoke up at the same time. Even though Jun Mo Xie's voice seemed ignorant, Jun Hu's tone seemed full of gratitude.

Old Pang waved his hand as he stated in a deep voice: "You eight will report to the master of the house, and you'll tell him the entire story without any omissions, and then you'll wait for the master's judgment!"

"Yes!" the eight men readily agreed and stood up on their feet once again.

# Chapter 170: Clues

---

"Young master, now..... how will you participate in the family dinner now?" Old Pang took an umbrella from the guard behind him, and held it above Jun Mo Xie's head.

"Not an issue! I didn't sustain any injuries." Jun Mo Xie answered in a heroic manner: "This was just a small incident, I've been through worse."

Even though Old Pang's mouth parted to open, but he didn't speak. He could tell that Jun Mo Xie had indeed gotten used to these affairs. [The young master had sustained a few injuries during the last assassination attempt on the princess.... Compared to that, this assassination attempt on the young master's life was nothing since the young master is perfectly unharmed.]

"In that case, you must return to the residence young master. The master and the Guan family have been waiting a long time now." Old Pang stated.

"Just a minute, but first I have to go back because I need to take a look at my palanquin.... There should still be something inside it." Jun Mo Xie took the umbrella and turned around.

[The palanquin was first attacked by concealed weapons, and was then set ablaze. And now this rain has turned it into a pile of dirt and ash; what could possibly be still left in it?]

Even though Old Pang didn't quite agree, he still followed after Jun Mo Xie for the sake of keeping him safe.

Jun Mo Xie circled around the remains of the palanquin a few time like a fly, and then bent down to pick something up from the floor, and then first looked east, then west, and then swirled around in a circle once. Then he handed the umbrella back to Old Pang and said: "Let's go."

"I don't think that the weapon you just picked up belongs to you,

young master." Old Pang's keen peak Earth Xuan eyes were capable enough of spotting the item that Jun Mo Xie had just picked up. [You just walked all the way over to here for picking up a concealed weapon which was left behind the enemy? These kinds of weapons are very common.... It's common sense to know that this will give us no clues.... The young master considers himself to be too smart...]

Even though he had seen Jun Mo Xie picking up that weapon, he hadn't noticed the way his eye had lit up or the 'Ah, is that so' smile on Jun Mo Xie's face at that moment.

Even the pouring rain and fierce winds weren't enough to completely wash away all the traces of the assassins. Though some minor traces still lingered, the Jun Family's sleuths weren't capable of understanding or interpreting them.

For example, the wind was still carrying a faint fragrance with it..... Even though the fragrance was so faint that a normal person wouldn't exactly be able to tell things apart, but Jun Mo Xie's amplified senses were keen enough to detect it.

And then there had been a hint of familiarity in that 'Withdraw' command; these two factors were alone enough! A wretched smile creased onto his face as he put two and two together.

Upon reaching home, Jun Mo Xie found his grandfather standing at the gate of the hall way. The Old man's eyes scanned his grandson from head to toe but found no scratch on his body. He frowned his brows in rebuke: "When will you be strong enough for me to stop worrying about you! Now go and change your clothes."

Jun Mo Xie obediently left for his room even though he didn't quite agree with his grandfather.

He quickly changed his clothes and entered the dining hall, and found that the food and beverages had already been set on the table. Jun Wu Yi was sitting in his wheelchair with a thin layer of blanket atop his legs. He looked at Jun Mo Xie, smiled faintly and



whispered in a low voice: "I don't know what kind of skills would be required to handle this matter in such a neat manner..... Mo Xie, your uncle is very curious ah. You have to tell me about the origins of these mysterious skills; don't say that you don't know anything about it!"

"Uh.... Uncle, this big world is filled with all kinds of wonders, and some extraordinary talents, this....." Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously.

"Stop, I don't want that talk again." Jun Wu Yi widened his eyes to stare at his nephew: "What about those people? Do you have any idea about them?"

"I did get some idea about them; I might be able to track down a few of them." Jun Mo Xie winked.

"Should I send some more men to assist you?" Jun Wu Yi's expression suddenly became very cold. [Those bastards tried to assassinate my Mo Xie, therefore they must die!]

"That time hasn't come yet." Jun Mo Xie smiled back: "They've given us something to build on, but if we send out our men after them right now, then we'll only make them more cautious."

"You mean.....you already know who's behind this?" Jun Wu Yi's eyes lit up.

"Uncle, your clear as flame foresight is capable of planning battle strategies from a tent and can win a battle from a thousand miles away....." Jun Mo Xie mockingly flattered.

Jun Wu Yi didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"Guan Family?" Jun Mo Xie asked out of curiosity: "We've organized this banquet for them, so why aren't they here yet?"

"They are in your sister-in-law's courtyard. Qing Han had a fit of rage." Jun Wu Yi smiled subtly: "This is their internal family matter after all; therefore it's alright to wait a while."

As he said these last words, Jun Mo Xie turned his head to look outside into the rain and spotted a queue of individuals slowly making their way towards the dining area.

It was the Guan Family!

A total of five from Guan family had showed up for the dinner with a beautiful but ice-faced Guan Qing Han leading the way, followed by a thin and tall, middle-aged man dressed in a green robe. Even though his robes were fluttering in the wind, but his clothes were completely dry, almost as if his clothes were impervious to the rain outside. The man behind Guan Qing Han was her father, Guan Dong Liu; he was also the head of the Guan family.

Behind Guan Dong Liu was a burly looking old man. Even though his hair and scanty beard were gray, but his body was still very big and sturdy. The sharpness of his eyes seemed to resemble that of a leopard, and his tiger-like walk made it rather evident that this man, Guan Ru Shan was one of the finest warriors of the Guan family.

Guan Ru Shan was followed by two long-faced, jade shaded, elegant, smart and handsome youngsters. These two youngsters were Guan Qing Han's elder brothers. The eldest one was named Guan Qing Bo, while the second son's name was Guan Qing Yue.

Guan Qing Han was a very elegant and beautiful young woman, but her two brothers' elegance and looks were at par with hers'. [This family has excellent genes; really excellent ones.] Jun Mo Xie thought: [They look like embroideries on a pillow cover, don't they?]

"Brother Guan!" Jun Wu Yi greeted Guan Dong Liu by cupping his hands in a traditional manner while remaining in his wheelchair.

"Brother Jun, there's no need for such formalities." Guan Dong Liu smiled radiantly as he cupped his hands to return the greeting,

and then signaled his two sons to step forward and greet Jun Wu Yi.

"The third generation of the Jun family is indeed very handsome, graceful and bears extraordinary talents ah. Brother Jun, the future of your family is indeed in very secure hands." Guan Dong Liu looked sideways at Jun Mo Xie and smiled affectionately.

The sincere and complimenting manner in which he stated these insulting words to the new master of the house was indeed very fascinating! Jun Mo Xie could already tell that maintaining control of the relationship with a man of such diplomatic skill could be a very difficult task.

But at this moment, Jun Mo Xie's eye suddenly diverted towards youngster at the back, Guan Qing Yue, who had intentionally or otherwise hidden his body behind his father's in an instant. His eyes had revealed a hint of anger at first upon seeing Jun Mo Xie, which had quickly transformed to shock and surprise, almost as if he wasn't expecting to see Jun Mo Xie here. Even though that look in his eyes had disappeared so quickly that no one else was able to notice it, but he still wasn't able to hide it from the keen and perceptive eyes of the Hitman.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but wonder: [What's the reason behind that look in his eyes?] He searched his entire memory in order to determine whether he or the previous Jun Mo Xie had any kind of an association with the youngster, but only found that not only had he never had any sort of an association with the youngster, he had never even seen the man's face before, [but then why did he look so shocked after seeing me? What am I missing here?]

Even though Jun Mo Xie's mind was busy juggling a plethora of thoughts, his surface expressions were indifferent to it as he stepped forward and smiled courteously to greet Guan Qing Bo and Guan Qing Yue. Jun Mo Xie had heard that the two brothers of his sister-in-laws' had interests similar to the previous Jun Mo Xie.

It was customary for the host family to entertain their guests; the older generation was responsible for the entertainment of their counterparts, while the younger generation was responsible for looking after theirs'. Since Jun Mo Xie was the only youngster in the Jun Family, the burden of entertaining these two youngsters naturally fell onto his shoulders.

"Third young master." The two youngsters cupped their hands in greeting. Even though this was his usual title of address from strangers, it was still rather weird coming from the elder brothers of his sister-in-law since the appropriate term of address would have been 'brother' or 'younger brother'. The Guan Family was based out the Jiang Hu province and though their region of residence was fairly small, but the family was still quite wealthy and influential since they were practically the overlords of the territory; the young generation of such a family obviously must be aware of the appropriate terms of address.

This title of address alone was enough to reflect that these two youngsters didn't consider Jun Mo Xie to be their sister's brother-in-law and were plainly considering him to be a powerful family's young descendant.

Just this one 'third young master' was enough to reveal a lot of information to Jun Mo Xie. Suddenly, a warm smile surfaced on his face as he extended one arm and led the younger of the two men into a more isolated corner of the dining hall. Guan Qing Yue's arm shook as Jun Mo Xie pulled him away, and although this vibration was extremely subtle, but Jun Mo Xie was clearly able to sense the fear inside this young man's heart.

Even though his face wasn't reflecting anything, his mind was constantly considering all sorts of circumstances. [Could it be that?]

Even though Jun Mo Xie's mind was busy making its calculations, his mouth was free to talk: "You guys have travelled thousands of miles to get to the Tian Xiang city.... and I've failed to

entertain you for the first two days of your stay here, brothers....."

Guan Qing Bo elegantly smiled and said: "There's no need for any formalities. Our first two days in the Tian Xiang city have been quite wonderful anyway, and we've managed to keep ourselves amused. We met a lot of new people, and have come to realize that this place is indeed worthy of being called the 'capital city' of the Tian Xiang Empire. We've kept ourselves very busy brother, so there's no need to apologize, really ha ha...."

Guan Qing Bo's nature had taken after his father, which was evident from the fitting choice of words he selected to reply with. Jun Mo Xie had been informed that Guan Qing Bo was just as interested in certain activities as the previous Jun Mo Xie had been, but that wasn't even remotely visible from the sophisticated manner in which he was conducting himself!

"Oh?" Jun Mo Xie sneakily moved closer, and said in a low voice: "Then I can guarantee a place which will bring the brothers more joy than any other place ever has...."

"What place?" Guan Qing Bo asked in a low voice.

A wretched smile surfaced on Jun Mo Xie's face; the kind that only a man can understand. He quickly glanced around at Guan Qing Han to ensure that he was standing at a safe distance away from her: "Spirit Fog Lake! That place is every man's paradise, ah, you just can't miss it....."

Guan Qing Yue's face suddenly and violently twitched for a second the moment he heard the words 'Spirit Fog Lake'.

# Chapter 171: You're lucky I'm not killing you

---

Guan Qing Bo couldn't help wondering, [this guy is so naive.... he's just revealed his true colors in three words!]

"We've also heard about the Spirit Fog Lake." Guan Qing Bo smiled and said: "In fact, we've spent almost one-and-a-half days of our two in the Tian Xiang city there itself."

"Ah? The brothers have good taste, ah, ha ha ha, I guess I'm not alone in this world." Jun Mo Xie's face blossomed, almost as if he had just run into his soul-mates: "So? What was it? Girls? Boys? Or both? Gee... he he...."

Guan Qing Bo's face reflected a slight trace of embarrassment as he said: "Not at all... we were actually there on a business trip....."

"Brother!" Guan Qing Bo was in the middle of his sentence when his younger brother interjected, and passed him a warning-like glance.

Guan Qing Bo laughed in a free and easy manner: "Ha ha, Qing Yue, a man must always be upright and honest about his ways, and must never hide it from the world; there's nothing shameful about this. Moreover, third young master is practically a part of our family, and therefore we can discuss any matter with him without worry."

Jun Mo Xie nodded in agreement: "That's right." Although he was a bit confused: [is it possible that these two brothers don't get along very well? Guan Qing Bo is practically trying to expose his own brother against his younger's wishes.... What's going on?]

"It's rather obvious third young master; my younger brother's confidant resides in Spirit Fog Lake, ah, this was the purpose of our..... business trip" Guan Qing Bo cleverly used the word 'Business' for the activities and services that a woman provides in a brothel.....[what are you? A flesh trader?]

"That's just what I thought." Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized: "The second brother is indeed a very romantic man, ha ha..... but then that's just in our nature ah."

Jun Mo Xie's mind was finally putting together the cause and effect, and he could finally tell why the timing of the assassination attempt was so precise even though the common-folk weren't normally aware of his whereabouts since his activities were regarded as a 'Jun family secret'. [The traitor is sitting right here in our midst!]

[But such a traitor can be very hard to guard against!]

There was no doubt about the identity of Guan Qing Yue's confidant.... It was obviously Lady Yue'er! He had obviously revealed Jun Mo Xie's whereabouts to her, which had consequently led to an attempt on his life!

As for Guan Qing Yue... he wasn't directly involved in this matter.....

Jun Mo Xie was confident about that!

Else he wouldn't have appeared so shocked and frightened upon seeing Jun Mo Xie safe and healthy.

[Damn it! We received you in kind and treat you as family, and then you just turn around and run your little mouth to that wh\*\*e?] Jun Mo Xie silently cursed within his heart, aware that this wasn't the right time for his revenge. In fact, it was rather obvious from Guan Qing Bo's body language that the man was completely unaware of his young brother's personal actions. Moreover, even his own father along with the rest of his family also seemed to be in the dark in regard with this matter, else they wouldn't have dared to attend this banquet at this time.

Youngsters can be very impulsive. If a beautiful woman begs and pleads a young man for a favor, the man is likely to promise without even bothering about his own family. Although such men

are often unable to understand the gravity of the consequences of their actions! [The ignorant is fearless!] Jun Mo Xie sighed.

[Although this isn't the time for me to extract my revenge, I still won't allow you to enjoy yourself here! So, Yue'er is your dream lover ah? Good! Great! Then let's talk about your lover, Yue'er! You're damn lucky I'm not killing you right now!]

"I bet that the two of you have less friends in the Spirit Fog Lake than me, ha ha ha, no disrespect intended. But I visit the Spirit Fog Lake very frequently." Jun Mo Xie smiled as he whispered: "Speaking of which, I can introduce you around the place."

"Ha ha, this place is your native; therefore you're obviously more familiar with it than we are." Guan Qing Bo smiled back.

"That's right! And I've even been the first one to open the flowery buds of several beauties there." Jun Mo Xie whispered as his face started to flaunt a very triumphant and obscene look: "For example, the Ni Chang Pavilion's Yue'er.... She's said to be the best beauty of the Spirit Fog Lake. This young master was kind enough to be her first customer."

"....."

Guan Qing Bo suddenly realized that something wasn't right! [He wasn't with us when we visited the Spirit Fog Lake earlier..... so how does he know that my brother's lover is named Yue'er?]

[Could he really be talking about the same girl?]

Guan Qing Yue's face suddenly became ashen! His eyes sharp eyes started shooting flames at Jun Mo Xie as he cleared his throat and stated in a slow and unhurried tone: "The third young master mustn't brag too much. Lady Yue'er is a pure and clean woman, so kindly do not insult her self-respect!"

"What? You don't believe me? And what self-respect does a prostitute have? Anyway, I can prove it." Jun Mo Xie's expression become even more proud, while his smile even more obscene: "Let



me tell you, Yue'er's buttock has a birth mark on it; three red color dots which are placed really close together. Her skin is really soft and tender; her smooth waist, fiery lips and full breasts kept me awake for several nights in bed. I would have given her a lot of money, but she told me that she loved me and wasn't just selling herself. I spent several days with her but then I left since I didn't know what she wanted....."

Jun Mo Xie's face was wearing a very perverted look on it, and his eyes were reveling in a color of recollection. He swallowed a mouthful of saliva down his throat, while his hands remained hanging in the air, almost as if he was still trying to feel Yue'er's soft and silky skin.....

"That's enough!" Guan Qing Yue suddenly burst out and roared as he stood up from his seat. He looked at Jun Mo Xie with blood-red eyes and started raining curses: "Jun Mo Xie! You bastard! You bastard! You shameless pig!"

Jun Mo Xie suddenly woke up with a start, and couldn't help trembling backwards while carrying a frightful look on his face: "You..... what are you saying?"

This sudden outburst had shocked everyone!

The Jun Family and the Guan Family weren't actually related, but still harbored a very similar sentiment. And since their relatives had come to visit, even Jun Zhan Tian had decided to personally attend this dinner. Guan Dong Liu's talks had been bringing a smile onto the old man's face, while Jun Wu Yi and Guan Ru Shan, who were sitting beside them would plug in a phrase or two every now and then, resulting in a burst of laughter.

No one had anticipated that the second son of the Guan Family would suddenly freak out at this time! Moreover, no one could have ever anticipated that he would actually start abusing the young master of the Jun Family in such a strong voice. It seemed from his reaction that Jun Mo Xie had killed his father and had

then taken his wife as a mistress.

Even a Spirit Xuan expert would have a difficult time in getting such a reaction from this gathering: Jun Zhan Tian, Jun Wu Yi, Guan Dong Liu, Guan Ru Shan and Guan Qing Han were being served food by Old Pang, and now all of them were blankly staring at each other.....

Forget about the reaction of others, Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi were both war veterans, and had seen several shocking incidents on the field. But this shocking uproar from this youngster had left them completely stunned!

The second son of the Guan family certainly had a voice powerful enough to ensure the safety of life in a critical juncture!

He looked at Jun Mo Xie as his trembling fingers slowly started reaching for his sword's hilt resting around his waist, almost as if he was ready to kill his instigator in that moment.

"You evil bastard! Are you mad?" Guan Dong Liu finally snapped out of the shock, and cursed out: He had never expected that his usually well-behaved son would suddenly start cursing a Jun. [You simply cannot insult a Jun even if the sky is falling down. And then you just hurled abuses at the only heir of the Jun Family?!]

Guan Dong Liu obviously didn't know just how provocative Jun Mo Xie's words had been for Guan Qing Yue!

Guan Qing Yue had fallen in love with Yue'er at first sight; a long time ago. But then he was forced to move away from her since he had to return to his native. Guan Qing Yue's silly pursuit of Yue'er had driven him mad; Yue'er had become the sole objective of his life, and the goddess of his heart! He absolutely couldn't stand anyone using profane words to describe her.

He simply couldn't hear one wrong word about her!

Then one day, Guan Qing Yue received a note from Yue'er with just two words written on it: [You're precious! ] From then on,

everything apart from Yue'er had completely disappeared from the eyes of this infatuated youngster.

His desire for Yue'er, which had somehow simmered down due to the distance which separated them, instantly intensified again. He sent a message to Yue'er upon finding out that he would be travelling to the Tian Xiang City again, hoping that it would bring her joy. Naturally, he was overjoyed at the thought of seeing her again!

When he told Yue'er that he was visiting the Jun family with his father and elder brother, a sad smile creased onto the woman's face, and she started narrating tales about the troubles that Jun Mo Xie had been causing for her lately. She expressed her desire to teach Jun Mo Xie a lesson, and Guan Qing Yue promised to help out without considering the consequences of his actions.

He ended up disclosing Jun Mo Xie's whereabouts to her, feeling immensely pleased with himself: [I'm finally getting a chance to do something for her!] Obviously, seeing Jun Mo Xie returning unharmed made his heart worried about Yue'er safety.....

[She wanted to set him straight, but Jun Mo Xie is perfectly unharmed..... did Yue'er's plan go wrong somewhere? If so, then how is she right now? He didn't hurt her right?]

With these thoughts taking control of his mind, he was obviously unable to put on a straight face upon seeing Jun Mo Xie since he was endlessly cursing his fate and actions. After, all, he was the one who had leaked Jun Mo Xie's whereabouts, so could he not feel guilty about the consequences of his actions?

However, he had never expected that his elder brother and Jun Mo Xie would 'hit it off' so quickly, and would actually start talking about their experiences; let alone that the first subject would be his beloved Yue'er! On top of that, Jun Mo Xie was actually gloating about being her first man!

This is the biggest insult for any man! Not to mention that the

woman he most cherish and loved, being... not only being treated as an object, but also being used for such shameless bragging.....

How could any man tolerate such words?

Guan Qing Yue's entire body was ready to explode with anger!

And shame, and disgrace!

## Chapter 172: Taking her back?

---

Guan Qing Yue was extremely reluctant to believe Jun Mo Xie, but Jun Mo Xie's vivid description of Yue'er along with the factual reference to her birth mark was enough to make the youngster lose his mind!

Guan Qing Yue stood there ignoring his father's words.... wheezing, and panting. He stretched out his finger, and pointed it at Jun Mo Xie as he barely found his words through his trembling lips: "Jun Mo Xie! I swear I'll kill you!"

The pain of his heart, the ache of his lungs and the shame on his manhood had brought tears to his eyes by the time he finished his sentence!

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help wondering: [you silly boy, you actually believed Yue'er?!]

This one sentence had transformed the atmosphere of the room to that of a cold winter's night! Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi's face had turned gloomy, but in the back drop of a surging murderous outburst!

Inside the Jun residence..... in front of Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi, someone was actually threatening to kill the only remaining heir of the Jun Family? If this ever got out, then the people of Tian Xiang Empire would laugh, regarding this as a fool's joke! But right now, this mockery was actually taking place inside their house.....

Everyone knew the importance of Jun Mo Xie's life.....

Guan Dong Liu, Guan Ru Shan, Guan Qing Bo, and even Guan Qing Han's faces suddenly turned pale!

"Bastard! Stop with your nonsense at once!" Guan Dong Liu simply couldn't stay still anymore, and hence he quickly got up and slapped his son across his face: "You will apologize to the Son of

Jun right now?!"

"I will not apologize to him! I haven't said anything wrong!" Guan Qing Yue didn't even flinch, and continued to stare brazenly at Jun Mo Xie; not even willing to wipe off the blood which had already started to stain the corner of his mouth: "Jun Mo Xie, as a man to a man.... I challenge you to a duel!"

"Duel? Why ah?" Jun Mo Xie looked extremely confused, and even managed to display a slight but bewildered smile on his face: "Second Guan Brother, I don't know where I offended you ah? This is the first time we're meeting! We're related by a bond of marriage..... you come here to the city of Tian Xiang, you eat with my family, you drink with my family, and we do everything to entertain you, but still you're cursing me in a room full of people, and now you're even challenging me to a duel?! You clearly wish to kill me! May I dare to ask the reason?"

"You..... you dare not ask the reason! How dare you ask the reason? If you're a real man, then you should accept my challenge!" Guan Qing Yue's eyes were still fixed provocatively at Jun Mo Xie.

"You damn thing! Didn't you hear what your father just said?" Guan Dong Liu's hand shot out again with the intention of slapping his son again as his anxious heart compelled him to take strict action in this situation; [this is getting out of hand today... Even if the Jun Family considers us to be relatives, would they still go easy on my second son for this insolence? Even the reasonable men of the Jun Family may not act very reasonably in this situation!]

[Does he know who Jun Mo Xie is? He is the only surviving heir of the Jun Family! Even though my second son has only threatened to kill him, but if someone had threatened to kill my son, then I would have sent that man to his death without giving him any chances of explaining the situation! If this is how I think, then how long will it be until the Old man Jun makes this decision?]

Guan Qing Yue was still staring at Jun Mo Xie with a stubborn

face and unblinking eyes, and no intention of dodging his father's second slap either. Guan Dong Liu's hand was in mid-air, ready to strike his son even harder this second time when a hand appeared out of nowhere and tightly clutched his hand, and held it in its place. Guan Dong Liu turned around to realize that it was Jun Wu Yi's hand.

Jun Wu Yi smiled gently as he stated in a casual manner: "Brother Guan, there must be reason behind your son's words. We must investigate and get to the bottom of this matter to determine if Mo Xie's unplaced words might have accidentally or unintentionally offended the second son of Guan. There can often be friction between youngsters, and as their elders, we must never hastily intervene to suppress them.... It will never bring any good. It could possibly lead to a grave misunderstanding, right?"

Jun Wu Yi's smiling face, and affectionate expression sent shivers down Guan Dong Liu's spine.

Although Jun Wu Yi's words had been gentle and mature, but there was still a faint hint of dominance in his body language, which was rather self-explanatory. Guan Dong Liu's head gradually turned downwards as he realized that responding in disagreement might result in the slaughter of his entire family.

"Third Uncle, please allow me to get to the bottom of this." Guan Qing Han quietly bowed her head in front of her second brother's eyes: "Kindy allow me to find out why Qing Yue acted in this manner today. Please allow me the authority to decide the course of action once I've determined which of my two brothers is at fault; Mo Xie, or Qing Yue, since I'm an older sister to the both of them!"

She had noticed that the three youngsters were huddled together only moments ago, and were whispering and laughing with obscene looks on their faces. She could sense this sudden rise in the temperature of their conversation could have been provoked by something not worth mentioning in front of the adults.

However, Guan Qing Yue was her brother in blood and she had always believed him to be very well-behaved. Therefore, she had already made up her mind that her own brother could never cause such trouble, and Jun Mo Xie must have provoked her brother beyond his limit of tolerance.

"I.....I.....I....." Guan Qing Yue opened his mouth but was unable to find his words this time. His face was clearly reflecting the anguish and distress of his heart.

He really couldn't speak up to disclose the truth behind the matter because he was well aware that Yue'er resided in the Spirit Fog Lake, a place where women were objects of pleasure. In spite of being his lover, she would be branded as a prostitute! Even stating that she is woman clean of such activities, and doesn't sell her body would be fruitless; prostitutes are prostitutes!

[If father and sister actually find out that I challenged the third young master of the Jun Family to a duel over such a woman, then wouldn't they react madly?]

[No matter how much Jun Mo Xie slanders her name, I cannot let anyone know the reason behind this dispute..... else the only thing that will come in play will be the perception that she is a prostitute!]

In reality, although he had met Yue'er in the worst of places for a noble woman to be, Guan Qing Yue had actually believed her words since he had never been able to investigate into her past! But regardless of that, he had taken her to be the woman of his heart! Guan Qing Yue had already made up his mind then, that he would love her to his last day, and would do everything in his power to protect her dignity.

"Second Brother Guan, I would also like to know how I offended you...? If I really offended you brother, then I'm willing to admit my mistake, and I'll apologize for it, but brother must first tell me my mistake!" Jun Mo Xie put on a sincere face, and tactically took



his chance to throw stones at a man who had already fallen down the well.

"Speak up!" Guan Qing Han saw the sincerity on Jun Mo Xie's face, and then looked up at her brother as a sadness took over her heart, [could my brother really have been the one at fault here?]

"Kindly allow me to explain this situation." Guan Qing Bo calmly analyzed the troublesome situation his younger brother had gotten himself into, and knew that if he didn't clearly explain this matter then things could end on a very calamitous note for his entire family.

Therefore with the elegant and refined narration abilities that he possessed, he narrated the story of Yue'er and Guan Qing Yue in a very romantic arrangement, depicting the two to be star-crossed lovers. He went on to narrate that the two lovers were forced to separate due to some unavoidable circumstances, post which Yue'er came to the Tian Xiang city, and became....uh.... a temporary singer and host at the Ni Chang pavilion.

As chance had it, Guan Qing Yue happened to be visiting the Tian Xiang City soon after, and the two lovers were reunited again by the will of fate, and coincidentally.... Jun Mo Xie had already been Yue'er.... Guest..... once by then.....

Although Guan Qing Bo's narration was subtle enough to create compassion about the touching love story of the two people, but the eyes of the Guan Dong Liu were already shooting flames at his younger son! In fact, Guan Dong Liu almost fainted with shame.

No one was stupid enough to misunderstand this matter. Everyone had already guessed the real reason behind this matter after listening to Guan Qing Bo's modified story. These two debauchees were publicly fighting over a prostitute! This was turning into a big mockery!

Everyone was contemptuously staring at Guan Qing Yue while silently cursing him in their hearts, [this boy falls in love with a

woman from a brothel, and ends up threatening the heir apparent of the Jun Family inside their own house? Is the second son of the Guan Family really that dumb?!

The entire Guan Family including Guan Dong Liu and Guan Qing Han had always looked down upon Jun Mo Xie owing to his immoral behavior, but now they were beginning to realize that their own family's son may not just be immoral, but also foolish.....

Guan Qing Han had trusted her brother's judgement, and had volunteered to investigate into this matter knowing that it would lead up to something involving immoral activities. But now she was left red-faced with anger..... she mercilessly stared at her brother, and then glanced fiercely glanced at Jun Mo Xie's face, and then retreated to one side. Jun Mo Xie was obviously quite angered by this: [Your brother is the reason behind this whole ruckus, and you're still glaring at me? Do you know that your brother is the main culprit behind the assassination attempt on me? I'm the real victim here.... I'm the one who's entitled to be angry in this case!]

"You evil bastard!" Guan Dong Liu's thundering roar echoed through the shaking hall: "You, you challenged your own relative.... Your own sister's brother-in-law.... to a duel of life and death over such a woman?" Guan Dong Liu's entire body was trembling with anger: "You're a disobedient son! You're an unworthy son! You you you... you're a disgrace to our family's name!"

Even though Guan Qing Yue was repenting and fearing his father's anger, but his mouth still opened to refuse his defeat as his stubborn brain ordered him to refute his father's words: "Yue'er is my beloved; she is not a vulgar woman, and nor is this man my sister's brother-in-law. We've come here to take my sister back, and once we do that, he'll no longer be associated to her, or us, in any way!"

"Shut up you insolent beast!" Guan Dong Liu hurriedly

intervened as his face turned pale with fright. But his words came too late.

Guan Qing Han raised her pale face to look at her father; her rosy lips trembled to speak her mind, but were unable to find any words to express them.

The Old man Jun and Jun Wu Yi were left speechless; even Jun Mo Xie was left surprised by this sudden change of events. A deadly silence engulfed the entire hall!

"This Old man is drunk; I must excuse myself." Grandfather Jun stood up and stated in a cold voice. His words were obviously quite strange; the dinner hadn't yet started, the dishes hadn't been tasted yet....in fact, even a single glass of wine hadn't been emptied at this time, and the Old man Jun had just stated that he was already intoxicated.

## Chapter 173: Intense infatuation

---

Guan Dong Liu's smile was accompanied by a thin trace of sweat on his cheeks: "Of course, please.....uh, take care of your health." Jun Zhan Tian snorted in reply, and sullenly walked away.

Guan Qing Han was only associated to the Jun Family in name, and not in reality; everyone was aware of this fact! Even though the Guan family had repeatedly risen the issue of taking her back, and the fact that Guan Qing Han had always refuted the proposal was one side of the matter, but their arrival in the city to take her back was a completely separate issue altogether!

The only way in which the Guan Family could take her away was by terminating the engagement between the two families. Both families were fully aware of this. But knowing this was one matter, and the Guan Family taking the initiative on raising the issue in-person was a completely different matter.

Initially, even though the Guan Family hadn't even raised the subject, Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi were both already willing to provide all necessary means to supplement their desire since it was for Qing Han's well-fare. However, raising this issue in front of the Jun Family was equivalent to slapping them in the face! Even though this slap was only a metaphoric one across the face of their prestige, but the Jun Family simply couldn't afford to lose their face in this regard!

The originally well-intended actions of both sides had turned into a very complicated situation at this moment.

Jun Wu Yi slowly said: "Let that be as it may." He pondered for a moment, and then continued: "We'll discuss Qing Han's situation later, but for now let's just concentrate on getting to the bottom of this issue between our two sons!"

Guan Dong Liu was already panicking; this was his first time as the head of the family that he was at a complete loss for words!

"Jun Mo Xie, since you've insulted my Yue'er, you're Guan Qing Yue's sworn enemy from this day on!" Guan Qing Yue contrariwise and audaciously sneered: "Are you really going to use the Jun Family's influence to keep my here forcefully? Yue'er was right about you! Your shameful behavior is the reason she wishes to take revenge against you! Since you were lucky to escape away earlier today, I will finish this task for my Yue'er! Accept the challenge of this young master, Jun Mo Xie!"

The youngster had actually revealed the entire situation, and had ended up doing it with a very confident and angry look on his face!

[Is this kid an idiot? ]

Perhaps newly born calves aren't exactly afraid of the tiger.....

In fact, this was probably due to the influence and power of the Guan Family in the eastern region! Guan Qing Yue had been raised like the son of an emperor since he was the second son of the Guan Family. Owing to this, even though he was in the Tian Xiang City at the moment, he still didn't think of the Jun Family as anything more than a slightly powerful and influential family at best since the Jun Family's Xuan Qi strength wasn't as high as the Guan Family's Xuan Qi strength. But no one had ever told him that the Guan Family kept their supremacy to the eastern region for a reason!

Therefore, his young mind was unable to see the true power of the Jun Family.... All he saw was an Old man nearing his grave, a 'good for nothing debauchee', and a cripple; in his eyes this entire family was useless!

He was obviously overlooking a very important point: Even though the Guan Family comprised of several advanced Xuan Qi experts, but unless their might became at par with the Blizzard Silver City, they would have no option but to adhere to the secular constraints of this world!

Even though the Jun Family wasn't as powerful as the Guan

Family in terms of the number of experts in the family, but they were the representatives of the highest military authority of the entire Empire! And they also had the power to mobilize the entire Empire's troops behind them!

Whether it's a super-family or secular one, power can dominate all! A high Xuan level martial artist may be able to kill thousands of people, but still may never be able to rule a country, or a city, or even a village!

But power can!

This was the biggest difference between the Guan Family and the Jun Family! It was also an insurmountable difference!

The fact was: The Guan Family's had a very strong reputation, but their reputation was only strong enough to control their own territory. Whatever attention they had been receiving outside their own region of control was simply because their daughter had been engaged into the Jun Family; it had nothing to do with their own authority!

"You were lucky to escape away earlier today?" Jun Wu Yi unhurriedly repeated this sentence in a stern voice while his eyebrows continued to rise with every word: "Second son of Guan, do you mean to imply that you played a part in the assassination attempt on Mo Xie's life earlier this evening?!" Jun Wu Yi's sharp eyes suddenly started exhibiting a surging murderous aura.

Jun Wu Yi had only been looking at this dispute as nominal falling out between two youngsters, and it wasn't even remotely enough for him to spoil his mood over, but this one sentence of Guan Qing Yue's had revealed something entirely different and was enough to flare his anger! This was the first time today that he was actually considering taking action against the youngster!

How could a young and inexperienced man like Guan Qing Yue resist the power and might of an iron-blooded war General?

"I did not!" Guan Qing Yue suddenly felt frost bites on his entire body, and cried out in dismay: "The assassination? What assassination? I was just mentioning it in reference! Why would I have wanted to kill him at a time when I didn't even know about all this? And if I did wish him dead, then why would I tell them anything? If this young master wanted him dead, then how could he have ever escaped alive?!"

Jun Wu Yi, Guan Dong Liu and Guan Ru Shan sighed in unison upon hearing his response.

[It's obvious that Guan Qing Yue is only a tool-for-use in Yue'er's eyes. She must have used him earlier when they met in the east, and would have continued to use him till she left for the Tian Xiang City. And now she's managed to use him to get the information about Jun Mo Xie's whereabouts, and then went about planning the assassination attempt on his life! ]

It was obvious to them all, that he had played no part in the attempt on Jun Mo Xie's life!

Guan Qing Bo and Guan Qing Han, being younger in age and less experienced in worldly matters, took a little longer to understand the whole story.....

Guan Dong Liu sighed again as his eyes reflected a color of despair. His second son had not only cursed Jun Mo Xie inside the Jun Family's mansion, but had also gone ahead to threaten his life! If this wasn't already hard enough to get away with, he had also revealed that he was the sole culprit behind the attempt on the young master Jun's life.....

It wasn't hard for the man to imagine the consequences his son would now have to face as a result. The thought that they had only arrived in the city a mere two days ago, and his son had already painted several targets on his back, made him extremely sad about his son's destiny!

"You idiot, you've been used by that cheap woman all along....."

Guan Dong Liu's voice seemed very weak: "Qing Yue, I never expected that someone as quick-witted as you would fall straight into such a lousy trap! Do you even realize that we are in the Tian Xiang City right now?" It didn't sound like he was scolding his son this time around.

"Of course I know!" Guan Qing Yue's face twitched in pain: "She used me when we met in the east.... more than once, but every time.... I knew! But you don't know how good I felt each time she used me! I was willing to let her use me! It made me happy!"

"It makes me really happy!" Guan Qing Yue was almost roaring out at this point while his usually handsome face was strangely curved into a twisted grim: "As long as she can use me, I'm someone valuable in her eyes! If I'm of no use to her, then what is my value? Aren't I just another guy from a powerful family?!"

"I allowed her to use me!" The youngster's stubborn voice boomed through the hall, and then the hall immediately went silent.

Two thin lines of tears streamed down from Guan Qing Yue's eyes.

Jun Mo Xie sighed. Whether in this life or the previous, Jun Mo Xie had always been very ruthless by nature. As an assassin by profession, it had been vital for him to give up certain things in life, including love since he couldn't afford to be tied down to anything. Love would make him vulnerable. This was an important aspect for him since he intended on climbing the peak of the world!

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had never known the meaning of love!

It's not that he couldn't, he just didn't! This was one feeling that the hitman Jun had never attempted to experience; ....affection!

[An emotional attachment has always been the hardest aspect to break away from; this has always been proved over and over again



in the past! ]

[How many peerless experts and heroes were thrown into a situation and ended up becoming soft since they experienced an attachment with someone? ]

[Emotional attachment must be a very hard thing to break away from since such people were either sunk by it, or acted logically and lived the rest of their lives... burdened with regret! ]

Everyone present could clearly feel the depth of his affection, his pain, the desperation and despair of his heart, the power of his sadness, and the haze of his future!

These feelings were especially beginning to take over Guan Qing Han. [If there was anyone for whom I was willing to do anything, then it was Mo You..... ]

[Mo You..... and still you left me.... ]

Jun Wu Yi could also understand the hopeless and helplessness of the youngster's anguish since he too had been longing for his lover's company for the last ten years; in fact, his anger had greatly reduced by now.

Jun Mo Xie's face on the other hand, reflected a faint hint of admiration! [Of course this guy's actions have caused me a lot of trouble, but the depth of his feelings are worthy of admiration. Although... his feelings have set him on a path of doom and no hope. ]

Yue'er was not just a woman unworthy of worship in his eyes, but also a mortal enemy. Even if she was willing to change, and was willing to accept Guan Qing Yue's love and reciprocate, Jun Mo Xie still couldn't allow his enemies to exist in this world!

[Sympathy is one thing, and respect is another. If I let these feelings wantonly govern my decisions even when they are endangering my life, then even a love as deep as the sea, or as high the sky is of no good! ]

[Guan Qing Yue's fate is doomed to be tragic! ]

[And this tragedy is inevitable; one way or the other! ]

Jun Mo Xie looked at Jun Wu Yi, and made a gesture. Jun Wu Yi stared blankly at his nephew since he had understood the meaning of this gesture, and then slowly lowered his gaze to the ground. Jun Wu Yi's heart sympathized with this youngster since he had faced something similar in his own life, but if this young man's infatuation was to turn into a threat for the Jun Family's safety, then it was obviously an entirely different matter!

"If that's the truth behind this matter, then this young master really admires Brother Qing Yue! Our earlier rambling shall just be considered as a joke between us youngsters, and mustn't cause any further issues for our elders....." Jun Mo Xie showed a rare sight of his generosity.

The emotions of people, no matter how pedantic or silly, had always been an object of admiration for Jun Mo Xie; simply because he had never had the courage to climb this particular mountain. But just because Jun Mo Xie admired this aspect of human nature didn't mean that he wouldn't take the logical action when needed. He'd even kill if he needed to; he still wouldn't turn soft... not even a little bit.

## Chapter 174: Xue Hun forcefully approaches her!

---

However, there were a few problems; the two families were associated by engagement... Guan Qing Han's sentiments also needed to be taken into account. Also, the overall bond and alliance of the two families needed to be considered. Was Guan Qing Yue's punishment more important than the fate of the two families?

The overall situation would naturally take priority!

Guan Qing Han was naturally overjoyed since the situation had not only been resolved but had also reached the best possible conclusion under the circumstances. Therefore, she bowed her head in front of her father and Jun Wu Yi for interceding on her brother's part in negligence to reflect that she was embarrassed by her brother's actions. However, she was very surprised by the Jun Mo Xie's actions; she had been expecting that her brother-in-law would have instigated her brother, and was even more surprised upon hearing that Jun Mo Xie had decided to generously ignore the situation even though Guan Qing Yue had threatened to kill him!

She had never imagined that her brother-in-law would be capable of being so pleasant and mature in the face of such a situation; Jun Mo Xie's reputation had suddenly improved in her eyes!

"Thank you for your generosity Third young master." Guan Dong Liu sounded very sincere and grateful. Being the head of his family, he knew that this time would be best suited to eliminate any anger which might still be lingering in their hearts!

Then, he turned around and thundered: "You two little beasts will return to your rooms right now! And pray that I don't return to see your faces soon, because when I do come to your room, I will rip your skin away!"

Jun Wu Yi's eyes reflected his desire for words, but he kept his mouth shut. The two Guan youngsters bowed their head, and left. Jun Mo Xie clearly saw Guan Qing Bo's face as he left the hall, and he also noticed the faint trace of a 'smiling' expression on it....

Guan Qing Han hesitated for a few moments, but then called two servants and asked them to serve dinner to her brothers in their rooms. Regardless of their faults, they were still her brothers....

"Brother Guan!" Jun Wu Yi raised his gaze and fixed his cold pair of eyes on Guan Dong Liu, but his eyes weren't completely able to conceal the faint pain he felt within his heart: "I wouldn't like to comment on the incident which just took place between the young generation of our families this time, but if anything like this ever happens again, then please don't blame me if I don't take the friendship between our families into account before taking action!"

"Brother Jun, please be assured that such a disgraceful incident will never occur again; and if it ever does, then I will personally chop off the offender's head!"

Guan Dong Liu's face was clearly expressing the seriousness of his heart since he knew that the Jun Family had already been more than accommodating today. However, he was still ashamed to know that his own second son had done something as disgraceful as forging a relationship with a prostitute, and was well aware that it could easily turn into a major scandal in front of the world.

"I trust you brother, and I presume that you trust me as well." Jun Wu Yi's fingers were thoughtfully stroking the blanket on his legs, as he slowly continued: "I think that we must put the earlier incident to rest here itself, but when I comes to Qing Han, I hope the my brother will be honest, and will inform me of the truth behind withdrawing this engagement!"

Guan Dong Liu was about to speak up, but found himself interrupted by Jun Wu Yi.

Jun Wu Yi shook his head slightly as he calmly stated: "You and I

are both aware that the two families were extremely overjoyed at the prospect of this marriage, and firmly believed it as match destined by the heavens. However, Mo You's untimely death changed everything drastically, and the Jun Family agreed to break off the engagement since it was in Qing Han's best interests, because we too wished to see her happy and prosperous. However, since Qing Han insisted on keeping the engagement, the Jun Family agreed to accommodate her temporarily in order to console her grief. But this arrangement was only temporary since this engagement was to be withdrawn sooner or later; both the families were clear on this particular matter. We were all just waiting until the fortunate timing of finding a suitable match for Qing Han!"

"Therefore, your arrival in the City to take her back seems a bit strange to us." Jun Wu Yi squeezed his lips while rigid lines creased across his face: "What happened? If you still recognize my family as friends, then please tell us. If you don't wish to state the reason, then I'll allow you to take your daughter back! But I'll break off all ties between our families; forever!"

It was obvious from Jun Wu Yi's words that he was in no mood to show any leniency in this matter!

Guan Dong Liu stared at Jun Wu Yi dumbstruck for a long while, and then sighed while his backbone slumped as he started with his explanation in a low tone: "Brother Jun, this matter..... in reality..... I can't tell you the truth..... but I just want you to know that I'm very grateful for your generosity and support....."

"Jun Wu Yi stands beside you; so then what are you afraid of?" Jun Wu Yi's face was as still as a wall: "Is there a force in this world which is capable of taking away our daughter.... against the wishes of the Guan and Jun Family, even when we stand united?!"

"This is the girl's own doing." Guan Dong Liu sighed as he helplessly glimpsed at Guan Qing Han.

"Ah? Daddy, how could this be my own doing?" Guan Qing Han's

face flushed with anger as she stared at her father furiously: [how can you even say such a thing? How can you say such a thing to your own daughter? You're trying to imply that I've been willfully attracting interests from the opposite gender?! Humph! Don't pin the blame of my two brothers' actions on me! ]

"Qing Han, do you remember when you set out to visit Mo You's cenotaph to pay your respects.... about half a year ago?" Guan Dong Liu sighed again: "There, you must have met a green cloaked youngster, right?"

"Is this about him?" She suddenly remembered the green-robed youngster who had tagged along with her on that entire journey back and forth. First the youngster had behaved very strangely and had later disappeared. However, she could still clearly remember the last words that youngster had uttered before leaving: [I don't care who you are, not do I care about your identity or status, but one day you will be my woman! Ha ha..... ]

The arrogant laughter of that youngster started ringing in Guan Qing Han's ears, almost as if he was still laughing in her face, and her facial expression suddenly transformed to that of extreme disgust: "That man was a scoundrel!"

"Whether that person was a scoundrel or not, he carries the name of 'Li'." Guan Dong Liu forced a bitter smile: "He is the supreme master Li Jue Tian's only son... Li Teng Yun! He's also the sole heir to the Tian Nan Xue Hun manor!"

This sentence exploded with the intensity of a bomb. The hall went silent in a second; proverbially speaking, even the sound of a dropping needle could have been heard very clearly at this point!

Li Jue Tian was one of the greatest experts alive, and was widely recognized as the second strongest individual in the entire world; even the Solitary Falcon was no match for him. Many people even believed that if it weren't for Yun Bei Chen's level nine Xuan beast companion, even the great Yun Bei Chen wouldn't be able to

surpass Li Jue Tian on his own singular merit!

"Li Teng Yun made his inquiries about Qing Han's identity, and immediately sent a note to the Guan Family, stating that if we didn't send her to him.... then he will destroy the Guan Family ....and the Jun Family!" Guan Dong Liu's bleak manner of speech was clearly reflecting his humility and his state of utter helplessness.

The Tian Nan Xue Hun manor was almost as powerful as the Silver Blizzard City!

[I've changed the name of the Blizzard Silver City to Silver Blizzard City... it sounds cooler in my opinion.

Ps: it was rather unclear at first (they had left it a mystery; intentionally I believe), but it's a family or a group of families.]

These two mysterious forces were considered almost at par with each other in the present time.... Silver Blizzard City and the Tian Nan Xue Hun manor!

This style of action had always been the trademark of Li Jue Tian and the Xue Hun manor! They would never regard the opinions of those weaker than them, and would take whatever they needed.... by force if needed!

Guan Qing Han's face went deadly pale with horror in an instant!

[That scoundrel turned out to be Li Teng Yun! The sole heir and master of the Xue Hun manor! Perhaps he's not, but he's definitely being backed by Li Jue Tian and the Xue Hun manor! Forget about the Guan and the Jun family, even the entire Tian Xiang Empire cannot afford to provoke such a powerful force..... ]

[So that's..... ]

"Ha ha, how old is Li Jue Tian at the moment? If I have it right, then he must be around a hundred years old now, right? Even then, he's still actually functional enough to produce a twenty-year-old son?" Jun Mo Xie's face revealed a ridiculous smile:

"Therefore, he must have been at least around eighty when he fathered this son of his? I really admire that old chap, ah, I really, really admire him! I've decided, Li Jue Tian is my idol!....."

Jun Mo Xie hadn't even arrived in this world half-a-year ago.....

"Mo Xie, you find this issue funny?" Jun Wu Yi raised his eyebrows, somewhat disappointed with his nephew. This matter related to the survival of two major families, and Jun Mo Xie was laughing like an ignorant fool!

"Funny, very funny!" Jun Mo Xie turned around to look at Guan Dong Liu and sneered: "I find Li Jue Tian and Xue Hun manor's marriage proposal ridiculous, but I find you even more so than them! Forget about considering Qing Han's reputation and integrity, you are actually considering your own daughter as a commodity for trade? Or, an entity for exchange?"

"Trifling with the mere innocence and a lifetime's happiness of a mere woman in exchange for the survival and a prosperous future of the thousands of your family's followers.... Very cost effective, right?" Jun Mo Xie laughed in mockery.

"I don't want to do this either! Qing Han is my own daughter, and I only have one daughter! Even I don't wish to do this!" Guan Dong Liu stared angrily at Jun Mo Xie: "But this matter regards the life of more than just a thousand followers! Do you think I could justify sacrificing the life of thousands and thousands of people..... just to keep my daughter safe for a little while? You don't know the power and might of the Xue Hun manor!"

"If you really sentence her for a lifetime of fornication and insults, then would you actually be able to survive with even slightest peace of mind?! Would you actually be able to thrive with this shame? Would you really be able to raise your head knowing that the cost of your prosperity is being paid by your own daughter... each and every day of her life... for as long as she may live?"



Jun Mo Xie finally couldn't hold it back anymore; he just felt that this entire situation was absolutely ridiculous: "Has it even crossed your mind that the cost of your family's survival isn't hers' to pay? What right do you have to trade her life and happiness for your safety and prosperity? I genuinely don't know if you even have one strand of shame left in your soul anymore!"

"People have been dying ever since the beginning of time; that's all they do; they die! They are born, and then they all eventually die! They come and then they go; so what's this big fuss about? But wouldn't a survival of shame murder the peace of your heart? Do you really think that all the burning incense sticks on your grave would be able to deliver any peace of mind to you in the heaven?"

Jun Mo Xie spat out a mouthful of saliva: "And what kind of offspring would be burning these incense sticks in your memory? Only a bunch of men and woman who were brought up in the shamelessness of such a heinous crime; people with no conscience! Would you actually resort to taking such an irresponsible decision just so you could physically live-on in this world? What kind of a shitty idea is this?!"

"Mo Xie!" Jun Wu Yi shouted out: "Don't be so presumptuous!" Although he had shouted out to stop Jun Mo Xie's cursing, he made no efforts to hide the appreciation his eyes exhibited in an equally loud but silent manner! Although his nephew had taken things a little too far, but the reason for his objection had won over a lot of appreciation from Jun Wu Yi!

[What is a man? This is! ]

[A man's shameless behavior in peaceful times isn't enough to define a man, but when it comes to a matter of principle.... A real man is one who is willing to break before he bends! ]

[A man's survival and glory must never rely on the sale and trade of the weak; especially women! This is a matter of principle! This isn't just a matter of principle, but also honor! It's better to die

with honor, than to live with regret! ]

[This is what a real man does! ]

# Chapter 175: No compromise

---

Guan Dong Liu's eyes roved as he closed them: "How can I ever feel at ease... she is my own family's daughter. But this is happening to her, and if my family had the power to protect her, then I would have spared no effort..... but since my family doesn't have the ability to defend her, then sacrificing them would be useless!"

"Nonsense! You aren't even trying, you're not even trying to make an effort, so then how do you know that you don't have the ability?! You're simply sacrificing your daughter's happiness; you still call yourself a man? You're a coward!" Jun Mo Xie retorted furiously: "You're just afraid of your enemy's strength. Your daughter isn't as strong as your family's forces, but you're still using her as a shield? You're just using her as an excuse to conceal your cowardice!"

Guan Dong Liu's facial expression was still as calm as ever: "If I have to sacrifice one person for the sake of the entire family, then I consider it to be a worthy price. If I could sacrifice my life to save my family... then I'll look forward to that day. But if Li Jue Tian spares no effort to take my daughter, and if I bet my whole family's fate on her protection..... and lose, then where's the rationality in it? What I can choose, is to defend my family and the friendship between our two families. And therefore, for the sake of this friendship, and that of the Jun Family's safety, I request that you stay out of it!"

It must be recognized that Guan Dong Liu understood his own limitations very well even though he was the master of the Guan Family and had thousands of people under his command. And even when faced with this tough situation, he was still unwilling to abandon his friendship with the Jun Family, which too was worthy of admiration. However, even though his actions were worthy of praise, but the praise still wouldn't be justified in the

context of this situation!

"The master of the Guan Family speaks about his daughter's fate; my sister-in-law's fate! But now she belongs to the Jun Family; she's not the Guan Family's daughter anymore! Alive, she belongs to the Jun Family; once dead, even her ghost belongs to the Jun Family! She's a married woman, and no longer has any relationship with your family now! You do not have the right to decide her fate!" Jun Mo Xie's voice resounded throughout the hall.

He smiled grimly as he continued to despise: "As for your family, what's the point of such a useless family that can't even protect its own women? You should simply put a knife to your throats and be done with it!"

Guan Qing Han was wanted by the Xue Hun Manor, and if their demand wasn't met then they would inevitably destroy the Jun and the Guan Family! No one had ever dared to go against the command of the Xue Hun manor!

Therefore, Guan Dong Liu's predicament, choice and helplessness were more than understandable!

Many-a-men would have made the same choice in this situation since the relationship between women and their parents was as such in this era. If two families were capable of surviving at the cost of one woman's happiness, then most people in this world would pick the same choice as Guan Dong Liu, or at least wouldn't contradict his choice.

After all, she was just a woman! It didn't matter if she was his own daughter.....

However, Jun Mo Xie could never allow himself to live with this shame!

[If the men of my family can't even protect a woman, then what's the point of having such men? What is the meaning of such a humiliating existence?] For Jun Mo Xie, this wasn't a question of

Qing Han's reputation or integrity, or even survival. This was a question of his life's principles!

Perhaps this decision was foolish, and perhaps this decision would eventually lead to the destruction of the Guan and the Jun family, but for Jun Mo Xie..... this matter had no room for compromise!

Even if this decision costed the lives of tens of millions of people around the Empire, Jun Mo Xie still wouldn't alter his decision!

[Life or death? What's the meaning of it? ]

[We all breathe so someone can light incense sticks in our memory! ]

[If I exchange the innocence of a woman for my survival, then I might as well be dead. Whether she's innocent or not, this will be a matter of grave shame! ]

And real men cannot stand shame!

And now this was all happening in front of Jun Mo Xie!

Even if this wasn't happening in front of him, and Jun Mo Xie simply found out that such a thing had happened somewhere, then he would probably set out to punish those who had bullied a woman from a less influential family into marrying their son, but only after he had first destroyed the family who had sent their daughter away under these circumstances!

[Such people aren't worthy of living in this world! What is the meaning of life if one's dignity is lost? You don't value the dignity of another's life? Then I must first destroy yours! Then I'll let you live on! I'll make you live like your mother's ass! ]

Hitman Jun's ideology was undoubtedly very strange for some and obviously differed from the rest of the world's opinion, therefore it was naturally very difficult to gain the approval from the majority of people, such as.....

"Third master Jun! You will bring a disaster towards the Jun Family! Have you even considered how much ruin this impulsive decision of yours' will bring to the Jun Family? And the Jun Family is your own Family!" Guan Dong Liu spoke out sternly in a fit of anger.

"I'm the only heir to the Jun Family! The Jun Family's future is in my hands. If the Jun Family's destruction is to come at my hands, then I don't mind letting it happen a little early. My decision is the decision of the Jun Family!" Jun Mo Xie sharply glared back at Guan Dong Liu as he stated these words slowly enough for the man to understand them very, very clearly: "Master of the Guan Family, the Jun Family disagrees to withdraw the engagement! Your family has no rights or relation to Qing Han, so you may please stay out of this!"

"If the power of the Jun Family cannot protect her, then before my Family is destroyed, I will personally kill her! A death is far better than the existence of such shame!!"

Jun Mo Xie's stern and stubborn words suddenly stirred up a storm of emotions in Qing Han's heart.

He was ready to let thousands and thousands die for one person! None of it mattered to him! He was simply unwilling to look at the big picture here, not even for a second!

She belonged to the Jun Family, in her life, and then in her death; no matter the circumstances, she would always belong to the Jun Family!

This was just in Jun Mo Xie's nature, whether in this life or the previous, he would have done the same! Even if this matter wasn't concerned with Qing Han, he would have still done the same thing! Even if he didn't know the woman, he would have still done the same thing!

Tears came streaming down from Qing Han's eyes.

She had already submitted herself to a life of despair! Xue Hun Manor was one the strongest factions in this world, even the most talented and powerful individual or factions wouldn't dare to stand up against their commands! Had Guan Dong Liu insisted on it, even Jun Wu Yi wouldn't have been able to stop this. After all, Qing Han was the Guan Family's daughter, and once the engagement was withdrawn, the Jun Family would have no control over her life or future!

Qing Han had already decided to make the sacrifice for her Family's sake, and was preparing herself to commit suicide after reaching the Xue Hun Manor!

But she had never expected that Jun Mo Xie would actually decide to take a stand for her at this moment! She had always looked down upon her brother-in-law, and had been really mistreating him for the past several months.... She had never even imaged that her insolent brother-in-law would really be capable of saying something like this!

[He is even willing to accept the blame for the destruction of our two families... even in the face of this tragic fate! He's even willing to risk his own life, and that of his entire family! ]

It was obvious to Qing Han from Jun Mo Xie's firm and resolute voice that he was actually ready to sacrifice everything before bending to the will of such an enemy!

Qing Han almost wanted to burst into tears at this moment! Even her own family, and her own father had abandoned her in this moment of need and dark, but this man had risen up and had decided to risk everything for her in her moment of extreme desperation!

Jun Mo Xie's slim stature, and his average shoulders..... suddenly became the most reliable structure in this world for her! He became the only support she had in this downpour and heavy wind; the only one she could hold on to!

She had been very moved when brother had opted for the same decision when it came to Yue'er, but it suddenly seemed to her at this moment....as if he was nothing compared to Jun Mo Xie! After all, Guan Qing Yue had arrived in the Tian Xiang city in order to persuade the Jun Family to withdraw her engagement, and allow her to remarry. However, Jun Mo Xie hadn't even hesitated in picking the choice of defending her against all odds!

One man was ready to betray his own sister's trust for the sake of his own survival, and was ready to subject her to a drifting life with no purpose. This man had also ignored his own principles and morals for the sake of a vulgar woman! While the other had fiercely risen to protect her in the face of extreme difficulty!

It wasn't even correct to say their names in the same breath, and suddenly they were like to extremes in her eyes.... Like heaven and earth; there was absolutely no comparison!

Guan Qing Han's face turned red with embarrassment as this thought crossed her mind, out of sheer guilt over the actions of her past: [could it be..... earlier, he was only....is this the real 'him'? Was he just pretending to be someone else all this time.....why....? ]

[Otherwise, why would he act out so emotionally today? He didn't even show one sign of hesitation! He is ready to risk everything and fight the entire world for me?! ]

[God, why didn't I see the good in him? ]

A moment of fear, a moment of despair, a moment of excitement, and a moment of emotion.... Qing Han stood rooted to her spot with a blank expression on her face as a violent storm continued to churn inside her heart.

She was completely unaware that Jun Mo Xie wasn't doing this for her sake, but for the sake of his own principles! Jun Mo Xie would never change his principle; he would never allow anyone to hurt his pride!



He would readily and madly go to war with the entire world than drag out an ignoble existence!

In Hitman Jun's mind, life and death was nothing more than mere fantasy; an illusion... nothing more. But principles and pride, they were factors of immortality!

And he would never compromise on them!

Jun Mo Xie's words and fierce attitude frightened Guan Dong Liu for a moment, but then he immediately thought of the last decade of the Jun Family's existence, and couldn't help feeling anxious again. Therefore, he looked towards Jun Wu Yi: "Brother Jun, the young master Jun is still naive and speaks out of pride, but may not have considered the consequences of such actions under the influence of his youthful vigor. The Jun Family is far more powerful than mine, but when compared to the Xue Hun Manor....."

Jun Wu Yi smiled faintly, and flatly replied with a calm expression on his face: "Mo Xie is right; Qing Han is my Family's daughter-in-law. As the head of the Jun Family, I agree with him; Mo Xie's decision is the Jun Family's decision!"

Even though Jun Wu Yi was sitting in his wheelchair, but the strength and resolve of his voice coupled with the power of his wide shoulders was enough to send the heavens shaking!

Jun Mo Xie might have spoken his words under the influence of his youthful vigor, but Jun Wu Yi, being a veteran generalissimo was well aware of the endless struggle that his family would have to face against the might of the Xue Hun Manor!

Guan Dong Liu stared at him for a long while. Suddenly a deep sense of guilt arose from the bottom of his heart! He had given up his daughter; however the young and the old of the Jun Family had risen to take a stand for her without any hesitation!

He was unaware of the rivalry between the Jun Family and the

Silver Blizzard City; he was unaware that these two factions were mortal enemies! And now, these men were even willing to face the Xue Hun Manor for Qing Han's sake!

The two most powerful forces of the continent were standing against the lone Jun Family! One enemy in the north and the other in the south; and Jun Family was right in the middle!

[Xue Hun is probably in the south, and the Silver Blizzard City is in the north.... Most likely. They haven't made this very clear, probably due to the secretive nature of these two factions.]

But Jun Mo Xie, and Jun Wu Yi were still smiling, indifferent to it all; still holding their heads proudly high up in the sky!

## Chapter 176: Different positions

---

Qing Han was no longer able to hold her tears!

The previous anger and despair of her heart had suddenly transformed to gratitude over the course of these last few sentences.

Even though Qing Han could understand the reason behind her father's choice, her heart had still felt a surging pain inside. In fact, she even considered not making this sacrifice for two such hateful families!

But now, Qing Han's thoughts had suddenly taken a flip, and she simply couldn't allow these people to die.

Her father's idea of forcing her to marry into the Xue Hun Manor for the sake of the two family's safety was a logical decision, however, after witnessing Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi's decision to make a stand, she simply couldn't think of being selfish anymore!

A feeling of infinite warmth and affection arose in Qing Han's heart as she looked up at Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi: [they are willing to stand up for me... even at the cost of their own lives? What could be better than ensuring their happiness and safety?! ]

[I cannot live a life of humiliation and ruin, but if I commit suicide and the Xue Hun Manor vents out their anger on the Guan and the Jun Family.... I can't think of committing a greater sin! ]

[How can I bring about the ruin of two such heroic men, and such a great family? How can I allow so many innocent lives to be sacrificed, trampled, and slaughtered to save myself from a life of humiliation? Would I ever be able to forgive myself? Would my heart ever be at peace?! ]

"Third Uncle, Father.... I have something to say." Guan Qing Han quickly restored a cold expression on her face, and even managed to look slightly magnificent.

"Please speak your mind; Uncle is here to support you." Jun Wu Yi looked at her face, but his heart suddenly felt the signs of something ominous coming from her.

Qing Han quietly raised her head to look at the pouring rain outside the dining hall, and finally made up her mind. Then, she faced Jun Wu Yi, and bent down to her knees, and then slowly lowered her head to the ground in salute.

She looked up at Jun Wu Yi and spoke calmly: "Qing Han didn't interrupt the original decision because Qing Han is the reason behind this problem. Even being the eldest daughter of the Family, Qing Han has only bore the Jun Family misfortune since the day I stepped in through the door, and even today I bear only misfortune; such is my incompetence. I have brought such a major disaster to the door of the families, but the three of you, Uncle, Father and, brother-in-law Jun Mo Xie, need no longer dispute over this matter." Qing Han had clearly decided to frame her decision very tactically: "Even though Mo You and I were married, but only so in name and not in reality. However, I stayed in the Jun Family for such a long time because of my stubbornness, which was wrong to being with. And therefore, Uncle, please forgive me. Qing Han wants....."

Qing Han coldly bit her lower lip as she slowly said the rest of her sentence: "....to withdraw the engagement!"

She was unable to hold her head up; it seemed as if she had already exhausted her bodily strength, "Qing Han would have wanted to face the grandfather and apologize to him in person, but I cannot find the courage to seek his presence anymore. I would like to leave with my father tomorrow, and return to the Guan Family; I pray that Uncle supports my decision. Guan Qing Han and the Jun Family no longer have any relation!"

Jun Wu Yi almost jumped out of his wheelchair! [Qing Han's words clearly mean that she only considers herself to be her parent's daughter, and doesn't admit to being the Jun Family's

daughter-in-law! What does this mean? ]

Guan Dong Liu was aghast to hear his daughter's words, but dismay apart.... he could now clearly understand that 'women are complicated'. Regardless of the Jun Family, her bitter decision was the best option for Guan Family! Two silent tears dropped from his eye at this thought.

Jun Mo Xie quietly looked at Qing Han's cool and calm face, only to see that there were absolutely no traces of any emotion on its surface. However her small palms, which were so tightly clutched that even her joints seemed to have gone pale, were enough to understand her true meaning!

"Qing Han, this decision is not a trivial one; it relates to your life and future. Therefore, I advise that you think carefully! You will be the Jun Family's daughter-in-law for as long as you chose to be, and no one will ever force you against your wishes as long as even one Jun breathes air!" Jun Wu Yi's cold eyes didn't have the courage to look at Qing Han, and were instead focused on his own two 'Sky Xuan strong' hands!

"I do not need to reconsider, I have already made up my mind; I hope Uncle complies!" Qing Han smiled sadly: "In fact, Mo You and I had only met three times in our entire lives, but I was obstinately persisting on going about things in the wrong way....."

Qing Han turned her head to look at her father, but only to see her father turning his head away. As a father, he couldn't dare to look into his daughter's eyes at this moment! He was afraid that he might turn soft, and may end up opening his mouth to stop her instead!

Qing Han smiled gently as she switched the topic: "Time will never turn; the past is gone." In this era, marriages were considered a verbal agreement, and now even a marriage document wouldn't be able to oust her decision. If she chose, then she would no longer have any relation with the Jun Family.

Jun Mo Xie had already understood very clearly that she was only acting under the impulse of her emotions. As he pondered a little more, he couldn't help doubting Guan Dong Liu more and more: [could it be that he had some hidden intention behind forging this bond in the first place? ]

"Qing Han, Uncle knows that you're sacrificing yourself to save us from harm! But this matter has reached too far now, and it's already too late for it. Even if you terminated this marriage, and announce that you have no relationship with the Jun Family, it will still be too late since I've already found out about this matter now, and I will not ignore it.... either way."

Jun Wu Yi pondered for a little while, and then suddenly smiled: "Qing Han, Uncle is now a cripple. But you mustn't forget that I was once a soldier! I'm still a soldier, and I will always be a soldier. And soldiers are born of blood and iron!"

"And as my daughter-in-law, you must understand that my iron-blood will not allow me to go back on my decision in this regard! Especially when this is happening to you.... my own daughter-in-law!" Jun Wu Yi sharply raised his eyebrows: "As far as the topic of rescinding the marriage is concerned, I will not stop you, but when it comes to the issue surrounding the Xue Hun Manor, I'm the one in control of the Jun Family! Even if you decline to be my Family's daughter, you'll still always be the Jun Family's daughter, and we won't allow anyone to tarnish your reputation!"

"That's right! Well said Uncle!" Jun Mo Xie spoke up coldly: "Even if you're acting out of kindness, you need not worry about the Jun Family; however, we will not allow you to rescind this marriage right now! Even if you decide to lift this marriage now, we cannot allow you to since it will be a matter of extreme shame and dishonor for the Jun Family!" Jun Mo Xie stared at her: "Don't be so self-righteous! Why do you have to act like a woman now? You have no experience of such matters!"

Though Jun Mo Xie had been cold and insolent, his words still

stirred a storm of emotions in Qing Han's heart.

Jun Wu Yi called out to a servant, and whispered a few words in his ear. That servant quickly ran out of the hall, and returned in a few moments with a small wooden box, and handed it over to Jun Wu Yi.

Jun Wu Yi raised the wooden box and said: "Niece Qing Han, this box contains a document which was written by my father proclaiming that you're a 'daughter-in-law' to the Jun Family. Once the matter with the Xue Hun Manor has been resolved, then at that time, as the master of the Jun Family, I will announce to the world that: You, Qing Han, and my family have no relation anymore. But if you deny this relation before that time comes, then we will never agree to it!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled as he looked at the wooden box, and leisurely stated: "I believe that this wooden box can only have two possible fates. First, I will personally open it, and set you free. Second, it will be buried and turned to ash along with our dead bodies. But either way, I will never allow you to go to the Xue Hun Manor."

Even though Jun Mo Xie had stated his words with a smile on his face, but the expression in his voice was enough to express his determination very clearly!

Guan Qing Han's eyes blurred with tears upon seeing that calm and gentle smile on Jun Mo Xie's face. His eyes suddenly started seeming like the sword which could protect the world from any danger... and suddenly the disturbance of her heart started to settle.

Guan Dong Liu felt as if he was sitting on pins and needles. Even though his daughter's 'morally righteous' choice had left him infinitely sad, but he was still pleased to know that she was ready to make this sacrifice for his family. However, now this situation had suddenly gone beyond any point of persuasion. He sighed and stomped his foot heavily: "Brother Jun, you, you, what are you

doing?! Your choice not only fails to live up to Qing Han's heart, it doesn't live up to the expectations of the country, and your family or your people... what are you saying?"

"I can understand your problem brother, and I can understand Qing Han's heart." Jun Wu Yi smiled understandingly: "Your decision was wise, and I believe that even the Emperor would have made the same choice as you in this matter. No one will ever say that you're wrong, but everyone has a different position."

"In fact, such matters have always been the biggest point of conflict and contradiction between the military and the polity. Polity seeks peace, and military seeks otherwise; this can never be resolved. If the polity seeks war then the country gets divided. However, if the military seeks peace then the country is not far from ruin!"

"And if our Jun Family, as the country's leading military force, compromises on this matter, then wouldn't we become the laughing stock of the entire world? It's not that we don't want peace, but in this regard, we can't dare to compromise!"

Guan Dong Liu fiercely cursed himself within his own head: [I was forgetting this! I walked into a madman's house and wedded my daughter, and was still silly enough to be happy about it?! These damn beasts! If this matter becomes public then there will be no harm to the Jun Family, but the Guan Family will be worse than ruined! ]

"Despite being the master of your family, I will not blame you for the end result of this matter; no matter which way it goes. However, Qing Han will remain in the Jun Family for now." Jun Wu Yi smiled. Even though his voice was low, it was obvious that he wasn't to be refuted.

Guan Dong Liu sighed but remained silent for a while. Then, he finally got up, and starting striding out. Since they weren't bending, he'd have to make a lot of arrangements; after all, this



disaster would be harder to take for the Guan Family!

"On the topic of your second son and that woman, I have another idea. I request Brother Guan to not intervene in that matter either." Guan Dong Liu had been intending on going straight to the Spirit Fog Lake's Ni Chang pavilion to seek his revenge on Yue'er. However, he immediately dispelled the idea after listening to Jun Wu Yi's words.

He reached the doorway, and stopped: "Li Jia only gave us two months' time, so please Brother Jun.... resolve this matter as early as possible."

Jun Wu Yi's eyes flashed from one point to the other: "Thank you brother. You must go back and prepare of it." Guan Dong Liu stomped his feet as he left.

## Chapter 177: Xuan Core comes out

---

"Well, alright. You should also go and get some rest." Jun Wu Yi glanced over at Jun Mo Xie and Qing Han: "Don't worry, the sky isn't falling down; and even if does, your Uncle will be here to look after you!"

Qing Han was still whimpering, while Jun Mo Xie's eyes were flickering with excitement. Suddenly, his lips bent into a crooked smile, almost as if he had been struck by a moment of enlightenment. He slowly glanced towards Jun Wu Yi and said: "I'm going out!". Jun Mo Xie quickly turned around before either of them could react, and disappeared into the storm outside.

The rain was still pouring heavily outside, and wasn't showing any signs of stopping any time soon.

The sky had become completely dark.

Even though Jun Wu Yi's facial expression was calm and collected, his eyes had deepened under the effect of his thoughts.

Qing Han was quietly standing in the dining hall, while her cold and motionless face was still staring at the rain outside the hall. The rain drops would splash onto the ground and scatter, and some would even spray onto her body and face, bringing a strangely cold sensation along with them.....

The Li Mansion

"There was an attempt on Jun Mo Xie's life today?" Li You Ran was wearing a mask, but the gleam in his eyes was enough to express his interest in the incident: "Is he dead?"

"No." A thin and lean black-robed man answered: "A mysterious person appeared at the key moment, and killed several of the assassins. This man was far too powerful, and the assassins were forced to retreat."

"Do you know who was behind this attempt on Jun Mo Xie's

life?" Li You Ran didn't care much about Jun Mo Xie's life in reality since he considered Jun Mo Xie to be of no significance in his own merit. However, he was well aware that the youngster's life was important to the Jun Family and its followers.

"That is not clear." The black-robed man lowered his head.

"Then go and find out!" Li You Ran's cold shout sent the man shivering with fear. Li You Ran's appearance had been degrading ever since that accident, which is why he had been staying indoors ever since. His temper had started becoming more and more unpredictable with each passing day, which had been becoming increasingly scary for his servants.

Li You Ran walked into his bedroom, pressed his hand against the wall, and pushed. The sound of 'rolling' machinery was heard, and then the wall gave-way to a door. An array of wide stone steps seemed to be leading into a basement chamber, and then these stairs started leading back upwards, making it seem as if there was another entrance to this chamber.

Li You Ran slowly walked down and then up these stairs, and soon started hearing the sound of the rain getting more intense, almost as if he was nearing the surface again. Soon enough, Li You Ran's figure leisurely appeared in a small but secret courtyard.

"Young Li!" There were about ten people in the courtyard, all dressing in white robes. The first one to speak up was a middle aged man, around forty years in age judging by his appearance. His tall, burly body and his sharp eyes exuded a sense of indifference, almost as if he considered himself to be above the rest. A delicate thirty-year old woman was standing behind him, while the remaining men and women were seated on his sides. These people had helped Li You Ran in silencing someone a while ago, and had since become his acquaintances.

"Brother!" Li You Ran respectfully greeted: "There's no news of the Xuan Core so far, but I've spread out a vast network of people,

therefore we shouldn't miss out on any detail. If there's any new news about this treasure, then we'll surely be the first ones to know about it! But there's a rumor that we have to take note of... the words has it that Silver Blizzard City has arrived in the Tian Xiang City, along with several other powers. It is being said that there are at least four Supreme Xuan experts in the Tian Xiang City at the moment, along with countless Sky Xuan experts, which could destabilize the situation completely. Once there's any news on the Xuan Core, these parties will start fighting against each other..... and we may not have a very bright chance of emerging as champions.....!"

"We may not be as strong as some other parties involved, but given that we have Six Sky Xuan experts, and four peak Earth Xuan experts, I believe that if we were able to get our hands on it before the others, then we could get away with it at full speed, in which case even Yun Bei Chen himself won't be able to stop us from getting away." The middle-aged man replied categorically: "You mustn't worry about that, Young Li."

"Yes, everything depends on you, Brother." Li You Ran smiled and said: "I've always felt that the Jade Coral's explosion was a bit strange, and therefore before that time comes, could you please look into the Magnificent Jewel Hall and the other related people?"

A thin man smiled and said: "Young Brother, who are these 'other related people' you speak of? My Xuan Qi may not be as high as some of my six brothers, but when it comes to tracking people, I'm confident that even my brothers cannot surpass me!" This man was the leanest amongst the ten, but was also their most agile tracker, and was capable of gathering almost any information in the most discrete of ways.

"There are two more people involved in addition to the Magnificent Jewel Hall; Tang Yuan and Jun Mo Xie. Both of them are inside the Jun mansion at the moment; Tang Yuan is injured at the moment, therefore you must only concentrate on Jun Mo Xie

for now.... I have a very strange feeling about that kid." Even Li You Ran's mask was unable to conceal his thoughtful expression: "However, both these places are usually very heavily guarded, and so you must be very careful; you mustn't take their security lightly, brother."

"Don't worry, this man is somehow always able to track down the things even I can't. He's a true master of the art." The middle-aged man smiled as he fiercely stared at his companion.

The woman standing behind the middle-aged man laughed: "Still unable to bear the memories of the past?"

The man hummed twice and then said: "What's so difficult to bear about it? I was misled by false information, and ended up charging right in... that's the only reason I ended up getting fooled that one time, else I would have....."

The entire gathering broke into laughter; even Li You Ran couldn't help flashing a smile, and then he said: "In case even you weren't able to track it down, then I believe that no one could have. I have full confidence in you, brother."

The entire room suddenly went quite as a small bell suddenly started ringing in the corner of the room.

Li You Ran's face immediately changed colors, [but... this bell is connected to the main room, it wouldn't have rung unless there was something extremely urgent! What is happening? This is completely unpredictable..... Is there something my people were unable to handle on their own ah?]

"Brothers, please remain seated for some more time while I go back out and check.... although I don't expect any activity in this pouring rain." Li You Ran stated in a rather normal tone.

"There's no need to be so formal young brother, we understand if you have other business to care of." The middle-aged man replied with a smile.

Li You Ran leisurely went out, and then immediately darted back in; he hastily spoke up before anyone was able to say anything: "That Xuan Core's Qi has been picked up in the western part of the city; the message is accurate and several high-level Xuan experts are reported to be gathering in the western part of the city as we speak!"

These people had always known Li You Ran to be a very calm and elegant persona; this was the first time that they were witnessing him act and talk in such a hasty manner in the five years of their acquaintance with him!

The ten people simultaneously jumped onto their feet! The middle-aged man waved his hand: "All out; to the west!" the ten silhouettes quickly fled and scuttled away into the wind and the rain. Their blue and brown Xuan Qi lights flashed as they sped through the distance which separated them from their destination, and soon their flickering lights disappeared into the endless rain.

Li You Ran just stood gazing at the misty sky, unable to fathom the reason behind the sadness oppressing his heart.

### The Western part of the City

The young master Jun was sitting inside a small, broken and battered house, with a mask concealed his face. A Xuan Core lay quietly placed on the small table in front of him.

This obviously wasn't the peak level nine Xuan Core, but the level six Xuan Core which Jun Wu Yi had procured for him earlier. Although it was a rare and precious object, however it wasn't beyond the reach of a family such as his'.

The Hitman Jun's earlier words and pledge to defend the dignity and honor of the Jun Family might have been spoken under the effect of an impulse, but his survival instincts were clearly warning him of the impending danger. Even though the Hitman Jun was quite bold and audacious, but faced with the power and might of a force such as the Xue Hun Manor, even his 'brazen' heart couldn't

help but beat like a drum.

After all, the Xue Hun Manor's Li Jue Tian was widely acknowledged to be the second most powerful man alive, and to feel reassured in one's own strength when faced with an enemy of such power would be absolutely foolish!

But considering all this when faced with this imminent threat was meaningless, and therefore, rather than pondering over such meaningless specifics, Jun Mo Xie was busy trying to find a solution to the problem at hand!

Jun Mo Xie was well aware that provoking the fury of either the Silver Blizzard City or the Xue Hun Manor would be bad enough for him; but at the moment, he was faced with them both at the same time!

It was a matter of life and death now!

Jun Mo Xie simply couldn't tolerate the shame of the situation attributing to his hot-blooded nature; however it was obvious that he was no match for these two forces. Since [I can't take them head-on, I must trick them! However, how do I come with the right plan?]

He was well aware that he couldn't handle either of the two sides using the ordinary means, and even though he had contemplated several strategies, the overall picture was still a bit vague since he hadn't been able to come with a feasible plan of action yet.....

During his research of the Xuan Core, Jun Mo Xie had come to realize that the 'art of unlocking the heaven's fortune' was capable of replicating the Xuan Core's Qi! Obviously, Jun Mo Xie had been devising this strategy ever since.

Jun Mo Xie had conducted several experiments after getting his hands on the level six Xuan Core, and had finally come to realize: No one would be able to identify the true level of the Xuan Core once its outer appearance had been transformed, and it would only

seem like a mysterious Xuan Core. Even its internal Qi would be of no use since the 'art of unlocking the heaven's fortune' would render that means of detection useless.

Jun Mo Xie had been waiting for the situation to stabilize a bit, and until Tang Yuan's health was restored to carry out his plan, and would then use this method to gain profits. However, the matter surrounding the Xue Hun Manor had immediately changed his mind.

The Hitman Jun had decided to start his program early!

He had no time to tarry; none at all!

He needed to add more to his Grandfather and Uncle's strength if they were to build a solid defense for their protection!

If the Silver Blizzard City was alone powerful enough to scourge the Jun Family for ten years, while toying around with Jun Wu Yi at the same time, then the added pressure from the Xue Hun Manor would make life impossible for them!



## Chapter 178: A quartet movement

---

It was impossible to estimate the number of high level Xuan level experts who had ventured into the Tian Xiang City at present. If fact, given that two of the 'eight great masters' were rumored to be inside the city at the moment, it was even difficult to estimate the number of Spirit Xuan experts competing for this treasure!

Although this storm was dormant at the moment, but there was bound to be mass chaos in the city once the Xuan Core appeared in public. Jun Mo Xie was planning on using this confusion to his benefit! Or perhaps, he was planning on using this situation to weaken the hostile parties!

Since the Hitman Jun had already made up his mind, he closed his eyes and emptied his mind. Then, he extended his hand towards the Xuan Core, and launched the Hongjun Pagoda into action the moment he felt the cold texture of the Xuan Core. A strong Aura rushed out through Jun Mo Xie's meridians all of a sudden, and slowly trickled into the Xuan Core.

Jun Mo Xie's Xuan Qi wasn't enough to create such a huge Qi Field (Aura), which is why he needed the Hongjun Pagoda's assistance!

A dark-golden light emerged out of the originally dark Xuan Core, and lit up the entire room. The strong Aura coming from the Xuan Core instantly spread out in all directions, and started scattering far beyond the domain of the small cabin.

"What could be giving rise to such a strong Aura?" three white-haired old men, who had been sitting cross-legged inside the Magnificent Jewel Hall, suddenly opened their eyes as the man in the middle blurted out loud.

"The peak level nine Xuan Core!" the three men spoke up at the same time, and then glanced over at each other to confirm their suspicions.

"Let's go!" the three elders simultaneously ordered, and then charged out without any hesitation. They smashed their way straight through the roof of the Magnificent Jewel hall; fortunately for the structure of the building, they were already seated in the highest chamber of the building.

Thunder rolls and lightening filled the sky as the rain continued to pour down!

The third elder closed his eyes to sense this Aura better, and then shouted out: "The Xuan Core is in the Western part of the City!" the other two elderly men immediately diverted their eyes towards the west, and gazed at the rainstorm which was shrouding the western part of the Tian Xiang City.

"Let's go!" their three figures flew out towards their target, and faded away into the thundering sky, leaving a big hole in the building's roof below them, not even paying attention to sobbing of the structure as rain started to pour into it through that massive hole.....

Another four figures appeared into that chamber as soon as they left; three men and woman. The woman was the first to speak up: "He he, this looks like something fun; how can we miss out on it? Let's catch up to them."

It was obvious from the manner in which she took after them that she wasn't afraid of the fray which was about to unfold. The three men looked at each, smiled, and then rushed after her. Two of these men were flying close to each other; however the third had intentionally placed himself at a distance for some reason.

Six men were stationed outside the residence hosting the foreign royal visitors in the southern part of the city. A tall, thin, and creased-faced man appeared in the door way, and these six men immediately arranged themselves in a line. These six men were all Sky Xuan experts, but this thin man hadn't exposed his Xuan Qi level yet; however it was evident that his Xuan Qi level was higher

than his subordinates!

He whispered in a low tone: "Let's go!"

The seven men readied themselves to march!

At the same time, the door to a chamber on the western part of this residence slowly opened with a creaking sound, and a voice slowly said as its owner smiled: "Brother Shi, isn't this what you've been waiting for? Don't you wish to go and capture it?!"

The speaker was a white-robed man, who had made his way towards this chamber through the pouring rain; it seemed that he wasn't even afraid of getting his robes drenched in the pouring rain. His walk up to this chamber through the beautiful garden outside was so elegant, that it seemed as if a flower had grown feet and was walking around the garden.

This man was the Yu Tang Empire's imperial teacher, Fei Meng Chen!

"Fei Meng Chen!" a wide, white-robed man smiled and said: "No one is stopping you. You can go as long as you're afraid of death, that is!"

Fei Meng Chen looked skywards and laughed: "Brother Shi, others might see you as one of the 'Eight Great Masters', but it should be made clear that I'm still in charge here!"

The man Fei Meng Chen was speaking with was the actually one of the 'Eight Great Masters', Shen Ci Empire's Shi Chang Xiao!

Shi Chang Xiao smiled as he stood up, and then stepped out into the rain. He sprung up into the air, and stationed himself mid-air; he half turned towards the west, and then quickly flew out. Fei Meng Chen laughed, and then chased after him. The others silently galloped behind these two men in full speed!

The Solitary Falcon was laughing while gulping down a mouthful of alcohol: "Amazing wine! Really amazing wine!". He and the prince had gathered in Old Song's tavern to witness a wine-making

contest, and had decided to stay back due to the sudden and heavy downpour of rain.

He wasn't in his preferred company of men.

However he still wasn't feeling uncomfortable, after all, he was being accompanied by some of the best wines ever known to him. Not to mention that he was a wanderer, and had gotten accustomed to 'going with the flow', so naturally he was enjoying drinking the wine in the isolated company of his mind!

They had already finished the two jars that Jun Mo Xie had brought with him, and were now making their way through Old Song's wine. The wine which had initially intoxicated them with its mere scent was now feeling harsh to their throats in the contrast of Jun Mo Xie's brew; almost like a fly in the ointment!

Even though the prince, Yang Huai Nong's house wasn't far from there, he still didn't wish to leave until the wine had been finished since it would mean that the Solitary Falcon would get to have it all by himself. [I can't allow him to have all this wine for himself.... even if he's one of the 'Eight Great Masters' of this world..... ]

On the other hand, Old Song couldn't help feeling endlessly gloomy as he continued to watch these two men enjoying themselves. [This is my master's wine, and I was preparing to use it for research.... And now these people have actually finished it all..... ]

However, the most depressing and annoying thing apart from the fact that they had emptied his master's wine was the fact that they were now busy finishing the wine that he had begrudgingly parted away with; and moreover, were drinking it with a resentful look on their faces.....

One man was the only brother to the Emperor of an Empire, and the other was one of the strongest individuals alive..... but these two men were nothing more than scoundrels in his eyes at the moment!

The Solitary Falcon's eyes suddenly opened up widely as he sprang to his feet, surprising the two men in the process. Then he lifted his body upwards, and laughed: "I've finally found a good opportunity!" Then, his body flashed out without even saying 'goodbye', and practically disappeared into the rain outside.

Being a Sky Xuan expert, Song Shang was also able to sense that turbulent Aura which was fusing with this surging storm; Song Shang's flickering eyes were clearly expressing his desire to get to his feet, but he simply sighed, bowed his head, raised his glass of wine and poured it down his throat in condolence.

Given his strength, participating in the competition for this Xuan Core would only bear him only one result: death!

Song Shang had instantly given up on the idea of competing for the Xuan Core after sensing the terrifying strength of the Solitary Falcon, which had spread out in the air at the time of his departure, since he had realized that his involvement in this fight would only be a waste of his effort.

"What just happened?" the Prince looked confused by the strange departure of the Solitary Falcon, and couldn't help asking.

"It seems that the widely-rumored peak level Nine Xuan Core has appeared." Song Shang answered in a heavy tone: "Only a peak level nine Xuan Core is capable of emitting this kind of an Aura! This definitely isn't a fake."

"The peak level nine Xuan Core!" the prince gasped. "The Solitary Falcon simply disappeared upon sensing it! Does it mean that he's also competing for it?"

"He has taken off in that direction, however he may not be interested in the Xuan Core, and may just be looking for some good opponents. Given his nature, I don't think that he's much concerned with materialistic objects." Song Shang hung his head in despair: "Given the intensity of this competition, I can't even do anything in this fight."

The Royal Highness could clearly sense the sadness in his friend's voice.

Song Shang had been practicing desperately all his life, but now that such a wonderful battle was taking place in such close proximity, he wasn't even qualified to take part in it.....

Movement was taking place in all four directions simultaneously.

The three figures of the third, the sixth, and the ninth elder of the Silver Blizzard City were charging from the northern end of the city!

The ten associates of the Li You Ran were charging from the eastern part of the city!

Shi Chang Xiao and Fei Meng Chen were leading a squadron of six or seven Sky Xuan experts at blistering pace, and were practically tearing their way through the curtains of rain, from the southern part of the city!

In the west, the Solitary Falcon was speeding through the rain like a hawk, while his black robes were making a 'hissing' sound as he cut through the fierce winds at the speed of lightening!

And all of them had one target in mind; the small cabin..... the source of this Xuan Core's Aura!

One could clearly see several earthen and blue colored lights flashing through the sky of the Tian Xiang; all of them approaching that small cabin at ghostly speeds.

"It is really stupid to bring out a Xuan Core in such a rainy weather; does this guy even know that this rainy weather will cause a violation with the Aura field of the Xuan Core? .....Could this be a trap instead?" even though the three elders from the Silver Blizzard City were travelling at an extremely fast pace, the third elder was still able to speak without the slightest of problems.

"At least the rumors surrounding the Xuan Core are true! This

Aura can only be coming out of a level nine Xuan Core; this simply cannot be a fake! As for the chance of this being a trap, I really can't say." The sixth elder's face was clearly reflecting his confidence.

"We sensed the Aura of a 'super-being' in this city, and but he hasn't appeared yet; could this be his doing?" the ninth elder's voice was clearly reflecting a lingering trace of fear in it. His heart was still shuddering at the thought of facing this mysterious power!

"Third Brother, I'm still confused by the power of that being, and I don't know if we are capable of getting away from....."

The ninth elder hadn't yet finished his sentence when he found himself interrupted by the third elder: "Don't say that again!" the third elder's voice clearly reflected his anxiety.

"Yes; yes." The ninth elder immediately acknowledged his 'slip of tongue'.

"Given our aspirations, now isn't the right time to fail." The three men immediately accelerated their pace as the third elder finished speaking this sentence.

Suddenly, the three elders shifted their gaze southwards; the third elder raised his eyebrows and said: "This Xuan Core is attracting a lot of competition! Even Shi Chang Xiao and Fei Meng Chen are here for it! You two go and block their path, while I'll go and get my hands on this Xuan Core!"

## Chapter 179: A Quick Escalation

---

"There's movement in the east as well, however the strength....." The Sixth Elder looked at the Blue colored lights which were flying towards their target from the east, and coldly stated: "The strongest is only a Sky Xuan. Well, these guys are a bit overconfident..... They shouldn't be any trouble for you Third brother, so we'll just head out south."

The third elder nodded gently as his two companions spread out their arms, and burst out southwards like flying meteors.

The Sixth and the Ninth Elders' body cut past the storm and towards their new target. The Sixth Elder opened his mouth and shouted in a resonating voice: "Silver Blizzard City's greetings to Brother Shi Chang Xiao and Fei Meng Chen!"

Shi Chang Xiao's figure suddenly came to a halt mid-air, and he started staring blankly at the two Elders from the Silver Blizzard City: "It's you guys!"

Fei Meng Chen also stopped and then broke into laughter: "It's a small world, and one can never be sure who you bump into these days. I would have never thought that we'd run into the Third, the Sixth and the Ninth Elder of the Silver Blizzard City here; It's nice to meet you though!"

He realized that since only two of the three Elders had come to greet them, the third one must have gone ahead to seize the Xuan Core, which is why he chose his words carefully and hoped that Shi Chang Xiao would understand the meaning.

Although winning the Xuan Core was already being estimated to be fairly difficult task, but allowing the Silver Blizzard City's people to take it away this easily was out of question. These three Elders were all inside the Spirit Xuan realm, which is why beating one or maybe even two was possible for Shi Chang Xiao, however defeating all three wasn't possible for even a man with his skill.



Shi Chang Xiao smiled as he nodded, but his Spirit Xuan eyes remained motionlessly glued to the two men obstructing his path as he calmly stated: "Step aside!"

"Where are you planning on going brother?" the Ninth Elder smiled: "Tell us; After all, we're old friends, and if you two gentlemen have some urgent business then we could always help you out if you wish it."

"You think you can stop me?" Shi Chang Xiao sneered: "Even Han Feng Xue wouldn't dare to muster such courage!"

Although they were all Spirit Xuan experts, but Shi Chang Xiao was one of the 'Eight Great Masters', which meant that his strength had already reached the pinnacle of the Spirit Xuan realm, whereas even the strongest of these three Silver Blizzard City's elders had only managed to reach the peak of Spirit Xuan realm's foundation. And this gap was quite large! Naturally, Shi Chang Xiao was more than qualified to say these words since needn't fear them as much. But as far as Fei Meng Chen and others were concerned, they were quite terrified of being caught up in the middle of their battle.

"Elder Brother Shi, please don't say such a thing. We haven't even seen each other in ages, and now that we've met on such a sultry night and with such amazing autumn drizzling to make this evening even better.... We must definitely sit down together and have a cup of that special Silver Blizzard City tea that I've brought with me." The Sixth Elder continued to talk nonsense; in fact, he had even managed to refer to the downpour of rain as 'drizzling', and the thundering dark sky as 'sultry'; on top of that, he had even managed to invite his 'dear friends' over for a cup of tea!

"Ha ha....." Shi Chang Xiao broke into laughter. His laughter continued to get louder and louder, almost to the point where it started replacing the deafening thunderbolts!

Another bolt of lightning pierced through the sky and the light

from it lit up the sky, but only to reveal the deathly-pale expression on everyone's faces!

Shi Chang Xiao had burst into action at the same time as that lightening had stricken, and the palms of his two hands were almost upon the chests of the Sixth and the Ninth elder now!

"You're truly worth of being called a 'Great Master' brother!" the Sixth and the Ninth elder shouted back at the same time as they dodged his attack.

Even though these two men were Spirit Xuan experts, they were both well aware that they wouldn't be able to defeat the man they were confronted with, and would only be able to make a temporary stand against him at best. Moreover, Fei Meng Chen was waiting on the sidelines for the right opportunity. The Sixth and the Ninth elder simply couldn't dare to neglect the gravity of the situation, and hence they immediately mustered their entire Xuan Qi and moved into action!

They shot out at the same time, but found their attacks repelled and their bodies flying backwards through the falling rain; 'Cling' 'Cling', and suddenly two silver colored blades lit up the sky.

It was the Flying Snow Swords!

A wall of the snow encased the entire sky ahead as the two men blocked their paths once again!

Shi Chang Xiao roared out in excitement: "It seems that you two are catching up to Han Feng Xue after all; your expertise with that sword is reaching your master's expertise!" They attacked with their swords, but he was able to dodge them with ease.

"It's like the Elder Brother said; I'm catching up with Han Feng Xue's skills". The Sixth Elder's body started moving erratically in the sky as he mustered his entire Xuan Qi and burst out.

"Then don't hold back!" Shi Chang Xiao roared as he moved forward furiously. Even though the Six Elder had stated that he

wasn't far behind Han Feng Xue now, but he was still far behind his superior in reality. Therefore, he was obviously in no position to match a man like Shi Chang Xiao with ease. Their bodies started spinning around in the air like bats in the midnight sky, making for a marvelous spectacle.

Suddenly, Shi Chang Xiao's figure came to an abrupt halt in the mid-air. Suddenly, several silhouettes started disintegrating from his body, painting a very strange and baffling scene in the sky, almost as if several Shi Chang Xiao were standing in a line in the middle of the sky... at the same time!

Whoosh!

A strange piercing sound was issued as all these figures brazenly came crashing down on that snow wall, and smashed it into pieces!

Simultaneously, Fei Meng Chen charged past the Sixth Elder at a lightning fast pace, and rushed towards that small cabin!

His timing was simply perfect!

The Sixth and the Ninth Elder were left with just two options in that moment: One, to stop the charging Fei Meng Chen, or two, to stop the deadly incoming strike of Shi Chang Xiao's from killing them! There was no way in which they could have obstructed Fei Meng Chen while blocking this deadly strike from Shi Chang Xiao!

Jun Mo Xie was sitting alone in that small cabin with closed eyes as he continued to pour more Aura into the Xuan Core. He suddenly opened his eyes, and burst out of the cabin; a big hole split open in the roof of that cabin the moment he escaped out of it, which was followed by another loud 'bang', and a white-haired elderly man rushed out after him, while the cabin shook a bit and then eventually collapsed to the ground.

The Third Elder looked that Xuan Core in Jun Mo Xie's hands, and then smiled kindly as he stated in a calm voice: "Sire, an innocent man like yourself mustn't get into trouble on account of

such a cherished item; what you're carrying is called a Xuan Core, and if you hand it over to this Old man, then I will defend your life in return. Your life for this Xuan Core, Sire; It's a fair deal!"

"Fair, really? This Xuan Core and my life are both my own, and I can protect them both! Anyway, since several distinguished experts such as yourself have made their way to the Tian Xiang City for this Xuan Core, I don't think that you'd be able defend me from them all!" Jun Mo Xie's face was beginning to get tense under the effect of his thoughts: [how come only one? Where have all those other damned idiots gone off to die?! Don't tell me that I exposed this Xuan Core at the wrong spot! ]

His mouth was rambling incoherently at the moment; after all, he was faced with a Spirit Xuan expert at the moment!

[I'm sure that if he decides to act, then this Xuan Core will be in his hands and not mine..... ]

[Is this guy really going to get away with this so easily? Why are those other people so damn slow? ]

The Young Master Jun knew that there was no room for mistake here since it was rather obvious that this man wouldn't stop at anything to procure this Xuan Core. Moreover, the strength of this man was far superior than his own, which was rather obvious from his speed of arrival and the collapsing house in the background!

Even if he was somehow able to dodge the man's attack, he was sure that he wouldn't be able retain the Xuan Core; therefore, if he acted rashly at this time, then this entire fiasco would end up bringing more harm than good!

"This Old man is the Third Elder of the Silver Blizzard City; I believe that has some credibility attached to it. As long as you hand over this Xuan Core to me, I promise that you will exit this place safely!" The Third Elder stepped forwards as he smiled again.

Being a Spirit Xuan expert, the Third Elder had already identified

that this masked man's Xuan Qi wasn't very high, and he would be able to grab hold of this man even before the man could take one step away!

However.....

Power isn't the only thing one can rely on; intelligence and wits are also often very resourceful! Jun Mo Xie was well aware that fighting against a Spirit Xuan would be tantamount to courting death!

Therefore Jun Mo Xie needed to buy himself some time; enough for the other competitors to show up!

Suddenly a green colored light flashed out of Jun Mo Xie's body, and slowly started turning darker and darker as it enveloped his entire body, making it seem as if a giant, dazzling human-shaped emerald was standing in the middle of the rainy street.

"Jade Xuan Peak? Ha ha, that won't be sufficient ah." The Third Elder shook his head as he stated in a sorry tone. He had already made up his mind to take the Xuan Core by force since the man in front was only a Jade Xuan expert; such people would normally be regarded as good quality experts in the eyes of normal people, but in the eyes of a Spirit Xuan expert, such people were nothing more than a 'joke'!

Or perhaps even ants!

He was a bit careful earlier since he was completely unaware of the man's strength; but now, he was planning on simply taking the Xuan Core by force!

The Third Elder was absolutely certain that he'd be able to grab the Xuan Core the moment he shot out, and was sure that the man in front wouldn't even be able to destroy the Xuan Core in time, if he chose to in order to protect himself!

But at this very moment, he discovered something extremely strange!

And this particular thing was strange enough to seize his footsteps in their stead!

The green-colored light encompassing Jun Mo Xie's body had suddenly disappeared, and had been replaced by a faint yellow light, which immediately after transformed into a khaki colored light in the blink of an eye! Then, this light slowly transformed into a deep brown colored light, and started dazzling in the rain in a very elegant and magnificent manner!

[How's this possible? ]

[How can someone's Xuan Qi realm change from Jade Xuan peak to Earth Xuan Peak like this? ]

The Third Elder had travelled extensively over the course of his lifespan, but this was the first time that he was witnessing something so weird and mysterious! [What is this guy's true Xuan Qi level? ]

# Chapter 180: Spirit Xuan experts gather

---

Xuan Qi stabilizes tends to stabilize a while after reaching a certain realm, and the Xuan Qi color never changes again unless the person advances again. Even after one advances, though one can suppress their strength, one still can't issue the Xuan color of a lower realm.

Such as, even if a Sky Xuan expert lowers his strength in combat, he still cannot issue the Xuan color of the Earth Xuan realm or lower!

This was a simple and universally known fact!

There was only one way to change the color of one's Xuan Qi: An advance in Xuan level!

And this process was irreversible!

Going by that principle, this person had somehow managed to advance from Jade Xuan peak to Earth Xuan, and then to its mid-level mark, and then to its peak in a matter of moments.

A normal, sane man would never believe that such a thing could ever be possible!

However, irrespective of the fact that whether anyone would believe it or not, the Third Elder had just witness this miracle with his own eyes!

Even though he had seen the changing colors very clearly, the Third Elder's subconscious couldn't help prompting him into rubbing his eyes. [This isn't some strange damn dream, right? ]

[But it doesn't matter even if he's an Earth Xuan Peak, does it? This guy still can't take away the Xuan Core from me.... I'm a Spirit Xuan!] Third Elder comforted himself and then shouted out: "Boy, don't play tricks on me; they are useless, just take the Xuan Core....."

He had intended on saying 'Bring the Xuan Core here', but had ended up saying 'take' instead, under the effect of the shocking scene he witnessed as he was speaking his sentence!

[Holy Grandmother.... Has this world gone crazy? Or are my old eyes betraying me? ]

He rubbed his eyes wildly as the Xuan Color of the black-robed man instantly disappeared and was momentarily replaced by a faint blue light!

This blue light slowly started becoming deeper and transformed into a sky blue color soon after, and then eventually turned azure!

[A Sky Xuan Peak?! ]

The Third Elder almost fell down to the ground under the impulse of the shock!

[I didn't sense a fart-worth's Xuan Qi in this boy earlier, and now he's suddenly advanced to the peak of Sky Xuan? How this even possible?! ]

[What's going on! This guy isn't some kind of a ghost, is he? ]

Just as these thoughts were revolving around the Third Elder's head, another astonishing thing happened: The azure color coming out the man's body suddenly disappeared, but this time no other color emerged to replace it.

The emergence of no other color surprised the Third Elder even more; [has this man actually entered into the Spirit Xuan realm now?] He was trying to investigate the uncertainty behind the man's Xuan color when he noticed that the impatience in the man's eyes had slowly calmed down, and had then gradually transformed from indifference to mercy, and had then started turning into disdain....

The Third Elder stood there as the expression in Jun Mo Xie's eyes, concealed behind his mask started taking a very arrogant shade, almost as if he was master of all life and death in this world;



cold and ruthless!

These were the eyes of a Spirit Xuan expert! But far sharper and far more arrogant than the Solitary Falcon and even the Silver Blizzard City's master, Han Feng Xue!

[My God! Ah! My God! ]The Third Elder was unable to tell head or tail of this matter, [what in the world is happening here? ]

At this point, Fei Meng Chen also arrived overhead in the sky, and descended downwards in manner so that he seemed equally potent of taking the Xuan Core. The three people were now stationed at equal distances from each other, almost like they were the three corners of an equilateral triangle!

By the virtue of being the Yu Tang Empire's Imperial Teacher, Fei Meng Chen had always been cautious by nature. Having seen the Third Elder and the black-robed man seemingly poised for a battle, he couldn't help but wonder: [Is this black-robed man actually capable of competing against a Spirit Xuan expert? Is he so powerful that even Silver Blizzard City's Third Elder won't dare to act rashly against him? ]

As a result, the men just stood there motionlessly with no man willing to make the first move.

If Fei Meng Chen hadn't arrived in this moment, then the Third Elder would have ended up making a move; even if he would do so reluctantly. After all, even if the other man was actually a Spirit Xuan, it would only make this difficult for him... at best!

And then, he always had a chance of getting away with the Xuan Core!

After all, if the man was a fake, then he would effectively be nothing more than an ant in front of him!

But now that Fei Meng Chen had arrived as well, he wouldn't dare to attack first!

The Third Elder shot a glance towards Fei Meng Chen! [Even he

can't see through this guy; If I had attacked him earlier, it would surely have been difficult to guess the winner..... but now this situation has completely changed-this is just plain bad luck....and awkward. ]

Fei Meng Chen's concerns were of similar nature, however his thoughts were derived from the Third Elder's hesitation: [The Third Elder could have taken this Xuan Core a long time ago, but then why is he hesitating from making a move on this man? There's more to this man than I think! If Silver Blizzard City's Third Elder doesn't have the courage to act rashly, then should I take the lead, ....no, right? Why didn't I just wait for Shi Chang Xiao to finish his battle? I should have waited for him, damn it. Now I've foolishly landed myself in a pincer position against two Spirit Xuan experts, what is this..... holy grandmother.... Damn my misfortunes! ]

Jun Mo Xie was the only man among the three with no hesitation in his mind, after all, he was the only one willing to escape away at any point of time - The Xuan Core was simply useless, but moreover, he also had the 'Yin Yang Escape' law to help him escape away to safety at a moment's notice, but he was still waiting for Shi Chang Xiao and Solitary Falcon to show up. [Where have the two of them gone off to? Come quickly so I can throw away this Xuan Core, and then sneak away to a safe place. I'd really like to watch you all fight and die as I count my fortunes ah.... What kind of silly 'Great masters' are the two of you if you can't even get here before a normal Spirit Xuan expert..... ]

[But this isn't good for me.... These two old idiots have me trapped in his awkward position now; I can't even move a finger right now.... one move and my bluff will be exposed... once I'm exposed, I'll have to leave immediately.... This wasn't a part of the plan! I, I, I, I'm so unlucky. ]

[I had planned everything so accurately, but I had never expected that the Solitary Falcon..... that crazy fighting machine, and that

Shi Chang Xiao guy would actually decide to be late today out of all days! ]

These three men stood their ground with the elegance and authority of peerless masters, but even though their arms and legs were free to move about, no one took the initiative. These three men continued to stare at each other sharply as they held each other in place with their gazes!

Jun Mo Xie's body was sweating coldly, but thanks to the cover from the pouring rain, neither of the two men was able to spot them, else his bluff would have been exposed, which would have marked the end of his bluff...

Finally.....

Two popping sounds came from a distance, almost as if something had been broken, which was followed by a wave of frightening surge in the air pressure and Shi Chang Xiao's booming voice: "Brother Fei, since you've missed the opportunity, I guess I'll have to take this Xuan Core myself!"

These words had barely been spoken when a black figure came flashing into the sky overhead!

"Ha ha ha..... Shi Chang Xiao, you shouldn't start celebrating so early; I also want this Xuan Core!" A powerful sonorous voice resounded, making everyone a bit more uncomfortable!

A low flying black figure approached closer, almost as if hawk was looking for its prey as the elegant-bodied, cruel-eyed, and desolate-faced man moved towards the gathering.

This man was also one of the 'Eight Great Masters'; Shen Ci's Solitary Falcon!

Shi Chang Xiao's smile immediately vanished off his face as he accelerated his pace, but still fell short since the Solitary Falcon managed to land on the ground half-a-breath earlier than his counterpart. The two men landed at a relative distance, and their

eyes started flashing more currents towards each other than the thunderbolts in the sky above!

'Whoosh' 'Whoosh', the Sixth and the Ninth Elder of the Silver Blizzard City landed at the same time, each holding a broken sword in their hand. Even though their faces were slightly pale, it was evident that they hadn't sustained any serious injuries, and they quickly stationed themselves behind the Third Elder; since the Three Elders were now united again, their confidence obviously grew!

After all, the Three Elders were all Spirit Xuan experts!

Momentarily, six more people made their way through the storm and quietly stationed themselves behind Shi Chang Xiao.

"Looks like everyone is here....."

"Lei Jiang Hong is pleased to meet his seniors. Master-Brother Shi, Master-Brother Falcon, I extend greetings on behalf of my master Li Wu Bei!" A middle-aged man emerged from the shadows along with his nine companions; this was obviously Li You Ran's cavalry. Since their line-up's strength was the weakest amongst the parties involved, it wasn't surprising that they were the last ones to reveal themselves.

"Strange.... I have no relation with Li Wu Bei...? So why is his apprentice calling me Master-brother? Where is this even coming from?" the Solitary Falcon batted his eye-lids, and then asked in a cold voice: "Shi Chang Xiao, don't tell me that you have an alliance with Li Wu Bei?"

Li Wu Bei!

Li You Ran's ten associates were actually the disciples of a 'Great Master', Li Wu Bei!

"You bald Falcon! What nonsense are you talking?" Shi Chang Xiao glared back: "Even if you're not associated with Li Wu Bei, how dare you act so arrogantly to his apprentices? You don't have

the manners of a Peak Spirit Xuan - We have our laws!"

"Bah, this is how I am; Why don't you come and teach me otherwise!" then, the Solitary Falcon looked towards the new arrivals, and said: "Since your Xuan Qi is so pathetic, you people have no right to call me 'Master-brother'. And since you're obviously here for the Xuan Core, I'll knock your heads together if you call me that word again. Moreover, what kind of an idiot is your master to send you here all by yourself? Do you actually think that you can take this Xuan Core? In fact, given your strength, you're not even qualified to join this charade!"

Lei Jiang Hong had only greeted the Solitary Falcon out of respect and protocol, but he still smiled as he said: "Since the Solitary Falcon doesn't recognize our friendly greeting, we will no longer address you as 'Master-Brother'."

In reality, the 'Eight Grand Master' had a norm; their disciple's would be treated as a Brother's disciples by another, however, this norm had always seemed extremely irrational to the Solitary Falcon; There were only two lone-wolfs amongst the 'Eight Great Masters', and the Solitary Falcon was obviously one amongst these two.....

# Chapter 181: Masters in Confrontation

---

The Third Elder's face was clearly reflecting his confidence now that his two brothers were standing next to him. Their biggest enemy tonight was Shi Chang Xiao, but as long as the three of them were together, they were sure that they wouldn't fall short of him; however, the present situation had become far more volatile than they had initially expected!

Firstly, the strength of the man in the black mask was unpredictable, but moreover, they weren't just opposed by Shi Chang Xiao alone, but the Solitary Falcon as well. On top of that, several of the Li Wu Bei's disciples had also shown up, and then the Yu Tang Empire's Imperial Teacher Fei Meng Chen also had a squad of six Sky Xuan experts standing behind him!

This situation was most unexpected!

Moreover, this situation was extremely delicate.

The weakest in strength amongst them all was Jun Mo Xie, who was audaciously and arrogantly eyeing the others while holding the Peak Level Nine Xuan Core in his hands. The three Elders from the Silver Blizzard City were standing on one end, while Fei Meng Chen was standing on the other. As the periphery of the battlefield extended, the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao were stationed confrontationally.

The ten determined disciple of the Li Wu Bei, and the six Sky Xuan assistants of Shi Chang Xiao were standing in the outer most encirclement! The weakest amongst this entire line up was at least as strong as the peak of Earth Xuan.

Standing in the middle of such encirclement was a matter of honor and prestige, but also a matter of grave desperation. However Jun Mo Xie's mind was only brimming with excitement.

[Finally all the competitors have arrived in one place! ]

[Now, it's time for me to throw away this Xuan Core and run! ]

[I may not be able to fight in this battle, but I'm definitely the best when it comes to escaping out of here! ]

Jun Mo Xie's eyes flickered since he was just about to move into action, but then he suddenly changed his mind since he saw four flickering lights approaching from a distance at a very fast pace.

Out of these four individuals, Jun Mo Xie could actually recognize two!

Xiao Han, and Mu Xue Tong!

There was a young, crooked-nosed man beside Xiao Han, while Mu Xue Tong seemed to be accompanying a picturesque white-robed maiden; her hair were white like the clouds, her skin was as white as snow, and her face was delicate and beautiful. Her big round eyes seemed quite excited at the sight of this gathering of peerless experts.

They arrived in a few moments; Mu Xue Tong quickly extended his arm and pulled out an umbrella, and placed above the young maiden's head. There was a picture of a black bear on the umbrella's surface.....

The three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City starting whining inwardly the moment they saw her approaching. [Ah, why did she have to come here when we're in so much trouble already! Is no one going to take pity on our life today? ]

Another bolt of lightning illuminated the sky for a moment, clearly exposing the nervous faces of everyone present.

Shi Chang Xiao's eye scanned the entire gathering, but eventually came to a halt upon the Solitary Falcon's face: "Falcon, do you really want this Xuan Core? I have always believed that there is only one man amongst us all who doesn't care about materialistic objects.... And that man is you; the Solitary Falcon!"

As long as he was able to convince the Solitary Falcon to stay out,

the Xuan Core was his for the taking! Shi Chang Xiao was sure of being able to fight away anyone one else; even the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City!

"Nonsense! This Xuan Core is such a rare item, so what's so surprising about my interest in it? Don't you want it too? Did you just come out in the rain for a bath?" the Solitary Falcon smiled in ridicule: "Shi Chang Xiao! You're such a disappointment! I've come here all this way to fight you; and since you and your stinking arrogance have showed up here today, I'm going to have some fun!"

Shi Chang Xiao started fuming with anger!

[Do you really believe that I'm a madman like you who thinks that fighting is fun? Ah, first you consider yourself to be one of the 'Eight Great Masters' and then you start talking like a scoundrel in the middle of a town? ]

[Besides, couldn't you have picked a better timing for pulling me away for a fight? Do you think I'm in a comfortable position here? What am I supposed to do about that Xuan Core, huh? ]

"Ha ha, who wants that Xuan Core? I've nothing to do with that Xuan Core!" the Solitary Falcon looked skywards and laughed out loudly. Then he looked around and started counting the number of Spirit Xuan experts present..... [One... two.. three... four.....this looks like a fun game today! ]

"Falcon, if you sit out today, then I'll agree to fight you on any day in the future!" Shi Chang Xiao smiled coldly as his expressionless eyes stared at the Solitary Falcon through the dense cover of rain: "I'm well aware that this Xuan Core has never been your goal, and I'm more than willing to give you a chance to face me later!"

"To hell with your bargain! You're only offering this chance for the sake of this Xuan Core! I have no alliance with you, so why should I listen to your request?! I want to fight you today; what



option do you have, ah?" The Solitary Falcon stared right back at Shi Chang Xiao, showing no signs of weakness.

Even though the two men were at the peak of the Spirit Xuan realm, but it was evident from their ranking in the list of the 'Eight Great Masters' that the Solitary Falcon was marginally weaker than Shi Chang Xiao. However, if the two men actually started battling each other, then there would still be no winner or loser unless the two men decided to battle till only one survived!

Therefore, if the Solitary Falcon was hell-bent on battling Shi Chang Xiao, then the latter would have no other option but to face him in vain!

These 'Eight Great Masters' were practically unbeatable in battle, so much so that even if two or more people were confronted against each other, neither man was sure to lose since either man was capable of escaping away at any time during the fight!

The opportunity of grabbing this Xuan Core could best be described as a 'fleeting' one at the moment, and in case one of the competitors entered into a long drawn battle against an equal, then he was sure to miss out on the Xuan Core!

Especially when Fei Meng Chen and the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City were eying the prize as well!

Even those Sky Xuan experts, who were no more than ants in the eyes of these Spirit Xuan experts, were looking determined to obtain the Xuan Core!

Moreover, sounds of movement had been coming from a distance for quite some time now. Several more people had been hastily making their way towards the source of the Xuan Core, and these people weren't just limited to Spirit Xuan experts; several Sky Xuan experts, Earth Xuan experts, Jade Xuan experts, and even Gold Xuan experts had burst into action from the distant parts of the city. Since there was an abundance of high-level experts at the center of this scene, most of these people were planning on waiting

at a safe distance to investigate and observe the situation; neither stepping forward, nor retreating. They were obviously waiting for an opportunity to steal the treasure, and had long forgotten the limitation of their own strength in the lust for this prize.

The Solitary Falcon's cold eyes scanned the distance through the curtains of rain, seeing everyone regardless of their distance from the main scene; then, he suddenly looked upwards and shouted. His roar filled the sky, almost like the sound of a thunderbolt would have, while the effect of his wild howl suppressed the hearts and desires of many experts in an instant!

Some of the weaker experts amongst these approaching or hiding ones instantly sensed the danger, and their hearts and brain started urging them to scuttle away, while some even stopped in their steeds out of fear as their faces went pale from the fear of facing the terror behind this voice!

"I am the Solitary Falcon! And I'm standing opposite to Shi Chang Xiao!" The Solitary Falcon laughed loudly: "For those who've overestimated themselves: act sensibly, or else I'll be happy to knock some into you!"

Almost all of these approaching experts froze in their steeds!

[Who would have thought that two amongst the 'Eight Great Masters' would actually arrive in the Tian Xiang City on the same day?! ]

[Snatching the Xuan Core from the hands of these two men? What's the difference between that and death? ]This thought emerged in the minds of several people, and they immediately sighed, turned away, and disappeared into the rain; and away from this competition for the Xuan Core.

However, there were several who refused to return. [So what if you guys are actually Spirit Xuan experts? Can't we just wait for you and Shi Chang Xiao to beat each other up, and then steal the Xuan Core when you're lying dead? ]

There were several who were carrying this idea in their minds.

"That man is the 'Solitary Falcon'? One of the 'Eight Great Masters' of the Xuan Xuan continent? He's so fierce.... and so calm at the same time....." That delicate looking maiden asked in a mischievous sounding tone.

Mu Xue Tong, who was standing beside her, sighed deeply, and replied with a wry smile: "Little Princess, this really isn't the time to be here..... it is too dangerous."

"Mu Xue Tong, are you incapable of protecting the Little Princess?" Xiao Han laughed: "If you're so scared of being here, then why don't you just hand over the responsibility of her protection to me? You're obviously a spineless man!"

Mu Xue Tong grunted as he replied: "The Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao are present here; if our Silver Blizzard City actually manages to get the Xuan Core, then these two men will likely turn hostile... even the three Elders may not be able to fight those two guys off..... don't you think that we'll end up getting our heads smashed in then? Can't you see the number of advanced Xuan experts here? Do you really think that a Sky Xuan expert is capable of beating them all?! Idiot!"

Mu Xue Tong's words were obviously very sensible; the strength of the men gathered here was simply too high for a Sky Xuan expert to be lingering around alone; in case a battle actually broke out here, then the result was sure to be a very tragic one.... It was needless to mention the possible fate of Xiao Han, a mere Sky Xuan-base expert, when the fate of the Spirit Xuan experts such as the Third, The Sixth and the Ninth Elder wasn't certain to be very safe....

Xiao Han furiously opened his mouth to ridicule his companion as he scanned the surroundings, but then realized that enormity of the situation, palpitated, and finally swallowed down a mouthful of saliva in silence.

The situation on the field was extremely delicate at the moment; the Xuan Core was in the hands of Jun Mo Xie, who was standing in the middle of the encirclement.... The first layer of encirclement was composed of several opposing parties with the weakest member of the layer being a Sky Xuan expert! The outermost layer consisted of about sixteen more experts, the weakest being an Earth Xuan expert; the strength of the final layer may not be as high in merit, but their sheer number was quite impressive!

This was obviously the most high-ended line-up that Jun Mo Xie had ever seen, in fact, this sort of an opposition was bound to give anyone a headache; even Yun Bei Chen!

However, even though there were so many powerful individuals and groups in this gathering.... No one had the courage to make the first move!

With two peak Spirit Xuan experts facing each other confrontationally, who would have the courage to make a move?

The entire situation was delicate placed in a balance! And such a balance was not good for Jun Mo Xie's interests! He obviously needed to break it!

[So I guess it's time to start this 'Battle Royale', ah. ]

# Chapter 182: The Xuan Core changes hands

---

Li Wu Bei's ten disciples were simply waiting along the outer periphery for the Three Elders of Silver Blizzard City, the Solitary Falcon, and Shi Chang Xiao to move into action. As long as these five men started fighting, this ten man team would immediately make a move for the Xuan Core, and would then try to escape with it.

They were well aware that they wouldn't be able to fight against some of the best warriors in the world, but were extremely confident that they could succeed in snatching the Xuan Core and escape thereafter, owing to the virtue of their combined strength and team work!

The three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City were thinking the exact same thing, and were waiting for Shi Chang Xiao and Solitary Falcon to start fighting. The moment these two masters started engaging each other in combat, they would no longer be able to obstruct them. The only remaining threat would be Fei Meng Chen, who alone wouldn't be able to stop them from procuring the Xuan Core.

Shi Chang Xiao was caught up in his own dilemma; he was the strongest individual on the scene, and even had seven more experts to assist him if needed. However, he was also aware of the strength of the other parties involved, and was well aware that he couldn't neglect any side's challenge. He could understand that in case he started the fight, then the balance of power would shift against him, and therefore he needed to wait for someone else to start the battle!

Moreover, Solitary Falcon's presence had made the situation even harder for him. Even though he was sure of being able to defeat the Solitary Falcon in battle, he was also aware that he wouldn't be able to grab the Xuan Core in case he was forced into a battle with the man! [What's the point of it all if I don't get the

Xuan Core? I'm not here for sightseeing..... ]

[Especially now that there are so many experts present on the scene..... even if I am guaranteed to come out of this battle unharmed, the same cannot be presumed for the rest of my team. If a battle breaks out between this mix of powerful experts, then not all of my companions are assured to come out alive. If all my companions end up dying in this battle, then even winning the Xuan Core wouldn't be enough to compensate the loss! ]

[And then there's the situation surrounding the Solitary Falcon's interests.... He's obviously not here for the Xuan Core... moreover, he's alone, and has nothing to lose... he's a war-seeking madman just looking for a good fight.... I'm afraid that he won't let this opportunity slip by. ]

Even though Shi Chang Xiao was trying very hard to figure out a solution, he still hadn't been able to thus far!

As far as the other Peak Spirit Xuan was concerned, [all these people have gathered here for the Xuan Core's sake, and they would all prefer avoiding a fight...unlike me. In case someone was able to snatch that Xuan Core from that Black-masked man's hands, then this will turn into a long-drawn chase, and Shi Chang Xiao is very highly unlikely to pay any attention to me if that happens. ]

As a result, even though all the parties were quite strong in their own merits, but no one was willing to make the first move.

A husky, ice-cold voice suddenly rang: "Damn it, have all you blockheads been paralyzed or something? Get a move on! I've almost caught a cold because of this rain. Even women aren't so afraid of getting in a fight!"

These audacious words infuriated everyone present. Generally speaking, words were rarely enough to instigate these men, but these bold and courageous words did the trick beautifully!

Everyone's eyes immediately shifted towards the source of the sound, and were rather surprised to realize that it was coming from the center of the encirclement where that black-masked man was standing and shouting excitedly, while his fingers were pointed at the two Peak Spirit Xuan experts.

[What's this guy thinking.... He's obviously incapable of defending the Xuan Core, and even then he's intentionally provoking everyone..... is he just ignorant and bold, or simply an idiot?! ]

"Shut up!" five or six people shouted out at the same time as their nostrils flared up in anger.

"Let me teach you a lesson!" the Solitary Falcon was naturally angrier than anyone else by nature, and flashed forward. His body moved at a ghostly speed and was soon upon the black-masked man's, while his hand was stretched out in order to slap the guy across the face. [I've got to teach this moron a lesson! He should know his place! ]

The third Elder of the Silver Blizzard City stared nervously.

The Solitary Falcon had inevitably started the fight!

The others weren't aware of what the Third Elder had witnessed earlier. [This guy is no ordinary man..... even the Solitary Falcon won't be able to defeat him very easily. And in case I'm still underestimating this guy, then I simply can't fathom the Solitary Falcon's fate! ]

[This black-masked man is most likely some super-being; or at least a very high-level mysterious expert! ]

The thought of those changing Xuan color lights were still sending shivers down the Third Elder's heart! He was well aware that his own Xuan Qi was nowhere near capable of pulling off such stunts! In fact, forget about his own strength, even Han Feng Xue wasn't powerful enough to do something like that!

However, the Third Elder was also aware that he wouldn't be able to deal with the Solitary Falcon, and hence didn't mind the fact that his enemy was walking into a trap, which would most likely result in misfortune for the said-man. He simply stood there and waited for the Solitary Falcon to get the shock!

However.....

The mysterious black-masked man frantically tried to dodge instead, "Pop!" a crisp sound was issued as the Solitary Falcon's hand slapped the man's chest, "Ah!... I ....." the man cried out in fear as his body was sent out flying in the air, almost like a broken kite as he started shouting: "Help ah..... somebody save me... spare my life....."

Everyone was left shell-shocked! Each pair of eyes were practically coming out of their sockets at the moment, [What is going on?! He was acting so boldly..... like he was a peerless expert, and now he's actually screaming for help..... ]

The most surprising part was that this black-masked man had actually gotten rid of the Xuan Core in the hope of blocking the strike, and had been unable to retrieve it before flying out under the effect of the strike.....and now that Xuan Core was slowly falling into the Solitary Falcon's hands.....

The Solitary Falcon suddenly felt an enormous and surging Xuan Qi field falling into his hands, and he suddenly found his fingers subconsciously clutching the Xuan Core.

He had never expected that his slap would actually land on the man's body! That masked-man had been holding the Xuan Core in his hands, and had been standing in the middle of so many peerless experts in a very calm and composed manner for a very long time now. Moreover, he had even managed to muster the courage to openly and brazenly curse everyone present, including his own self and Shi Chang Xiao. The Solitary Falcon was expecting this man to be an expert in his own merit.



Truth be told, the Solitary Falcon hadn't attacked this man in order to procure the Xuan Core, but because he desired to combat this mysterious expert. In fact, contrary to looking down upon this man, the Solitary Falcon had been rating him very highly!

Thus, the Solitary Falcon had concealed his other hand behind his back, and was preparing to use it to strike the man once the man had blocked his first strike.

This hidden palm strike was an extremely powerful and dangerous one.

But compared to this hidden strike, the first strike was only a superficial one, and was only intended to divert the man's attention rather than sending him flying in the air!

The Solitary Falcon was left completely confused to see that black-masked man flying out under the effect of his strike, [that was too easy, wasn't it? I thought he was going to be a very good opponent.... But he turned out to be completely useless! ]

Then, he gently raised his hand and looked at the Xuan Core he was undeservedly holding in his hands; it was a while before he was able to find his words: "I.....huh!"

Out of all the people who had gathered here, the Solitary Falcon was the only who wasn't seeking the Xuan Core, and now, by a hilarious twist of fate...beyond all expectations, he was the one in possession of the Xuan Core!

And he had succeeded in doing so with too much ease!

This change of events had left even everyone startled; so much so that even Shi Chang Xiao's mouth was hung open in shock!

[Who would have actually thought that the black-masked man would turn out to be a silver colored wax candle?! ]

[Even wax candles don't melt before a certain temperature.... This man is far too useless for that comparison! ]

Even though the Solitary Falcon was one of the 'Eight Great Masters', his strike was so superficial that anyone present could have blocked it with ease!

As a result, everyone was left repenting their fate!

Naturally, no one would dare to attack the Solitary Falcon in haste; not even Shi Chang Xiao. Attacking this man in haste would be tantamount to courting one's death!

As a result, everyone's eyes followed after the flying shadow of that mysterious and useless man, hoping that he would land in front of them so that they could beat and cut him to pieces. Their faces were clearly reflecting their hatred for the man!

[Damn it! He was actually completely powerless? Ah.... I lost my opportunity because of him! ]

[I wish I had attacked that man instead of the Solitary Falcon! ...he was too easy a target! ]

As the eyes of everyone stared after his flying body, the black-masked man quietly and suddenly disappeared into thin air!

[Was this kid made of paper.... Did he actually die in just one strike? ]

A large human body had just disappeared into thin air in front of two Peak Spirit Xuan experts, four Spirit Xuan experts, almost twenty Sky Xuan experts, and a few Earth Xuan peaks! And they were all under the impression that it was due to the Solitary Falcon's attack!

"Snap!" A crisp and clear sound was issued.

No one had yet been able to recover from this first shock as their eyes subconsciously refocused to origination point of this new sound, and found its destination in the Silver Blizzard City's Third Elder's direction, who had just extended his arm and had managed to slap his own face!

The crisp, loud, and melodious sound had come as music to several ears!

[Now what? ]

The Sixth and the Ninth Elder came forward and asked in a concerned tone: "What happened Third Bother?"

The Third, the Sixth and the Ninth Elder had always maintained a very good relation, and an even better understanding!

"Uh.... Nothing.... Too many mosquitos here." The Third Elder replied in an embarrassing tone.

Some people practically fainted on the spot!

[Rain is pouring down on a late autumn evening; the Solitary Falcon is holding the Xuan Core at the moment; and he's more worried about the mosquitoes.....?! Since when did mosquitoes become so dangerous? ]

Little could anyone imagine the plight of the Third Elder's heart!

# Chapter 183: Qing Han's fury

---

[That guy was nothing! I had him to myself earlier, I just needed to extend my arm and grab that Xuan Core.... And then I could have easily returned to the Silver Blizzard City.... I would have been able to achieve my target so easily! ]

[I can't believe I allowed that guy to fool me! ]

[I knew that such a feat wasn't possible... those changing Xuan Qi colors didn't make any sense... how did I get fooled by it? ]

[I'm the world's biggest idiot ah! Damn it! Damn me..... ]

Whilst the Third Elder was busy repenting and redressing his mistakes, all the other experts were nervously staring at the Solitary Falcon, afraid that in case he decided to flee from the spot with all his strength then no one would be able to catch up with him; not even Shi Chang Xiao!

Shi Chang Xiao furiously roared, and then suddenly plunged into the sky like a soaring dragon: "Falcon! You wanted to fight me ah? Let's fight!"

Raindrops started scattering away from his body under the effect of his enormous Xuan Qi, and started crashing against the faces of the other people present!

The Solitary Falcon laughed loudly as he tucked the Xuan Core into his robes: "Good, let's go!" he stretched out his arms like a hawk and his body started to rise up in the sky as well!

The two Peak Spirit Xuan masters had formally acknowledged their confrontation!

Fei Meng Chen, the Three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City, Shi Chang Xiao's six helpers, and Li Wu Bei's ten disciples simultaneously leaped into the sky, and flashed forward at ghostly speeds; all of them converged at one point: The Solitary Falcon!

The Solitary Falcon laughed as he roared: "This is going to be fun!" He didn't hold anything back, 'bang', a loud explosion sounded as fragments of his Xuan Qi burst out of his body, and sent everyone scattering and flying outwards. The Solitary Falcon remained standing his ground, upright... ready for a battle!

### The Jun Residence

Guan Qing Han's mind was heavy with thoughts as she walked towards her courtyard. The events of this day had been like a pipe-dream for her; her heart had felt absolute desperation and desolation at one moment, and the next moment she was left feeling happy and content.

[Although my own father abandoned me in my hour of need, but since I have such a great Uncle, and such an amazing Brother-in-law, why should I be afraid of anything? It's like Mo Xie said..... a life of shame has no meaning! ]

[Is the Xue Hun Manor really invincible? Even if they really are undefeatable.... They can only kill us..... and I won't have to worry about the complexities of this world in my death; so why should I fear death! ]

"I couldn't have imagined that he would have such a heroic spirit within him. He has proved that he is a true son of the Jun Family! And he had proved that he is Mo You's younger brother. If Mo You was here today.... Would he have made the same choice? Yes, of course... there's no doubt about it."

Qing Han's heart wasn't feeling as uncomfortable thinking about Mo You as it used to... the pain of her heart seemed a bit... very distant now.....

She was walking with her head down, and didn't realize that she was almost about to bump into a person.

A burly figure was standing in front of her courtyard's doorstep.

This man was her biological father; Guan Dong Liu!

Guan Dong Liu's clothes were drenched since he had been standing in the rain for quite a while now. Even though his face was cold, his sad eyes were enough to express the pain of his heart as he looked at his daughter, but was unable to say anything to her.

Qing Han stared back at him in silence, unable to find any words to start a conversation with, and hence this father-daughter duo stood motionlessly in the rain, caught in a strange and wordless world of their own desolation.

A bolt of lightning lit up the courtyard for a split second, revealing the traces of sadness and concern on Guan Dong Liu's face.

Guan Qing Han was suddenly reminded of her childhood days, and how her father used to worry about her well-being, and suddenly her heart turned soft. Her ice-cold expression melted in an instant as she opened her mouth and whispered: "Daddy....."

"Qing Han, do you blame your daddy?" Guan Dong Liu looked at his daughter through the rain which was pouring over his head.

Qing Han blankly shook her head as an empty feeling overtook her heart.

"I don't blame you, father." She deliriously raved, "You're my father; but before that.... you're Guan Family's master. And as the master of the family, you have to bear the burden of thousands of lives and their fates on your shoulder. I understand the problem of your position, daddy....."

Guan Dong Liu sighed as he sadly bowed his head, but then raised his head again, revealing his pain-stricken but firm eyes: "Qing Han, your father obviously feels sorry for you, however, if I ever had a chance to go back in time and.....I... I....."

Guan Dong Liu's deep eyes were clearly exposing the intense struggle which was taking place inside his heart as he finally finished his sentence: "..... I would still make the same choice!

Since I'm the master of the family.... I will probably never be able to be a good father to you, but I .....

Guan Qing Han shook her head: " ..... Don't say that... don't...." she suddenly realized that her father was getting wet in the rain, and quickly said: "Daddy, let's go inside and talk."

"No, let's talk right here... in the rain. At least I feel sober in the rain..... I have a lot of things to say, but I don't know if I'll be able to say them if we go inside!" Guan Dong Liu smiled bitterly: "About the Xue Hun Manor and this entire matter..... even though it won't matter now, but there are a few more things that I thought that you should know....."

Guan Qing Han sighed and said: "Please tell me father....."

"At the time when we received that proposal from the Xue Hun manor, several Elders advised me to agree to the proposal immediately." Guan Dong Liu painfully closed his eyes and looked upwards at the sky, unable to look at his daughter's pale face anymore, "We aren't capable of provoking the Xue Hun Manor, but in case you were to marry Li Teng Yun, then our family would have been able to build a good relationship with them and we would have been able to climb up the ladders, which not only would not have brought the family any harm, but would have worked out in the Family's best interests....."

Guan Qing Han softly bit her lips, and grunted while her eyes started to deepen with anger; the previous ice-cold expression of her face had been restored now.

"There were two separate opinions on this matter within our house as well; Qing Bo has always been ambitious, and has wanted to dominate the entire south-east region as well, and thus he urged me to respond in agreement." Guan Dong Liu's voice became even softer: "Qing Yue and your mother insisted that I don't agree to the proposal; your mother..... Your mother has been bathing her face in tears every day since....."

Qing Han's delicate body started shivering, and tears gushed out of her eyes while her shoulders sunk in.

"Later, the Xue Hun manor put forth another condition." Guan Dong Liu was gazing at a distance: "They added that even though you will be married into their family, you wouldn't receive the title of the 'first wife', but you would still receive the same treatment otherwise. Qing Bo met with Li Jue Tian to counter this proposal, but he was denied!"

Guan Dong Liu's tone of speech was enough to indicate his sorrows: "Thereafter, Qing Bo, Qing Yue, and I travelled to the Tian Xiang City to talk to you....."

"I don't even know what I am in the eyes of the family..... a commodity? Or perhaps a bargaining chip? Something they can just trade for the family's growth? Is that all I am?!"

Qing Han smiled desolately: "I didn't object when these two families decided to get engaged! Although I didn't know about Mo You's heroic temperament then, and I didn't know if he would ever shame or humiliate me, but I still couldn't object either way; because this decision was the Family's to make, and I wasn't given a choice. After I met him three times, I realized that he was very noble man, and I started liking his nature. And I was indeed very pleased with the family for making this decision, and I was very grateful to you for arranging this marriage....."

Guan Dong Liu seemed to be aware of what she was going to say, and hence he just bowed his head down.

"But later when Mo You died for the country... he died a hero! And yes, I would have spent a lifetime as his widow! And even though I was already prepared to spend my life as his widow, and even though I was already preparing to convince you and mother about it, along with the Elders of the family; at that time, the Elders actually unanimously decided that I should spend my life as a widow in the Jun Family! The reason being that the Guan Family



didn't want to lose the Jun Family's patronage! Being the Guan Family's daughter, I was used as an investment!"

Guan Qing Han laughed in mockery: "At that time, even though they tried to force me into it, I didn't object because I wanted to do the same anyway.... But I was doing it in the memory of my husband, whereas the Family was simply using me as a bargaining chip... a tool to maintain the relationship between the two families! I had never felt so ashamed in my entire life!"

"Shamed! A girl's most beautiful dream had been shattered, but even then her widowhood was being used to as a commodity by her family!"

"Father, as yourself, how many times has the Guan Family used the Jun Family's influence and assistance to expand their control and business in these last few years?! And now that the wind is going against us, and there's another Family, more powerful than the Jun Family, the Elders of the Guan Family have actually immediately agreed to change their stance? And now they are asking me to remarry?!"

"Daddy, what kind of reasoning is this? Isn't it enough for them to force me into marriage once? Aren't I someone else's daughter now? And moreover, I'm the daughter-in-law of their own benefactors! And now they want to sell their benefactor's daughter as well?!"

## Chapter 184: I want to act as a father

---

A strange fusion of anger and sadness made up Qing Han's tone.

"Even though I'm spending my life as a widow in the Jun Family, I'm still given the status of a 'daughter-in-law'. But if I marry into the Li Family, then I will become a concubine! If Yun Bei Chen takes a shine to me someday, then the Li Family will simply send me off to him to be his concubine.... Slaves don't have opinions; they are slaves! And the Guan Family will probably approve of it as well because Yun Bei Chen is more powerful than Li Jue Tian, and an alliance with him will be more beneficial for the Guan Family!"

"The head of the Family will still be thinking about the family?! Daddy, how could our family have no shame at all?! How can they not see my dishonor! I would rather live in the Jun Family as a widowed daughter-in-law than live a life of such shame! And never for such shameless people's cause!"

"I would rather let the Guan Family die as heroes before I allow a useless bunch of white-haired old men to beg the powers of this world for pity!"

Guan Qing Han's final sentence almost exploded out of her mouth.

Guan Dong Liu stood blankly staring at his daughter, his face reveling in the pain of this conversation. Even though his body was still as burly as ever, but his body-language didn't reflect it.

He had no answer for his daughter's sharp words; none at all. His heart was riddled with guilt and shame, and he started biting his teeth as a painful spasm overtook his entire body!

"As a daughter, I just want to know what my father has planned for now....." Guan Qing Han looked at her father again; her voice sounded even more desolate, weak, but was still showing her anger.....

"Jun Wu Yi has already answered that question!" Guan Dong Liu smiled sadly: "As things are at the moment..... even if we withdraw this marriage, we'll only be able to send you to the Li Family over the corpses of the Jun Family!"

Guan Dong Liu exposed a self-deprecating smile: "I may be Guan Dong Liu.... The master of the Guan Family.... But I can't touch the Jun Family.... Or the Li Family."

"Moreover, it is as you said earlier.... The Jun Family is our benefactor, and I will not kick my benefactor in the teeth!"

Guan Dong Liu's voice suddenly strengthened up: "This was my decision; I decided to renounce my own daughter for the welfare of my family! I didn't even act when the Jun Family decided to rise up to protect you! I agreed to allow the Xue Hun Manor to insult and dishonor my daughter! I've wronged you for a lifetime.... Because I chose to look at the future of the family first, but now I want to....."

"I want to act as a father!" Guan Dong Liu's face stiffened up, and his blood-red eyes started to shine while his pupils dilated.

"I want to act as father again!"

Guan Dong Liu's heart suddenly felt a burst of ease as he stated this sentence; almost as if he had suddenly unloaded a heavy burden off his heart!

[Screw life and death! ]

[That Jun boy was right.... If a family has no backbone, then they will just linger around the death's door for ever... what's the point of such a survival?! ]

"Daddy!" Guan Qing Han's entire body vibrated as she looked at her father again; but with a pleasantly surprised look in her eyes this time.

Guan Dong Liu smiled profoundly as he nodded: "Qing Han, the Jun aren't the only men in this world; the Guan are also men!"

Guan Qing Han's face exposed a proud look as she spoke up: "I never knew that my father would have such an indomitable spirit inside him....."

Guan Dong Liu forced a wry smile as he said: "Your little Brother-in-law's curse was surely very ruthless, but thanks to him.... Your father now understands that there are a few things in this world that are more important than the 'big picture'."

He laughed twice, but then asked in a confused tone: "You've told me a lot about him, but your young brother-in-law is nothing like the debauchee you said he was?"

Guan Qing Han's face suddenly reddened as she was unable to find her words again: "Daddy... don't make fun of me.... he's changed a lot recently... he's nothing like the guy he used to be earlier.... He's become a real man now."

Guan Dong Liu smiled playfully: "Is that so? So because he scolded your dad, you've suddenly started to respect him?"

Guan Qing Han suddenly reverted back to being a spoilt young girl again, and started throwing tantrums: "I hate you daddy!"

Guan Dong Liu broke into laughter.

"Daddy, come in else you'll catch a cold in this autumn rain." Guan Qing Han suddenly realized her father's plight.

"Ah, and now you're finally caring about me? The rain has already seeped into your daddy's old bones now." Guan Dong Liu laughed jokingly: "However, this rain was good for me! It won me back my daughter's heart and it also woke me up from my slumber.... I was about to trade my own daughter's innocence for my family's survival..... such a survival was no better than life anyway." He finished his sentence, looked at his daughter lovingly once again, and then turned around.

His burly body braved through the rain and wind, one step at a time, but each step was stable and firm!

Guan Qing Han's eyes blurred once again.....

A few meters away, Jun Wu Yi was standing quietly in a corner with rigid line creasing his face. He smiled to himself as he said in an undertone: "Guan Dong Liu, you've only been Guan Dong Liu to me till now.... but now you're a qualified father, and an iron-blooded man in my eyes!"

His eyes gazed at a distance through the curtains of rain: "Jun Mo Xie left at such a weird timing.....Why do I feel that something big is about to happen? Why hasn't he returned yet? I don't know what to do with my nephew... he's really strange... I allowed him to work free of my authority, but he becomes more mysterious with each passing day!"

He sighed as light flashed from his body, and then he disappeared without a trace.

.....

The black-masked man, young master Jun had flown out of the encirclement under the effect of the Solitary Falcon's strike, but had managed to conveniently drop the Xuan Core into his attacker's hand before being thrown away.

His body was almost about to ram into a tree, but Jun Mo Xie immediately used the Yin Yang escape method and disappeared in front of everyone's eyes, and resurfaced away from everyone's notice. He was sitting clutching his chest at the moment.

After all, he had been struck by a Peak Spirit Xuan! Even though the Solitary Falcon's strike was only a superficial one in his eyes, but his strike was still powerful enough to cause extreme discomfort to Jun Mo Xie's body, and had left him with a feeling of nausea.

Even though Jun Mo Xie wasn't injured very seriously, but his body was still under a shock!

[Damn that Falcon! I'm going to get back at him for this one day! ]

Jun Mo Xie was silently cursing the man as he watched the fight unfold in front of his eyes!

Jun Mo Xie continued to watch the fight from a distance with a frowning face, while his mouth would mummer in silence from time to time, [I never intended to cause such a big battle..... ]

Jun Mo Xie hadn't actually intended on starting such a fierce battle, and had only planned on causing some chaos at the most. His main intention was to check his idea surrounding the 'Xuan Core fakes' for future use.

Of course, had this matter surrounding the Xue Hun Manor not surfaced at this time, then Jun Mo Xie would have planned this more carefully, and would have waited until he was ready with a foolproof plan instead. Moreover, he would have also waited for more experts to gather in the city before making this move. After all, this hasty occurrence of the Xuan Core so shortly after its theft was more likely to raise skepticism in the minds of most people.

But the affair surrounding the Xue Hun Manor had disrupted Jun Mo Xie's plans, and although the threat from the Li Family wasn't very imminent, but it was like that bomb in one's backside which could detonate at any time. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie threw out this fake Xuan Core ahead of scheduled time, and was now left with no other option but to watch it bear an undesired fruit. Had he delayed the plan any further, then it could have hindered the safety of the Guan and the Jun Family.

At the moment, Shi Chang Xiao was preparing to launch an attack on the Solitary Falcon, whilst keeping his guard against the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City, who were also lingering around the Solitary Falcon, same as the ten disciples of the Li Wu Bei, and the six Sky Xuan helping hands of Shi Chang Xiao. They were all circling him from a distance with no man willing to go any closer without a backup.

They weren't exactly afraid of his high Xuan Qi, but more of his

expertise in general. The man in the middle of the encirclement was so quick that no expert lesser than a Sky Xuan peak was capable of lasting against him for more than a second.

The ten disciples of Li Wu Bei, whom Li You Ran had invited to contest for this Xuan Core seemed more than willing to confront these two supreme beings without any traces of fear in their eyes; in fact, they looked rather confident at the moment!

Since the speed of the fighters was too fast, Jun Mo Xie was only vaguely able to see their shadows, but couldn't tell the men apart.

Suddenly, almost a dozen figures converged to attack the Solitary Falcon again. Solitary Falcon's Xuan Qi burst out of his body as he fearlessly shouted: "Come!" then, his body arched strangely like a hawk in mid-air as he first dodged Shi Chang Xiao's attack, and then rotated mid-air again, and kicked-out!

Shi Chang Xiao was forced to recoil backwards!

And, Shi Chang Xiao was left roaring furiously!

Although he was the first one to launch an attack, but he was a Peak Spirit Xuan at the end of the day! Moreover, he was ranked above the Solitary Falcon! If he was unable to kill the Solitary Falcon in this siege, then the rumors would start spreading that he was beneath the Solitary Falcon; especially considering that he had other people assisting him!

The bad name that this one rumor would bring would be.... Irredeemable!

After all, people would only ask one thing: [why did he allow so many shrimps to intervene in a battle between two whales? ]

# Chapter 185: A tragedy of exceptional speed

---

Shi Chang Xiao grunted; his powerful voice resounded through the sky, and it seemed as if it had startled the rain. It appeared as if an invisible wave had hammered the pouring rain away from his body, and towards the rest of the crowd.....

Shi Chang Xiao had just been repelled by the Solitary Falcon's counter-attack, and had been forced to retreat a short distance. However, he had immediately extended his arms and had cast out this new and strange move almost immediately.....

Everyone felt a strange nip in the air, and immediately retreated backwards, and away from the Solitary Falcon's body due this extremely strange feeling!

Shi Chang Xiao powerful move wasn't intended to hurt the Solitary Falcon, but only to ward off the other experts away from him, and succeeded in carrying his plan out to perfection since the other experts were too afraid to get caught in the scope of his fierce move, and were forced to retreat.

Two silhouettes swiftly drifted away to a tree about forty or fifty feet away from the center of the combat, and quietly positioned themselves on its top branch amidst this chaotic movement.

The Hongjun Pagoda was still revolving at full speed and was still providing energy to Jun Mo Xie' body as he tried to recover from the shock of the Solitary Falcon's strike. Jun Mo Xie almost jumped up the moment he saw this action taking place on the battlefield: [finally! My plan can already be considered half-successful, but I still don't know if..... ]

Shi Chang Xiao's angry and powerful strike had sent everyone scuttling away to safety, so much so that even the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City, all Spirit Xuan experts in their own merit had decided to retreat immediately; even Li Wu Bei's disciples were left with no choice but to retreat since they also knew that weren't



capable of facing a Peak Spirit Xuan's explosive strength head-on, and were forced to resign into blankly staring at each other in despair.

The remaining Spirit Xuan expert, Fei Meng Chen wasn't looking any better either. He had also been targeting striking the Solitary Falcon like everyone else, and was only a fingertip away when Shi Chang Xiao's violent strike forced him to retreat backwards due to fear of injury. Even though he managed to escape unharmed, he was still left cursing his subordinate in authority.

But the most unfortunate was the sixth brother amongst the ten acquaintances of Li You Ran!

Because his speed was too quick!

He had rushed in like everyone else to take advantage of the situation; however, the man was even faster than the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City and Fei Meng Chen; the man was actually faster than Spirit Xuan experts! Li Wu Bei must have indeed been proud of his disciple's speed and agility!

But therein lay his biggest mistake..... he was too fast!

He was almost upon the Solitary Falcon at the time when Shi Chang Xiao went berserk, forcing his unknowing backups, the four Spirit Xuan experts away from the Solitary Falcon!

Because he was too fast, he was somehow able to escape Shi Chang Xiao's attack's scope; but inwards rather than outwards!

Because he was too fast, he was now placed in the same vacuum zone as the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao; alone, without any backups! And to make matters worse, he was so quick that he had actually managed to reach the Solitary Falcon before anyone else, and simply had no place to go now!

At this moment, even though his mind had already started to panic from the surprise of the situation, but his hands were still moving in their previously intended direction, and were nimbly

making their into the Solitary Falcon's pocket.....

An exceptional trait may not always be the best thing..... this exceptionally agile man was an excellent example of this truth!

Solitary Falcon was obviously very disappointed by Shi Chang Xiao's move, which had forced everyone to drop their plan of attacking him, and then he suddenly realized that one bold and fearless hand was reaching into his pocket to extract the Xuan Core! This obviously made the Solitary Falcon angrier!

If any man from the entire Xuan Xuan continent was ever successfully able to pick-pocket one of the 'Eight Great Masters'..... This news would bring the Solitary Falcon more shame than actually dying in battle facing a weaker man; it would turn him into a laughing stock!

If it hadn't been for Shi Chang Xiao's intervention, this exceptionally fast man would have actually been able to succeed in his attempt undetected! He had selected the most appropriate time to execute this stealth move; his timing was nothing short of perfection!

Moreover, once he had succeeded, he could have easily escaped away since the only person who would notice this theft, the Solitary Falcon, would have been forced to repel four Spirit Xuan experts! '..... one of the 'Eight Great Masters' was robbed by a pick-pocket.... This news would have shocked the entire world!'

Hence, one could obviously understand the Solitary Falcon's rage.....

The Sixth Brother was obviously aware of his own exceptional speed, and knew that he was even faster than an average Peak Sky Xuan expert, but he was completely unaware that the Solitary Falcon was as fast..... in his own league. The only difference was.... The Solitary Falcon was a Peak Spirit Xuan expert!

He was only vaguely able to see Solitary Falcon's hand extending

to grab his wrist, which was followed by a snapping sound made by his shattering hand, post which the Solitary Falcon released his wrist and then slapped his waist, and then moved his hand upwards to tilt the man's head backwards. The usually agile and nimble man wasn't even able to offer even a shred-worth's resistance in front of the Solitary Falcon's speed and strength, and ended up turning into a punching doll for the Solitary Falcon.

The Solitary Falcon was completely indifferent to the life and death of such sideshows, and simply threw the death body, sending it spinning like a windmill in the direction of deceased's remaining companions.

The nine people reached out to grab their falling brother, but the rotation speed of their brother's dead body was too fast from them to catch him, and several of these nine men were sent flying down to the ground under the force of the collision, along with their dead companion. The dead body of the Sixth Brother fell to the ground and continued to spin on the ground for a while, splashing and spraying the water in all directions like a beautiful and colorful fountain before finally coming to a stop under the effect of the friction from the turf underneath!

His companions quickly approached their fallen comrade, and were left shrieking angrily after seeing the plight of their brother's body.

It can be awfully difficult to imagine the dead body of a man spinning like a windmill; but it was even worse to see it after it had stopped spinning!

His arms had been broken in more than seventy eight places under the effect of the Solitary Falcon's powerful grip; his legs had been folded backwards since the slap on his waist had completely shattered his hip bone, along with his Dan Tian, while his head was turned backwards. Even if the man had survived these strikes, he would have been left worse than paralyzed!

There is no problem with courage as it is, or with hoping to take advantage of a situation, but the one rash mistake that this man had made was that: he hadn't been able to interpret that he was contesting against a man far beyond his league.

The leader of the platoon, Lei Jian Hong howled in grief and indignation, stood up and thundered: "Solitary Falcon! You're ruthless! And since you've killed our brother, we will see to it that you die an even worse death!"

The Solitary Falcon obviously wasn't in a very good mood at the moment, and therefore cursed back: "Go to your mother! This guy dared to offend me, and so he deserves what he got! If you also dare to annoy me, then Li Wu Bei will lose more disciples today!"

The hearts of the remaining nine people puffed up with rage, but they suppressed their anger anyway. There was nothing they could do against this man right now. In case they attacked him as recklessly as their brother had, then the Solitary Falcon was more than capable of killing all nine of them as well. Naturally, their best plan of action would be to temporarily endure the pain of their loss, and then slowly channel that anger into plotting their revenge.

Moreover, it was rather obvious that offending the sanctity a Peak Spirit Xuan would come with a considerable price to pay!

"Falcon, this fight is too boring, it's not as much fun as you and me alone. So how about you and I join hands and sort these guys out first, and then we can go and find some quite place. I'll let you enjoy a good 'Three days and three nights' worth of fighting, and you can give me that Xuan Core in return.... What do you say?" Shi Chang Xiao's one sentence turned everyone's faces pale with fright!

If these two Peak Spirit Xuan masters joined hands, then no one apart from the Three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City would have any chances of escaping their combined strength; even Fei Meng Chen, a Spirit Xuan expert wouldn't be an exception.

After all he was only one man, and wouldn't be able to escape the combined wrath of two men who were both far more powerful than himself.

The Solitary Falcon laughed as his eyes slowly started turning in a circle, scanning the bodies of all the men, who had already started to step back in fear. As they saw the sharp and blood-thirsty eyes of the Solitary Falcon, some people even started preparing to drop their weapons so they could turn around and run in full force at a moment's notice.

The Solitary Falcon started laughing even louder: "Shi Chang Xiao, do you really think I'm stupid enough to help you and your men kill everyone here so that you and your men could get this Xuan Core from me later on with ease?! If I help you kill everyone first, then you and your men will be able to take this Xuan Core from me in a heartbeat, but if I don't... then I can still enjoy a good fight."

Solitary Falcon's argument immediately woke everyone with a start; in case the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao reached an agreement, then these two Peak Spirit Xuan masters would easily be able to annihilate everyone present on the scene; they may not even spare the lives of Shi Chang Xiao's own comrades. Later however, even though the Solitary Falcon would prove out to be weaker than Shi Chang Xiao in their one-on-one combat, he wouldn't mind paying the Xuan Core as a price for a good and satisfying fight; especially considering the fact that he would be guaranteed to survive the fight since he could escape the lone Peak Spirit Xuan master at any time!

In fact, this meant that Shi Chang Xiao would earn far more than the Xuan Core in this deal. It was evident that some of the best experts from all over the continent had gathered to contest for this Xuan Core, and the deaths of these men would be enough to shake the entire power structure of their backing organizations, which would prove out to be a priceless gift for the Shen Ci Empire's

Emperor. And thus, using the Solitary Falcon's assistance to slaughter so many powerful experts could even earn Shi Chang Xiao the title of the Shen Ci Empire's Imperial State Teacher!

## Chapter 186: Talking tree?

---

Shi Chang Xiao was still looking at the Solitary Falcon in the hope that his counterpart would reply in acceptance, but the man turned around without a word and 'bang' 'bang' 'bang' broke into the circle where the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City were standing. Then, his figure flashed forward and made a beeline for Fei Meng Chen and struck him thrice in quick succession, and was then upon the nine remaining disciples of Li Wu Bei before Fei Meng Chen had even shrieked out from pain; he slapped the nine people in their faces, and then proceeded to slapping the six Sky Xuan experts of Shi Chang Xiao's team.....

In a matter of seconds, this Peak Spirit Xuan maniac had managed to demonstrate his prowess by striking almost twenty experts!

This burst of movement clearly demonstrated why he had managed to kill off the Six Brother of the ten disciples of Li Wu Bei; The Solitary Falcon's speed and agility had no equal!

Jun Mo Xie loudly applauded the Solitary Falcon's skill inwardly from his secret hiding place, even though the Solitary Falcon was actually spoiling his entire hard-worked plan; given the temperament of the young master Jun, he wasn't the kind of man to ignore someone's talents!

The Solitary Falcon's violent and aggressive move obviously infuriated everyone present, and undoubtedly aroused their tempers; after all, everyone else was busy trying to understand the twist and turns of the wild schemes in play here, while this warmongering maniac was actually trying to take advantage of it!

Everyone's eyes reddened; not for the Xuan Core's sake, but from rage; and they charged right back at him, not for their rage, but for the sake of the Xuan Core! The Solitary Falcon's expression started becoming increasingly excited as the three Elders of the Silver

Blizzard City charged towards him again, and he stretched his arms out whilst laughing and roaring, prepared to face them all again!

Another silhouette flashed, and Shi Chang Xiao joined the battle circle with one hand dedicated to fight the Solitary Falcon, while his other hand was attacking the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City; the five men started revolving in a carousel like circle, divided into three sides with each man fighting against at least two enemies at the same time.

Shi Chang Xiao had already identified that neither of the two sides was capable of competing against him on their own, and in case he was able to weaken even side, then he could easily use his full force and settle the fight in his favor!

"Ha ha, this is interesting!" Fei Meng Chen laughed as he flashed forward and joined this group of Spirit Xuan experts, punching the Solitary Falcon's back and kicking Shi Chang Xiao's waist to mark his arrival.

Fei Meng Chen was the Yu Tang Empire's State Teacher, and was naturally smart enough to analyze the situation in an instant. He had already realized that in case Shi Chang Xiao succeeded in weakening either of his two oppositions, then the man could easily turn the tables on everyone. However, his own personal strength was even weaker than each of the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City, and therefore all he could do was balance the power of this battle by balancing the three sides so that the battle could continue for as long as possible!

The Six Spirit Xuan experts were presently revolving around in mid-air like a ball.....

Apart from the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City, each of the other men in this battle-ball was being attacked from at least three sides at the same time since they were all completely surrounded by their enemies from all directions; front, right,



right, and back. The eyes of each man were constantly revolving in all four directions in order to thwart the constant wave of incoming attacks.....

All the six Spirit Xuan experts were trying to control the scope of their shot range, after all, if the power of the Xuan Qi was to spread out, then they would end up annihilating the entire city; even Shi Chang Xiao was no exception. Although Shi Chang Xiao had attempted to plot against everyone earlier, he was still reluctant to let his own men die since the lives of six Sky Xuan experts was worth more than the Xuan Core itself. However, as the battle started becoming fiercer and fiercer, their control started to decrease.

A silhouette flickered as the Solitary Falcon surged higher into the Sky in the middle fighting everyone, and then rushed back into the circle laughing loudly.

This move evidently demonstrated the one advantage that the Solitary Falcon had above everyone else; even Shi Chang Xiao: Owing to his exceptional speed, he was capable of withdrawing himself from this battle at any time!

Lei Jing Hong and his companions were busy spectating this battle; but at time when the Solitary Falcon rose up in the sky, another silhouette flickered to his side, leaving him startled. This Silhouette slapped him straight in his face, and then disappeared like a blowing breeze; leaving the victim understandably infuriated!

[The Solitary Falcon is up in the air, so who attacked me this time? ]

Several of his companions turned around to see their leader, Lei Jian Hong falling to ground, trying to grab onto his comrade's arm for support, and clenched their fists in anger upon realizing that their companion had been sneakily attacked again.

Naturally, they felt that his sneak attack must have been the

doing of the Six Sky Xuan experts from the Shen Ci Empire since a faint blue light had flashed at the time of the attack. Believing that their brother was attacked by the Six Shen Ci experts, they angrily charged towards those six men. Lei Jian Hong's team had no idea what had happened, but figured that standing idly could cost them their lives; after all they believed that this mischief was caused by a team of Six Sky Xuan experts, and hence they withdrew their swords without any hesitation and charged out for a battle!

That sly slap on Lei Jian Hong's face was obviously Jun Mo Xie's doing!

The Young Master Jun had cast out the Yin Yang Escape law, and had escaped into the ground, and then the falling rain. Plus, he had even issued a faint blue light to divert the blame; and since the heavens hadn't yet decided to stop the rain from pouring down, Jun Mo Xie managed to escape undetected!

Lei Jian Hong was obviously not able to realize this truth, and charged out feeling anguished by this slap.

And thus, the young master Jun managed to stir up a conflict between these two idly spectating teams as well.

Since Jun Mo Xie's plan wasn't going as intended, the next most beneficial thing to do would be to cause more chaos; the more chaos, the higher the number of dead bodies would be, and the higher the number of dead bodies, the weaker his enemies would become.....

At first, both these parties were trying to save their energies in order to facilitate their plans of stealing the Xuan Core later on, but now that they were charging at each other like mad men.

A piercing scream filled the sky amidst the howling and clashing of sword, marking the sight of first blood!

"AAAAAA!" Even though the Solitary Falcon was the fastest amongst everyone present, but he wasn't the strongest. And even

though he was enjoying this battle more than anyone, he was also the one under the maximum amount of pressure.....

The Solitary Falcon roared wildly, and spread out his arms as his Peak Spirit Xuan level Xuan Qi spread out unabashedly in all directions.

Shi Chang Xiao trembled with fear for one second, by then immediately solidified his stance, and released his own Xuan Qi to withstand the Solitary Falcon's attack.

Fei Meng Chen and the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City immediately flew out! The difference in strength of these six experts was clearly visible in this moment.

The two powerful Qi fields collided mid-air; a fierce and piercing sound was issued and it seemed as if the entire space had come to a stand-still; the rain ceased from pouring down, and started flowing skywards instead, making for a miraculous spectacle.

All building within a twenty meter radius collapsed to the ground almost instantaneously, and all the grass and bushes were uprooted while the trees trunks snapped into two regardless of their thickness, and were sent out flying in all directions.

The fierce after-effect of this collision left everyone staring blackly at each other; even the two Peak Spirit Xuan masters were staring at each other dumbstruck!

Because this annihilation was accompanied by another very strange occurrence.....

One of the breaking trees had very clearly spoken something before snapping into two. The two words of this tree were brief, powerful and sonorous:

"Damn it!"

[Did that tree actually talk? ]

And then the tree actually spoke another sentence:

"Fight if you want to, but why are you punishing trees like me?"

"This is the voice of that mysterious black-masked man!" the Third Elder blurted out.

[It seems that guy has been hiding in that tree all along; this was no miracle.... It has to be him! ]

Even though Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon felt rather strange about this new development, they both simultaneously flew out, and smashed that tree to sawdust!

But they were very disappointed with this talking tree.....

Even though they had all heard the tree talk, there was no one inside it!

The two supreme beings were left staring at each blankly, ashamed at their skill: the two of them had undertaken the task together..... And still the person had somehow managed to slip away!

Jun Mo Xie had been cheerfully hiding inside the trunk of the tree, and was analyzing the merit and demerit of his actions; the benefits he felt he could derive from this situation, the happier he would become. But then suddenly the tree's trunk snapped into two.....

The size of this tree's trunk was enough to conceal Jun Mo Xie's body, so naturally the force that broke it was enough to hurt his spine. He somehow managed to restrain his scream, but wasn't able to restrain his abuses.

He immediately realized his mistake after cursing out, and then tried to make up for it with the sentence he spoke immediately after; however, knowing that he had exposed his hiding spot, he immediately vanished into the ground below.....

The two Peak Spirit Xuan experts immediately felt an empty feeling inside their stomach.

Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao was staring at each other with confused look on their faces at the moment, and were soon joined by the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City. They all started looking at each other, trying to assess if this cheap trickster had somehow managed to fool them all. The Solitary Falcon removed the Xuan Core from his pocket and shouted: "This thing is broken; I don't want it!" his hands trembled as he threw the Xuan Core in Fei Meng Chen's direction.

Fei Meng Chen had already resigned to the fact that he would never get his hands on the Xuan Core, and was naturally overjoyed to realize that the Xuan Core was now falling straight into his hands by a twist of fate. He stepped forward to grab the Xuan Core, but instantly heard a rustling-like sound, which was obviously being made by everyone else's movement in his background.....

# Chapter 187: Fishing in troubled waters

---

Fei Meng Chen grunted and started blaming the Solitary Falcon for his personal misfortunes; [this guy has intentionally thrown the Xuan Core in my direction so he can reduce the pressure on himself. If things had remained as they were earlier, the five of us would have easily injured him... we might have even killed him! ]

He decisively threw the Xuan Core away the moment it touched his palm since this thought crossed his mind, and shouted: "I don't want it!" The Xuan Core suddenly changed its direction and made a beeline for the Third Elder of the Silver Blizzard City.

Fei Meng Chen and the Solitary Falcon were both quite smart, and had intentionally made sure that they didn't toss the Xuan Core towards Shi Chang Xiao. Shi Chang Xiao would have bluntly grabbed the Xuan Core, and would have then fled away with it! His objective was obviously not the same as the Solitary Falcon's since he was here to procure the Xuan Core!

And no one present on this scene was capable of stopping him!

The Solitary Falcon might have the ability to catch up to him, but he was rather unlikely to chase after the man since he only wished to fight.

The Xuan Core continued to fly back and forth the battlefield since no one had the courage to seize it.....

This Xuan Core was no longer a treasure at this point, but was more like a messenger of death! Whoever tried to grab the Xuan Core would inevitably become the target of everyone else!

Shi Chang Xiao had tried to rush in to grab the Xuan Core several times during this time, but ended up getting frustrated since he was obstructed each time by a laughing and giggling Solitary Falcon, and would eventually have to submit into fighting his counterpart master.....

The Solitary Falcon was really enjoying himself, and was laughing non-stop; however Shi Chang Xiao was looking extremely depressed. Although his speed was quite extraordinary, but it was nothing compared to the Solitary Falcon's, and hence there was no way in which he could block the Solitary Falcon's strikes while hoping to acquire the Xuan Core simultaneously. All he could do was anxiously look on and continue to fight against his competition with full force, and turn their faces pale with fright. Even Fei Meng Chen was having a hard time.....

The Xuan Core on the other hand, continued to get transferred back and forth the battlefield for a long time; neither falling to the ground, nor staying in anyone's hands for more than half-a-second.....

In case a modern volleyball player had managed to witness this superb game, the player would have inevitably prostrated in front of these five Spirit Xuan experts in admiration!

The Solitary Falcon's deliberation had allowed Jun Mo Xie to cause more mischief as well; the young master Jun had been stealthily circling around the battlefield, and had been causing more causality; in fact, even Shi Chang Xiao had been cut twice by now.

Jun Mo Xie had managed to find himself a relatively neutral place between the Spirit Xuan experts and the Sky Xuan experts at the time when the Solitary Falcon had tossed the Xuan Core away. However, his situation could best be described as that of a man who's performing a dance on a wire.

Although his body was in a stealth state, but his body was still real, and in case even one of these experts brushed his body, then they would realize his presence, and his life would end-up in a whole lot of danger; after all, the young master Jun was considerably weaker than every man present on the scene.

But he was still willing to undertake this risky task since it was

important for him to control the criticality of this situation. The first most important thing was that, he simply couldn't allow this Xuan Core to fall into Shi Chang Xiao's hands; else his entire plan would crumble. The next most important thing was to ensure Fei Meng Chen's survival; in case he died, then the consequences of the aftermath would be too severe. And the third; he needed to ensure that the Solitary Falcon was able to realize his true potential.

The Tian Xiang Empire's foreign affairs had been keeping a peaceful approach in these past few years, but the Emperor was still slyly trying to weaken the enemy's forces. Fei Meng Chen and Shi Chang Xiao were powerful and influential men in their country, so much so that they could be regarded as the cornerstones of their respective Empires. Therefore, the Jun Family had been asked to ensure that such military powers of the enemy states be weakened, but without starting a war.

Their deaths would obviously be the best way of achieving this objective; however Jun Mo Xie was shamelessly enjoying playing this role of a 'semi-traitor' at the moment.

Whenever Jun Mo Xie would get a chance, he would deliberately try to push the Xuan Core between the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City and the nine remaining disciples of Li Wu Bei; the result was obviously very, very, very effective. The Three Elders were simply unable to cope up with this pressure, in fact, the Sixth and the Ninth Elder had already started to bleed from the corner of their mouths.

As for the nine remaining disciples of Li Wu Bei, they were fighting against an equally strong opposition at the moment. Jun Mo Xie had tactically redirected the Xuan Core towards them about four or five times by now, giving them hope; and whoever received this Xuan Core would inevitably try to flee in full speed in the hope of getting away by fluke, but would inevitably find their way obstructed by either Shi Chang Xiao or the Solitary Falcon, and



would have to toss the Xuan Core back towards someone else at the cost sustaining a few additional injuries.

Even though Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon had noticed something strange about this Xuan Core's movement on occasion, but since they had never heard of a possibility of Jun Mo Xie's stealth abilities in their entire lifetime, they never paid much attention to it.

The Solitary Falcon was obviously really enjoying this confusion, but Jun Mo Xie was enjoying it even more. However, two black dressed men were secretly hiding on top of a tree branch a few meters away; their hawk-like eyes were staring at this confusing battle scene, but it was arousing more and more doubts in their hearts.

"Third Brother, you see that Xuan Core..... I've been trying to read the purity of its aura for a long time now, and there's no doubt that it's a top-notch Xuan Core, but why do I feel something strange about it still?" one of the black-dressed man blinked his eyes twice: "It looks so mouth-watering.... Like I almost want to bite it? I've seen a lot of top-notch Xuan Cores in my lifetime, but I've never felt this way before....." he gulped a mouthful of saliva down his throat.

"Something is wrong; but it's not with the purity of this Xuan Core's aura. However, its force seems more....." the man being referred to as 'Third Brother' paused for a second, shook his head and then continued: "This force seems very similar to one that comes from the Tian Fa cave, but it's still more tempting than the Tian Fa cave!"

"We must find a way to seize this Core, else the boss will....." the third Brother stopped mid-sentence as his entire body trembled with fear.

"Uh..... Third Brother, please don't mention the boss when it's just the two of us..... it gives me the chills." The other black-

dressed man also shivered in fear, and sneakily looked backwards; seemingly afraid that his 'boss' might have suddenly appeared behind him.

"The boss certainly has no time to care for you right now; ever since the second brother has left, the boss has been angrily looking for him. If the boss was to catch a hold of second Brother then... he he he....." the third Brother's face exposed a sly smile, almost as if he would enjoy the sight of this so-called 'second brother' being sorted out by their boss.

"The Second Brother left in search of better future, but is he really better off than us in his freedom? I really don't understand this." The black-dressed man shook his head: "If I ever see him again, I will definitely attack him; I'll tear him apart!"

"You? Hmmmm..... If you were to face him alone, then I think the Second Brother would simply kill you on the spot!" the Third Brother looked dismissingly at his companion: "You're nothing in front of him; do you really think that you can face the Second Brother's claws? Did you even consider them?"

"His claws are indeed powerful, buy I'm sure I can handle myself! Although, they are really powerful, that I must admit!" The man may not be convinced of his inferiority, but he still respected the threat.

"Take note that Shi Chang Xiao is the most powerful one here, and he would try hard to garb the Xuan Core! Prepare to move into action, we're going in for the Xuan Core!" The third brother issued the command and the two men moved into action like a gust of wind. Their foot movement was so magnificently stealth, that it seemed as if they were walking on the raindrops!

However, even though there were several Spirit Xuan experts on the scene, no one noticed them; not even Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon!

It was unclear if these men were even stronger than these two

Peak Spirit Xuan experts.... But it was rather obvious that the two supreme beings had taken no notice of their presence thus far!

Shi Chang Xiao roared, and then issued a Qi field from his body; then, he rushed forward to grab the falling Xuan Core once again. The Xuan Core was flying closely by his body at the moment, and the Solitary Falcon was busy fighting with Fei Meng Chen; this was the best chance that he had seen since the starting of this entire confusion!

The remaining five Spirit Xuan experts were all aware of his intention, but failed to obstruct him anyway. The three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City weren't strong enough to withstand his strength and ducked away pitying their fortunes, only to rejoice in the fact that they wouldn't sustain any further injuries, and looked on helplessly as Shi Chang Xiao advanced towards the Xuan Core.

Although Fei Meng Chen was reluctant to let the Xuan Core fall into Shi Chang Xiao's hands, but his strength was barely at par with the Third Elder of the Silver Blizzard city, and wasn't even remotely enough to match up to Shi Chang Xiao. He had only intended to balance the power of this battle, and had now somehow managed to get himself tangled with the Solitary Falcon in a battle; [ah, why am I so unfortunate...? there's nothing I can do but watch..... ]

Only one man was capable of stopping Shi Chang Xiao, and that one man was the Solitary Falcon. The Solitary Falcon was the quickest and most agile man amongst the 'Eight Great Master', and was second to none; even Shi Chang Xiao wasn't capable of matching his speed. He was the only one who could get to this Xuan Core in time enough to thwart Shi Chang Xiao's plans, but would then have to face the angry man's desperation.

Unfortunately, the Solitary Falcon had no intention of doing so; after all, his intention wasn't to win over the Xuan Core since his addiction for battles was far more powerful than his desire for worldly objects. As far as he was concerned, if could cross swords

with Fei Meng Chen for as long as he wished to, then he was more than willing to let Shi Chang Xiao take the Xuan Core!

The Solitary Falcon had already made up his mind, and Shi Chang Xiao had understood this fact, which is why he had moved into action in full force since he knew that even though several powerful experts were present on the scene, no one would be able to stop him unless the Solitary Falcon decided to cause trouble!

He extended his right hand to grab the Xuan Core as he flew closer to the flying Xuan Core!

Shi Chang Xiao was flying at full speed, just waiting to welcome the Xuan Core in his hands!

The hearts of this supreme master was obviously very excited: [Peak level Nine Xuan Core ah! Finally it's coming into my hands! ]

## Chapter 188: An unforeseen event

---

Shi Chang Xiao had already decided that he'd flee once he had gotten his hands on the Xuan Core. His cultivation level had already reached the peak of Spirit Xuan realm several years ago, but there hadn't been any progress ever since. However, he could attack the next bottleneck with the help of this Xuan Core, and could then reach new and insurmountable heights!

Shi Chang Xiao was confident that he would become capable of waging and winning a battle against Mo Wen Tian after he had succeeded in expanding his Xuan Qi further, and was sure that he could even challenge Li Jue Tian thereafter, which meant that he would rise up in the list of the 'Eight Great Masters'!

If he was successful in defeating Li Jue Tian, then his name would be spoken in the same breath as Yun Bei Chen!

He'd be at the peak of the world!

Even the Shen Ci Empire would benefit from this, and would become the overlord of the Xuan Xuan continent! After all, the strongest man alive, Shi Chang Xiao would belong to the Shen Ci Empire!

Shi Chang Xiao couldn't control his excitement as these thoughts gushed about in his head, so much so that he had even started to thank the Solitary Falcon for allowing him to seize this opportunity!

The Three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City were flatly unable to understand the reason behind the Solitary Falcon's lack of action at the moment, but knew that they simply couldn't allow Shi Chang Xiao to succeed. Therefore, the three of them joined hands once again, and rallied to attack Shi Chang Xiao!

However, Shi Chang Xiao was so close to success at the moment that he completely ignored their advance, and focused his

attention on getting his hands on the Xuan Core first! The three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City had been refraining from using their Qi fields to contest against Shi Chang Xiao for the fear of sustaining injuries, but that fear was nothing compared to the terror that Shi Chang Xiao would reek in case he succeeded in capturing this Xuan Core!

The situation however, had already gotten out of hand now.....

Jun Mo Xie stared at the proceeding helplessly; even though the Yin and Yang Escape law was beyond anyone's strangest imagination, and even though the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao were unable to detect his presence as a result, but even though his silhouette was invisible, his body was real. If he rashly rushed into Shi Chang Xiao's Qi field, and something went wrong then he'd end up in a significant amount of danger; after all, his strength was much weaker in comparison!

[Aren't those two weird looking guys going to do anything?] Jun Mo Xie was rather angry at the moment, and had already started cursing inwardly. In fact, Jun Mo Xie had even forgotten that those two strange looking men weren't under his control.....

[Should I use the Hongjun Pagoda's burst as a last resort?] The Young Master Jun couldn't help wondering; [If things get out of control then I'll use it as a last resort! ]

However, another unexpected turn of events startled everyone again.....

"That Xuan Core belongs to me!" a loud voice rang!

Coincidentally this loud voice's sound coincided with a bolt of thunder; however, the booming sound of this voice actually managed to suppress the sound of the thunder!

The powerful and sonorous voice rang in everyone's ears, and seeped all the way down to the bottom of their souls!

Two black colored figures emerged from their hiding spot at

speeds surpassing that of thunder strikes; one of the two men was in humanly big and burly! In fact, his body was so huge that even Dugu Wudi's stature seemed humble in from of him!

He smashed his way forward and past the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City, and then landing straight in front of Fei Meng Chen and the Solitary Falcon, and started punching them wildly.

The other man floated through the air swiftly and towards Shi Chang Xiao; comparing his body's stealth to smoke would have been an understatement as he casually extended his arm and grabbed the Xuan Core right from under Shi Chang Xiao's nose. Meanwhile, his other hand firmly stretched out to confront the angered Shi Chang Xiao's desperate attack, and solidly collided with Shi Chang Xiao's palm!

"Bang" their collision gave rise to a loud noise, and Shi Chang Xiao was sent staggering back in the air, unable to control his decreasing altitude; the black colored man was already sent out somersaulting through the air, creating a marvelous air show, but then his body suddenly changed its direction in the most bizarre of ways, and he starting speeding away with the Xuan Core!

"Got it, let's go!"

Jun Mo Xie's mind was thrown in a state of complete shock all of a sudden, and he immediately started pushing his Qi into the Hongjun Pagoda to incite the Pagoda into full force rotations in the hope of using its energy to regain control over the situation.

Since Jun Mo Xie had deployed the Pagoda into action under the cover of the Yin Yang Escape Law's stealth, the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao took no notice of it, but the body of that black colored man who was bolting away with the Xuan Core immediately trembled, and he suddenly turned around. His sparkling eyes started searching for the source of this momentum, clearly reflecting the desires of his heart; however, his speed of escape still didn't reduce.

Even the other black colored man's body trembled at the instant when the Hongjun Pagoda was set into motion, and he too started looking around in all directions.

That big and burly man was engaged in combat against five Spirit Xuan experts at the moment, but he was making no attempt to dodge their attacks. In fact, he was readily exchanging blows with them, kicking them back for every kick, and punching them back for every punch he received. His body had turned into a punching bag for the five Spirit Xuan Experts, and all five of them punched and kicked him several times in quick succession, forcing the man to cover his stomach with his hands for protection as he screamed twice to relieve himself of his physical pain.

However, his other hand still continued to punch the three Elder of the Silver Blizzard City, and the sheer weight of his hands was enough to give three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City something to think about!

This man continued to exchange blows with the five Spirit Xuan experts till his comrade issued to command for retreat. However, once the command was given, he changing his strategy and started trying to escape away from his enemies. However, everyone had already realized his intention, and they all quickly formed a circle around him, kicking and punching him in unison to ensure that he wouldn't be able to escape out alive!

Suddenly another astonishing thing happened.....

The burly man made no move to defend himself this time either, and charged out of the encirclement, taking all the attacks on his body. Even though his body trembled under the effect of the paralyzing pain, he paid no attention to it until he had forced his way out of the encirclement; then, he howled in pain, twisted his waist, and spat out a mouthful of blood....

And then, he spread out his giant feet, and bolted away from the crowd to safety.



The Solitary Falcon, Fei Meng Chen and the three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City simply looked on with dismay in their eyes!

This man's cultivation level must have already reached the Spirit Xuan realm, which was quite an exceptional and rare feat in its own merit. However, even though it seemed as if he was marginally stronger than Fei Meng Chen, he was still visibly much weaker than the Solitary Falcon! Everyone present had already been able to assess this very clearly by now!

However, even then this mad maniac had somehow pulled off a stunt such as fighting solo against five Spirit Xuan experts without defending himself; a feat that even Yun Bei Chen wouldn't dream of attempting!

Even though these Spirit Xuan experts had already consumed a fair amount of their energies, they were still all Spirit Xuan experts! Even if a team of five Spirit Xuan strong had confronted these experts, they wouldn't have acted in such a bold manner either; especially when one considers the fact that these five Spirit Xuan experts were all in a very desperate and hysterical state of mind at the moment.....

This man had not only survived so many blows, but had actually managed to escape away at the mere cost of some blood loss! And even though he had sustained some injuries, his injuries still didn't affect the speed at which he was fleeing away from them! [What is going on? Isn't this affair getting stranger with every passing moment?!]

This sudden change of events had obviously left Shi Chang Xiao the most depressed out of the lot, after all, he was closest to success at the time these two men had intervened. Even though his anger was on the verge of exploding, the suspicion of his heart suppressed it.....

[There are barely a handful of people in this world who are actually capable of walking straight past my Qi Field, and then

repel me in combat to steal away something from right under my nose... and I can name all of them..... but who was this guy? ]

[The only thing that I'm sure is that, this man isn't one of the 'Eight Great Master'..... but who apart from us would have the courage to charge into a tiger's den in this manner? ]

The other black colored man's scream instantly woke up Shi Chang Xiao from his train of thoughts, and he immediately realized that this man had a partner, and therefore he naturally thought of intercepting the man's partner instead. However, he turned around and witnessed the madness with which that man was making his escape from an encirclement of five Spirit Xuan experts, and was left glued to his spot with his mouth hung open in shock.....

A team of two people had somehow managed to sneak in, and had then managed to steal a Xuan Core from the hands of two Peak Spirit Xuan experts, four Spirit Xuan experts, and about twenty Sky Xuan experts.....

If this news ever got out, it would bring them all a whole lot of shame.

However, no one had any time to think about all the disgrace they would have to suffer since they were still busy standing glued to their spot speechlessly out of utter shock and disbelief! The fighting capabilities of these two people were unheard off! Even Yun Bei Chen wasn't capable of doing what these two men had just demonstrated!

"My God, who were those monsters?" an Earth Xuan who had been spectating the fight from the outermost periphery after injuring himself severely in battle, opened his mouth in horror and spoke up, not even bothering about the raindrops that went straight into his mouth.

Even though his reaction was a fairly normal one, but Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon immediately halted in their steads

even though they had just decided to follow after these two people! They both stared at each other with eyes wide open; anyone could clearly see the look of horror in their usually confident eyes!

Fei Meng Chen slowly flew over towards them, and asked with a serious look on his face, "Were they?" he spoke his sentence in a rather soft tone.

The Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao grunted; the face of these two Peak Spirit Xuan masters had already turned pale. Fei Meng Chen's face also changed colors, making a total 'pale face' count of three.....

The three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City were also looking at each other in horror. The Sixth Elder wiped the wisps of blood which was staining the corner of his mouth: "The Tian Fa is....."

"My ass!" the Third Elder snapped angrily: "You think you're so smart? Haven't we been ashamed enough for one day... isn't this already enough?" then he sighed, and said: "Since they have already joined this fray, we should immediately pack up and get out of here with the Little Princess."

"Would they come back again?" Shi Chang Xiao frowned as he muttered to himself; he stretched out his hand, and looked at his palm which now had four red marks on it! [If it wasn't for my Qi field's protection, then I would have lost my hand! This palm mark resembles that of a wild beast rather than that of a human... ... ]

Shi Chang Xiao flexed his fingers, sighed and said: "and now my hand has touched them, but is that legend really true?" the fear of the trauma he had just suffered was still lingering in his voice.

## Chapter 189: Lethal flying knives

---

"You've already given up? I think you are capable of catching up with them, beating them up and recovering that Xuan Core if you want to..... you just need to have the spine for it!" the Solitary Falcon gloated a schadenfreude smile: "That's right! And maybe you'll encounter a supreme being... and who knows, maybe you'll win and your epic battle will be remembered for an eternity to come....."

Shi Chang Xiao's entire body stiffened as he heard these words; he furiously turned around and ferociously roared: "Shut your trap! Keep your damned words to yourself unless you wish to die!"

It must be mentioned that Shi Chang Xiao was not only one of the 'Eight Great Masters', but also a rather old-fashioned and civilized man, and therefore it was quite difficult for most people to imagine him screaming abuses at anyone; let alone another member of the 'Eight Great Masters'! He was staring right in the eyes of the Solitary Falcon, and everyone else had already started preparing themselves for the inevitable fight which would normally follow after such an exchange!

However, beyond all expectations, this exchange failed to rekindle the flame of war!

If these words had been spoken under any other circumstances, then it would have resulted in a very sharp response from the Solitary Falcon, and would have aroused a fierce battle between the two masters. However, the Solitary Falcon not only did not lose his temper, but actually broke into laughter instead.

Most people were left standing dumbstruck with a perplexed look on their face, unable to understand the reason. However, several people seemed to be depriving pleasure from the misfortunes of their counterparts at the moment: [if an 'Eight Great Masters' like figure was left tumbling in the air, then why should I feel

ashamed? ]

The nine disciples of Li Wu Bei had already realized that even though their Sixth Brother wasn't moving after facing the Solitary Falcon, he hadn't yet succumbed to his death, but was in a coma at the moment; inching closer to his death. They were all huddled next to a big tree at the moment, using one hand to assist their injured comrades, while using the other to maintain their guard. Out of these ten people, six had sustained injuries in the battle which had just taken place, while the Sixth Brother wasn't just very seriously injured, but had also managed to land himself in a coma.

"The Xuan Core is gone, so what's the plan now? Young Li will be very disappointed." Lei Jian Hong sighed, and said: "Who could have thought that even using our entire strength in a battle would turn out to be completely useless....."

"No one could have..... since even two of the 'Eight Great Masters' were unable to do anything, I believe that even our own Master would have come out empty handed in this battle.... So please don't take this to your heart Big Brother."

The young woman stationed behind him spoke in a low tone: "Moreover, even the Three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City were rendered useless, so what are we worth in such a fight?" her words immediately eased the tension inside their group.

"The Six Brother is now..... Young Li would have wanted to use him to keep an eye on Jun Mo Xie, so what about that now?" Lei Jian Hong frowned under the effect of the pain he felt upon watching his comrade's nearly lifeless body.

"Young Li hails from the Imperial Tutor's household; he's clever and resourceful, and he'll surely find someone else to carry out this task." The woman replied: "If he isn't able to find any suitable candidates, then I'll take over that responsibility."

"I'm interested in knowing who those two black people were?

How could they have been so powerful? There are only a handful of people in this world with so much power, but I didn't recognize either of those two! What's even more surprising is that even though they were weaker than Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon, these two men still aren't chasing after them..... The Solitary Falcon didn't come here for the Xuan Core, so I can understand his inaction, but even Shi Chang isn't chasing after them..... which is very surprising since he was willing to risk everything for that Xuan Core earlier....."

"You're right; I believe that even though the strength of those two people was lesser than the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao, they have surely reached the Spirit Xuan realm. Although we don't know who these mysterious experts are... therefore I can only conclude that their origination must be beyond the scope of our knowledge!"

The woman's beautiful eyebrows puckered in puzzlement as she asked: "But what's bothering me even more is this..... Why do the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao seem afraid of them? Is there a force in this world that even these two masters are afraid of provoking?"

"Could there really be a force in this world that even the 'Eight Great Masters' are afraid to provoke?" Lei Jian Hong frowned.

No member in his team was capable of answering this question.

But their conversation had already caught the attention of Jun Mo Xie, who was still in his stealth state. Jun Mo Xie's hands had already started to itch at the time he heard that they were Li You Ran's companions, and this itch got even worse when he heard that Li You Ran had asked them to keep an eye on him. As a result, Jun Mo Xie simply couldn't control his urge to kill again.

The rain was finally beginning to ease down a bit.

"Brother Shi, Brother Falcon, Brother Fei Meng Chen, if the three of us have wronged you today, then please allow us to make up for

it with some of our finest tea the next time we meet." The Third Elder of the Silver Blizzard City stepped forward, and said: "If there's nothing else left to say, then we will take your leave now."

Several distant silhouettes had already started dispersing by now; several of the City's forces including the military had gathered to plunder the Xuan Core. They had all already realized that it was fruitless to linger around anymore since the Xuan Core was already gone, and had chosen to return to their shelters over standing pointlessly in the rain.

Shi Chang Xiao replied lightly as the Three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City started to leave: "Please don't blame yourself for the falling out here today; but I will take you up on that invitation later on."

The three Elders chuckled, leaped upwards, converged with their other four companions, and left.

A hurricane stormed the sky as soon as they left, and it seemed that the Solitary Falcon had also decided to leave; but without even properly saying his goodbyes. Although he did say a few parting words before he left, however it seemed that his voice was sounding from a fair distance away: "It offends me that the Silver Blizzard City thinks they can charm us all by their silly tea, and oh, tell Han Feng Xue that I'll come looking for him! Li Wu Bei's disciples, tell your master that I'll be ready in case he wishes to come around causing trouble!"

Even though his voice was still echoing in the sky, his body had already vanished.

"Falcon, be careful of what you say." Shi Chang Xiao quickly responded, but it was unclear if the Solitary Falcon heard his remark since there was no reply.

Fei Meng Chen chuckled, turned around, and leisurely floated away! He had travelled thousands of miles from the Yu Tang Empire with the sole goal of capturing the Xuan Core, but even

though the Xuan Core had disappeared away in front of his eyes, he didn't seem very disappointed since he was wise enough to realize that he was lucky to be alive.

Seeing that the crowd had already dispersed, Shi Chang Xiao sighed: [Those people are still out there.... I must meet with Yun Bei Chen and Li Jue Tian to discuss some proposals..... ] his heart was becoming more and more upset with the turn of events, which was making him extremely anxious since the Xuan Core had slipped right out of his hands.....

"Sir." A Sky Xuan expert respectfully addressed Shi Chang Xiao.

"You will return to the Shen Ci camp, and you'll stay there. I have something I need to take care of personally; I will join you there later on." Shi Chang Xiao stated after pondering for a long while.

"Yes!" the six men accepted their order. Four of these men extended their arms to support the two men who had sustained some injuries; they glared wildly at Li Wu Bei's disciples once again, then turned around to salute Shi Chang Xiao, and then dispersed into the rain.

Shi Chang looked at his hands again as slowly paced about alone in the air; it seemed as if a strange but desolate feeling had overtaken his heart.

He suddenly looked skywards, and then sighed as he took out a vial, and tossed it towards Lei Jian Hong before he flashed away; his flickering body was seen speeding away from Lei Jing Hong's team once, then a few meters away in a blur, and then completely vanished from sight....

Lei Jian Hong looked carefully at the small jade vial in his hand, and spotted two words on it: Resurrection Fluid! He couldn't help rejoicing his fortune and looked up to thank Shi Chang Xiao, but the man had already left by then.

This 'Resurrection Fluid' was a trade mark of Shi Chang Xiao's



family, and they were the only ones capable of manufacturing it. Although this secret medicine may not necessarily be capable of reviving the dead, but it was more than capable of ensuring the survival of anyone alive!

Lei Jian Hong quickly ordered his comrades, who immediately and carefully picked up the Six Brother's body. Lei Jian Hong's senses suddenly started tingling to warn him of an impending danger as he opened the Jade vial, and his body subconsciously ducked away to avoid this unseen danger.

Several screams sounded almost simultaneously!

Four of the people who had gathered around the Six Brother immediately started to bleed from their nose and mouth, and then silently dropped to the ground in front of them!

A small throwing knife was sticking out of their chest, and it was evident from the manner in which the blade had pierced their bodies that the blade had already buried itself all the way into their hearts!

Each knife had demanded a life!

And all four men had died a silent death!

Three of them were Earth Xuan experts, while the fourth one was a Sky Xuan expert!

"Young....." Lei Jian Hong reached out. His body immediately stiffened as he crazily jumped, "Who are you? Come and stand in front of me! Don't hide in the dark and attack us behind our backs..... come out you son of a bi\*\*h..... come out.... You ... you.... You... where are you....."

Lei Jian Hong roared furiously as he continued to curse, while his eyes had already reddened with rage! It seemed that he had already lost his mind to chaos since he had already started running in circles in a frenzied attempt to find his attacker, but was unable to locate anyone even after searching for a long time; he finally knelt

down to the ground, and burst into tears!

The other four remaining companions of his' were all as shocked as he was, and had also started rushing about screaming and crying.

The five of them tried to search again, but were unable to find any traces of their enemy; they had never imagined that the ten of them would be able to get out of a fight against a team of Sky Xuan experts and even some Spirit Xuan experts with just one casualty. But now they had suddenly been caught off-guard after the battle had ended, and four more of their people had suddenly died!

Lei Jian Hong bent down and pulled out the knife sticking out of the Ninth Brother's chest to inspect it, and gnashed his teeth as he said: "I've never seen anything like this throwing knife before.... our enemy obviously designed this specially to fool us; as long as you're able to spot the origin of this knife, attack ruthlessly! We must avenge the death of our brothers!"

"They won't die in vain, we vow to avenge each fallen man!" the four others simultaneously shouted out in anger.

The woman suddenly exclaimed: "Where are the other three knives?" they all turned around, and then the suddenly froze in fear. Someone had actually managed to remove the three remaining knives from the chests of their fallen victims, and this mysterious attacker had even gone ahead and ruthlessly slit the throats of these men to confirm the kills!

Someone had somehow managed to steal those three remaining knives in a very short period of time, leaving the blood these victims to flow out of their open wounds!

Everyone looked at each other as a burst of horror surged through their psyches!

# Chapter 190: A second time

---

The blood was constantly pouring out of the dead bodies while the rain continued to pour from the sky above. The blood slowly started turning pink instead of red, and the soon became colorless.

The young woman had just turned around to retrieve the knife from the dead body closest to her since she wished to compare the blades. Her entire body started to shake from fear upon realizing that the blade had disappeared from such close proximity.

[Do ghosts really exist?] All five people were completely shocked!

[Someone actually managed to silently sneak into a circle of five Sky Xuan experts undetected! Even an normal Spirit Xuan expert may not be capable of accomplishing this feat; and in case this man has already reached the Spirit Xuan realm, then why would he need to act in much a secretive manner to fight us?! ]

[But if this man isn't a Spirit Xuan experts, then what other possible explanation could there be? ]

[Explanation or no explanation, we definitely shouldn't stay here for one more second! ]

[But we can't leave our brothers here.... ]

[The five of us could easily get out if we leave the four dead ones here, but what about the Sixth Brother? He's still alive.... Only barely so..... but if we leave him here then he will die for sure! ]

[Could things get any worse? ]

The five of them decided to pick up one person each, and even though they were trying to get away as far as possible, as quickly as possible, their eyes would still glance back from time to time; even the pouring rain wasn't enough to simmer down the fire of hatred in their eyes, and it seemed that they were looking back to get just one glimpse of their attacker.....

Those throwing knives belonged to Jun Mo Xie; he had already decided to kill them at the time when he realized that they were Li You Ran's friends. They had obviously been asked to participate in the fight for the Xuan Core by him, and would most likely leave the Tian Xiang City once the fight for the Xuan Core was over, but since Li You Ran was able to seek their assistance once..... he could always do it again!

Moreover, since these people were Li You Ran's seniors, Jun Mo Xie simply couldn't take any chances with them. These Sky Xuan experts might have turned out to be completely useless in this fight since they were contesting against Spirit Xuan experts, but these people would still be capable of threatening the Jun Family's existence under normal circumstances! If the Li Family decided to pick a fight with the Jun Family, then they could easily use these people to a terrifying effect!

These people had just fought a tough battle, and had already exhausted the majority of their Xuan Qi; had the hitman Jun allowed this opportunity to slip by, then he would have regretted it forever.

And therefore, the young master Jun had decided to murder them under the cover of this rain!

However, the young master Jun had never imagined that he would actually succeed in killing all four of his intended targets! Controlling the direction of four knives while being in a stealth state had already pushed Jun Mo Xie to his current limits, which is why he had never thought that each of his strike would actually claim a life.....

[I actually managed to kill a Sky Xuan expert! ] The young master Jun couldn't help feeling complacent about his achievement.

Everyone had already left the scene, while any remaining dead bodies had been cleared up the City's patrol. The venue which had been the center of an enormous and fierce battle between some

legendary warriors was now completely empty, leaving behind only the rubble of the broken buildings and the decapitated vegetation as a requiem. Even the blood had already been washed away by the rain, but the intense smell of blood was surely going to linger for a long time to come.....

Lei Jian Hong's remaining team had been walking in silence for a long, long time now when he suddenly turned around and whispered to a tree: "Ha Ha, I'm still waiting for you....."

He waited a while, and then whispered to another tree: "You think I won't catch you someday?"

His voice was soft and low, but contained almost traces of anger; it seemed rather indifferent instead, almost as if he was talking to a friend in general. But there was no one present.....

He waited for some time, and then his voice rang again in an indifferent tone as he repeated his sentence: "I'm still waiting for you....."

He paused for a while, and then spoke again: "Come out? Don't you want me to personally chop your body to pieces?"

He repeated himself again after a while.

But still no one answered him.

He continued to whisper to the trees on the way from time to time, seemingly not getting disheartened by the lack of response from the other end. Had a doctor been listening to his emotionless threats then that doctor would have diagnosed Lei Jian Hong with a mental illness.....

He continued to repeat himself, seemingly never lacking the perseverance to stop.....

The two black colored men reappeared in the field again. The big and burly man opened his big lips and announced: "Who are you? You know we are here now? Stop playing games, and quickly come out!"

These two mysterious people were obviously the ones who had captured the Xuan Core earlier, and had then fled the scene. However, Jun Mo Xie had initiated the Hongjun Pagoda's spin at full force at the time they were escaping away, hoping that it would attract them into coming back here to meet with him.

The logic was very simple; even an expert of Shi Chang Xiao's caliber had been unable to figure out the falsehood of this Xuan Core, but these two men had realized that this Xuan Core was different than a normal one. In fact, it almost felt as if these two people were extremely sensitive to the Aura coming from this fake Xuan Core....

Obviously, in case Jun Mo Xie's assumption was incorrect, then his wait would have been fruitless.

Although these two people had sensed the Aura which coming out from the Hongjun Pagoda, they had also assumed that the source of this Aura would be extremely powerful. Moreover, they had also come prepared to return empty handed since they weren't sure if the source of the Aura would actually reveal itself.

However, even though the source of Aura didn't reveal itself immediately, these people were a bit skeptical to leave so early; [if someone has intentionally exuded this aura, then the person obviously had something mind. Perhaps another plan; or maybe he just wanted to say hello to us...] since the purity of that Aura had already coveted their desires, these men had immediately decided to take the risk of coming around a second time, fully aware that it could be very dangerous. Thus, these two people hid themselves immediately after escaping away with the Xuan Core, and waited till everyone had left, and then returned to the battle scene again.

After all, the purity of this Aura was the world's most seductive thing for them! No jewels, no riches, no techniques or power, and no medicines could ever have attracted them into taking such a big risk!

Even though Jun Mo Xie hadn't been sure of it at the time, but the plan had gone exactly as intended thus far!

Jun Mo Xie had managed to use the Xuan Core to instigate a battle between the competitors; he had managed to damage Li You Ran's strength by killing and weakening Lei Jian Hong's team, and had even managed to hurt the Three Elders of the Silver Blizzard City. This plan had indeed worked out very well so far, because these people were sworn enemies of the Jun Family and could cause some major trouble for the Jun Family in the future. Even though he hadn't succeeded in completely eliminating his enemies, he had at least managed to delay the arrival of their threats!

Jun Mo Xie had managed to plan all this, and had somehow managed to execute this plan to perfection with the help of some improvisation! But as far as these two mysterious people were concerned, it was time for Jun Mo Xie to start wracking his brain again!

'Ha Ha', the sound of a low, weirdly mystical, but powerful and sonorous laughter originated from a few meters in front of these two men. [There is nothing in front... just a tree! But that sound definitely comes from in front of us! ]

Although the origination of these two people was very mysterious, but even they had never witnessed something this strange in their entire lives! They simultaneously stepped back, and immediately brought their hands up to their chests in defense!

"What the hell are you? Come out!"

Without any signs of warning, a third black robed man unexpectedly emerged in front of these two men in the most bizarre of ways! This man's body drilled its path out of the ground, almost as if the ground underneath his feet was just an illusion! The strength of these two men had already reached the Spirit Xuan realm, but even then they had never heard of a technique as weird as this one!

It could be said that even Yun Bei Chen would've refused to believe that something like this was ever possible!

It was simply too strange!

But another very strange thing had happened right before this mysterious third man had made his entry; just before this man appeared, the two mysterious black people had sensed a faint hint of that same Aura which had lured them here, and it seemed to be coming straight from the body of this third man.

The two of them were now completely sure that this was no illusion!

"What is your name sire? What's your purpose for bringing us here?" the tall and slender man asked cautiously.

"I obviously have my reasons for bringing you here." The newly emerged mysterious man replied lightly: "I'm Feng Jue Qing; may I know your names?"

"You don't know our history?" the burly man asked with a puzzled look on his face, [I thought this man was something extraordinary when he broke out of the ground in that manner, but his name is obviously fake.... I have a strange feeling about this..... ]

"I know your history, but I don't know your names; after all, isn't it very difficult to guess them given your history, right?" this third man was obviously Jun Mo Xie. [If I hadn't guessed your origination, then why would I have come here? ]

"Oh, that's right.... I'm Long Crane, and this is my fourth Brother, Big Bear." The slender black man, Long Crane nodded as he spoke: "We've heard a lot about you Brother Feng Jue Qing! We've been dying to meet a man of your renowned reputation; we consider ourselves very fortunate for your company today!"

"You've heard the name Feng Jue Qing before?" Jun Mo Xie tilted his head, [I've heard this name for the first time in my life, but



you've actually heard it before? Don't tell me.... have I carelessly borrowed a famous celebrity's name? ]

The man called Big Bear replied with a straight face: "Isn't that what your people say as a courtesy remark? Don't they just pretend that they've already heard of your name?"

[Ah! Damn it! ]

"He he, you've actually travelled two thousand miles to the Tian Xiang City for a peak level nine Xuan Core?" Jun Mo Xie scratched his nose.

"This is a condensed peak level nine Xuan Core! Ordinary experts might have been taken in by it, but fortunately, we have too many years of experience....." Long Crane turned and tossed the fake Xuan Core which Jun Mo Xie had fabricated, [this trip had turned out to be completely useless, but it seems that things could get better now. ]

He looked at Jun Mo Xie meaningfully and spoke: "However, we don't think that our trip would be a complete waste now that we've met you sire; we now believe that there are a lot of unknown great things awaiting us here!"

# Chapter 191: The real objective

---

"Naturally. I can give you things far more valuable than this Xuan Core." Jun Mo Xie's voice was full of temptation. Jun Mo Xie obviously couldn't fulfil his words on his own, but as long as he had the Hongjun Pagoda to support him, he could give these people things far more valuable than they could ever imagine.

"Perhaps you've misunderstood us; we only came here in search of this condensed Core, and not for money or anything similar." Long Crane looked at Jun Mo Xie with a hint of pain and disappointment: "We're simply here for this condensed Core; we don't intend on doing anything else."

Jun Mo Xie was paying special attention to their words, and realized that these people were referring to the Xuan Core as 'condensed' Core, and he could sense that these two people considered these two things to be completely different from each other.

"Brother, don't you think that this guy is talking too much nonsense? Kid, just get out of here quickly! You're really pissing me off!" Big Bear's eyes were glaring at Jun Mo Xie: "Otherwise, I'll beat you death! Your life is meaningless anyway, so we might as well use it for some enjoyment huh... what do you say third brother?"

"Beat me to death? Are you sure that you're strong enough?" Jun Mo Xie batted his eyelids as he spoke his words in a rather proud and self-confident manner.

Although Jun Mo Xie was rather surprised that his bold attitude hadn't completely terrified this person, he knew well that he would need to continue with this charade anyway.

"Maybe not." Big Bear sincerely shook his head, and then puffed up his chest: "But you certainly don't have the strength to kill me!"

"Was I even talking to you? Did I say that I wish to kill you? Although I'll say this, I admire your strength just as you admire mine!" Jun Mo Xie looked at that man in confusion: "Big Bear, aren't you the fourth born child?"

"Yes ah! How do you know?" Big Bear scratched his head as he looked at Jun Mo Xie with a rather surprised expression on his face.

Jun Mo Xie was left completely dumbstruck. [How do I know? Your third brother just introduced you as his fourth brother, and you're still asking 'how I know'? I thought you were just playing dumb... but I guess I was wrong; you really are as dumb as you sound! ]

"You really are the fourth idiot!" Jun Mo Xie searched his belly and brain for a long time to find a better adjective, but wasn't very successful at it.

"How do you know my childhood name? Did the second brother tell you this? Have you met the second brother?" Big Bear's eyes glared at Jun Mo Xie again: "You've certainly met him, haven't you? Tell me, how do you know? And I'm warning you; don't call me by that name again! It really irritates me!"

"Uh.... I see... I guess I'll just call you Big Bear.... Or Brother Bear." Jun Mo Xie decided to take the advice.

"That's more like it." Big Bear proudly shook his head: "I prefer Big Bear... but I guess that Brother Bear isn't that bad a name either....."

Jun Mo Xie was at a complete loss of words. [I've seen some reckless idiots before also, who just go about causing trouble; take the Dugu boys for example, they are quite stupid in their own merit.... but I've never seen such a big fool in my entire life..... ]

[You really are.... ]

[You really are worth of being a legendary fool, Big Bear! Your

stupidity is simply unfathomable! ]

Jun Mo Xie seemed a bit tired now since he had been using his own Qi to keep the Hongjun Pagoda in motion. If he stopped using his energy to keep the Pagoda in motion, then these people would be able to sense his true strength.

This would obviously not be good for Jun Mo Xie, and he might even end up in a lot of trouble since these two people were only entertaining him because he was coming across a very mysterious man at the moment, who could emit the kind of energy they cherished the most.

"Please state your intentions clearly, Sire." Long Crane was cautiously looking at Jun Mo Xie. Although he could intuitively feel that this mysterious man wasn't very strong, but he still found it rather strange that he was unable to sense the true extent of the man's strength. Moreover, this man's body was exuding a very delicious energy; the kind that no high-end Xuan Beast could resist!

"State my intention? Well, that's rather simple. I would like to trouble the two of you with a task." Jun Mo Xie decided to be straightforward rather than beating around the bush any longer.

"Ha Ha Ha, you'd like us to do something for you? Do you know who we are? Why do you think that we'll help you?" Long Crane broke into laughter at first, and then continued in a mocking tone: "Do you think that you can blackmail us into doing anything just because you have something that we desire?! You Sire, are simply too naive! Just remind yourself that we actually managed to pilfer this Condensed Core from the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao very smoothly. And don't forget that they didn't even have the courage to chase after us. Do you really think that you're stronger than the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao?"

"Stop acting like you're some super strong humans. You're just high-end Xuan beasts. You may be able to deceive other people, but

not me; and if you really weren't interested in what I have to offer, then you would not have come back! As far as 'grabbing' that Core is concerned, do you really think that you did it on your own? You might be strong enough to withstand a few attacks from Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon, but do you really believe that you would've gotten away as comfortably in case they genuinely engaged you in combat? Do you actually think that they were afraid of your individual strength?" Jun Mo Xie's double-meaning tone was genuinely awe-inspiring; he seemed to be reminding them of their position but was somehow managing to do it without angering them.

This mysterious duo had engaged several Spirit Xuan and Sky Xuan experts in the past, and had managed to get away with ease each time. However, they were both aware that their strength wasn't enough to compete against Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon at the same time. Even though their corporeal bodies were far more powerful, sturdier, and energetic than a normal Spirit Xuan human being's body, but they knew well that it wouldn't be easy for them to contest against an actual Spirit Xuan in a full-fledged fight.

Even though their self-respect would force them to believe otherwise, these two top-notch Xuan beasts were well aware of this fact, and couldn't help feeling at a complete loss for words at the moment!

Jun Mo Xie obviously realized this simple fact, and decided against provoking them any further; therefore, he simply laughed and said: "Since we can all benefit by helping each other, then why should we fight over such petty things? If the two of you feel that my conditions and offers are too harsh at the moment, then take some time and discuss the pros and cons of my offer for a while!"

"Although you two are quite powerful already, but breaking past the next bottleneck won't be very easy for either of you anytime soon; I can help you with that. Especially when you consider the

fact that the two of you are already at a very advanced stage, it will be very difficult for you to find someone with the knowledge and experience to help you make the next breakthrough..... But I can provide you with all that; I can provide you with the things you need the most... and the things you lack..... the things that are most scarce in this world.... Isn't that a good thing for you?"

"Strength is the most important thing in this world! If you're not strong enough, then your end will come sooner or later, or perhaps you'll just end up fighting for a Xuan Core like this one like everyone else!"

Jun Mo Xie exposed an evil smile: "Although that time is still far away, but everyone in the Xuan Xuan Continent knows what happens with respect to a Xuan Beast's evolution. Once a beast reaches the peak of its present stage, it may or may not be able to advance any further... and once a Xuan Beast starts to age, his strength eventually degrades! And when that time comes, even an ordinary Spirit Xuan expert could kill you in battle! Don't tell me, has the dark and gloom of the Tian Fa forest already erased the memory of the world outside it from your minds?"

Both these "people" started breathing heavily all of a sudden, and it seemed that Jun Mo Xie's acidic words had already corroded down to the bottom of their hearts.

"Just think about it... the outside world is so beautiful... you won't have to worry about food, or lodging, and just think about all the beautiful, beautiful women, and all those colorful things..... as long as you are strong enough, you could have every pleasure that this world has to offer.... at your fingertips!"

Jun Mo Xie continued to tempt them: "Need I remind you of all the benefits you could get if you managed to evolve further? .... And in exchange, I only ask this one thing of you! My task may last a few days' time, but you'll get a lifetime of freedom and immense strength in return! Isn't that enough?"

"Though your words make a lot of sense, but we have a habit; we don't take orders from the weak! So if you really wish to impress us, then show us that you're stronger than us; else why would we need to take orders from you?" Long Crane thought for a long while before replying, but his eyes seemed to be sparkling at this point.

These two "people" were considered the King Beasts inside the Tian Fa forest! And such top-notch Xuan Beasts had their honor, so much so that they would never bow down to the weak even if they had an extreme desire or need of something that the 'weak' had to offer in return for their submission!

Ever since Jun Mo Xie had realized that he could attract high-end Xuan Beasts to himself, and that he could even help a Xuan Beast in evolving further, he had started planning for this. His intention behind attracting the top-notch beasts from the Tian Fa forest was simple; if he was able to attract the best and the most powerful beasts of the Tian Fa forest to his side, then he wouldn't need to fear any power in this world!

However there was one other prerequisite, that is, he would need to find a way to make these beasts obey his orders; but only Yun Bei Chen was powerful enough to command their strength!

Jun Mo Xie was well aware that he wasn't just trying to control an infant Iron Winged Panther anymore, but a dignified Peak Level Nine Xuan Beast; and therefore, he knew that he would need to plan everything very meticulously. In case even one flaw of his plan was exposed, then not only would he stand to lose his grip on these Xuan Beasts, but his own life may end up in a whole lot of danger!

Therefore, the young master Jun had carried out his plan very precisely; he had first spread the news about this Xuan Core across the whole continent to incite the interest of the various powers of this world in the hope that this news also reaches the ears such top-notch Xuan Beasts. In case so many powerful forces were to

contest for a Xuan Core, then these beasts were also rather unlikely to sit back and watch.

Jun Mo Xie's first objective was obviously to improve his Family's position before the starting of the war by weakening all hostile strengths, but he only had one ultimate objective: To attract the King Beasts! And then tame them!

He was well aware that he wouldn't have the strength to do just that, but felt that he could use the Hongjun Pagoda for support in this case! Even though he wasn't strong enough to do this on his own, but he still felt that his idea was justified; [If I already have the strength of a Spirit Xuan experts, then what would I need these Xuan Beasts for? ]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had been training day and night ever since in order to strengthen his body enough to support the connection with the Hongjun Pagoda for prolonged periods of time. The additional mastery over the 'Yin Yang Escape' law had allowed him to push things ahead of schedule.

The reason he had asked Jun Wu Yi to find him some Xuan Core was simple; he needed to conduct some experiments in order to make the appropriate preparations!



# Chapter 192: Chapter 192 - Cheating for victory?

---

However, Jun Mo Xie was still holding back until he had at least broken past the bottleneck and into the second layer of the Hongjun Pagoda since his strength would then be considered at par with that of an Earth Xuan expert by the standards of the Xuan Xuan continent; but before that time, the risk was simply too big!

However, the Xue Hun Manor's threat forced Jun Mo Xie to proceed with his plan ahead of schedule!

Although he still had some time to prepare himself, he impulsively decided to launch his plan even though it was still not ready for the execution phase!

Perhaps this plan was the reason why Jun Mo Xie was prepared to boldly go up against the Xue Hun Manor!

Of course, executing the plan at this stage would mean that the chances of success would be very less, but Jun Mo Xie decided to try anyway; because it was now or never. In case his plan didn't work as intended, then the Xue Hun Manor would destroy the Jun Family anyway!

As far as Jun Mo Xie was concerned, [people die all the time, so what's the big deal?! ]

[Damn it! Life is nothing more than just life, and there's really no need to attach so much value to it! ]

However, the young master Jun had never imagined that his plan would actually succeed; not only was he able to attract the right number of Spirit Xuan experts, but he also managed to attract two of the 'Eight Great Masters' of this world. Moreover, he was able to make them fight against each other, which was just as he had intended in his original plan. However, the biggest success that his plan had notched was; two extremely powerful King Xuan Beasts

received this news, and arrived to compete for the Xuan Core.

Nevertheless, Jun Mo Xie was still looking rather gloomy right now since he had somehow managed to attract two Xuan Beasts rather than one as per his plan. Moreover, not only were these beasts more powerful than his expectation, but they were also harder to tame than he had anticipated!

As it stands, Jun Mo Xie's initial idea of tempting the Xuan Beasts into becoming his allies had already failed.....

He was well aware that his grandfather would kick his buttocks in case he ever found out that his grandson was planning on attempting such a feat. After all, Jun Zhan Tian hadn't yet reached the Spirit Xuan realm yet, in fact barely any of Jun Zhan Tian's followers were at par with him; let alone any higher. Even the most highly decorated and valiant generals of the Xuan Xuan continent were below the Spirit Xuan realm.

Although Jun Zhan Tian knew that such Xuan Beasts existed in the world, he also knew that they extremely difficult to find. Such beasts were already at the peak of human possibilities, and were usually considered at par with the 'Eight Great Masters'. Moreover, they mostly chose to spend their lives living in secrecy; these Xuan Beasts were known to have silenced the odd Spirit Xuan expert who had ventured out in search of them, hoping to seek their companionship. Therefore, it was only natural that no one knew who they were, and where they could be found.

Another reason why Jun Mo Xie realized that his plan had failed was; Yun Bei Chen was the only man alive known to have such high-end Xuan Beasts as companions, in fact, it was rather evident now that these King Xuan Beasts had a very small, secretive and special circle, which seemed to have its own rules and regulations. This seemed to be the primary reason why even a man of Shi Chang Xiao's caliber was unable to identify Long Crane's true identity very easily, and had seemingly decided to abandon the Xuan Core rather than chasing after these two mysterious

"poeple".

All in all, the young master Jun had already realized a while ago that this plan of his was blindly optimistic from the beginning because he was simply aiming too high. Therefore, he had decided to adjust his plan in hope of securing the next best possibility; [if I can't tempt them into becoming my partners, then I can at least tempt into doing just one task for me, right? Besides, they really can't refuse the reward I'm offering. ]

However, he wasn't expecting to run into another snag here.....

[Convince you of my strength? This is sheer damn nonsense! If I had enough strength to overpower you both, then why would I need to be afraid of Li Jue Tian?! I would have already gone up to his residence, knocked his head around like a ping pong ball until that Old Man's eyes started to glitter like the stars, and then I would have stuffed his head up his own backside..... ]

Jun Mo Xie was silent, depressed, and at a complete loss at the moment.

He could obviously see through Long Crane's plan. [I know he's just trying to see if I can beat him and his brother since it would mean that I'm not lying and that I'm actually powerful enough to offer them what they desire.... As for my work, I'm sure that they can do it with ease..... ]

[I never expected that a Xuan Beast could have such intelligence.....] Jun Mo Xie was quite depressed and remained silent for a while, but then he decided that he need to take some initiative here.....

"Impress you? How do you wish for me to impress you?" Jun Mo Xie was a bit impatient at this point. [Damn this, I'm exuding the best Aura that you've ever seen and you're still chirping about? This is simply unbearable! ]

"Well, that's simple; you'll have to beat us in combat!" Big Bear

opened his hairy mouth while his face exposed a sinister expression. His facial expression was so simply and honest, that Jun Mo Xie immediately realized that the Xuan Beast was quite serious about the offer.

"What are you saying?" Long Crane hastily berated his younger brother: "You just go about shouting for a fight all day long; that's enough now!" he looked at Jun Mo Xie and thought, [my brother simply doesn't know this guy's strength.... In case this guy is actually as strong as Yun Bei Chen, then wouldn't we also end up something like the second brother? ]

[And what if the two of us weren't able to escape away like the second brother did..... Wouldn't we end up dead after the boss finds out? If he's strong enough, then he'll kill us, else the boss will.... either way we'll die! ]

"We're all masters here, so let's not follow the usual way of the world. We'll play three games to determine the winner and the loser." Long Crane stretched out three finger for Jun Mo Xie to see clearly: "Winning two out of these three tests will mark the winner; if you win then we'll promise to do that one thing for you; however, if we win, we still get our reward!"

"That's right; even if you lose, we'll still get our reward! Even though we won't be helping you with your task!" Big Bear repeated the final sentence.

"That is to say, you get your reward irrespective of whether I win or lose?" Jun Mo Xie glared back at them with disbelief in his eyes: "Big Bear, you really don't have a knack for doing business, do you? You can't always make a profit if your business partner is making a loss!"

In reality, Jun Mo Xie had already agreed to this term. He knew that it was all in or nothing for him; although he was never likely to admit this in front of these two "People".....

However, he first needed to try and maximize his chances of

making a profitable transaction.....

A thick stench filled the atmosphere as Big Bear opened his big mouth and then stuck out his big red tongue, while his eyes continued to watch Jun Mo Xie. Then, he slowly licked the corner of his mouth as he raised his thumb and said: "Ha ha..... then why don't you just wait around and keep searching until you find someone with our talent? You need us more than we need you!"

Jun Mo Xie glared back at him, [these two aren't as stupid as I thought..... ah I guess they've realized my position now! It's a good thing that I only want this one task from them, else they would have become a major problem for me in the future! ]

Long Crane seemed rather embarrassed by his younger brother's shameless words, and said: "If you have any objections, then we can change the system a bit; but if you want us to obey you without you proving yourself first, then you can forget about it!"

"Who said that you would have to obey me? I'm offering you a good deal in return for a service; that's called a fair deal!" Jun Mo Xie waved his hand in frustration: "But since we're going to do some tests, then why should you get to decide the themes of these tests? For the sake of fairness, the first proposition must be set by me, and then you can set the next one; in case we need a third test, then we'll figure that part out after the second result, okay?"

"Good! Then tell us what the first test is?" Long Crane and Big Bear discussed this idea for a while, and then readily agreed. As far as they were concerned, [given our combined strengths, how could we possibly lose to him, ah? ]

"I will do an action, and if either of you is able to replicate it, then I will concede my defeat." Jun Mo Xie thought for a while, and stated his desire as his lips curved into a cunning smile.

"Good!" they both seemed very confident since the two of them were almost at the peak of their realm, and their bodies could be stretched to almost any extent. Long Crane simply couldn't help

rejoicing his victory early; [forget about normal actions, I can even twist my neck in a knot! What could possibly be more difficult than that, ah? ]

"Let's go then." Jun Mo Xie started his game, and the two of them were left staring blankly at him.

The strangest thing was happening right in front of their eyes: Jun Mo Xie's feet were slowly sinking into the ground, and then his legs, his waist..... and then his entire body. However, the most magical thing was that the ground was still as flat as before... there was no hole in it!

An entire human's body had disappeared into the ground in front of these two "People".

A moment later, Jun Mo Xie's head started popping out of the ground about three meters away from his initial position, which was followed by his torso, his abdomen, waist, legs.....

Jun Mo Xie's body had no traces of water on it, nor was his clothing stained by the mud and soil!

[How's this even possible? ]

Long Crane and Big Bear's eyes were glued to Jun Mo Xie's body in disbelief and it seemed as if they would simply pop out of their sockets, while their throats were unable to swallow down the saliva under the effect of the shocking scene they had just witnessed.

They suddenly remembered that Jun Mo Xie had emerged from this very spot, and figured that it was probably a trick. Hence, they immediately ran over the point where Jun Mo Xie had initially been standing and 'bang', they punched the ground hard and sent the water splashing in all directions. They lowered their heads to observe and inspect the ground below, but only to realize that there was no trick involved in this stunt.....

The two of them wracked their brains for a long time and finally

reached a conclusion; [This was legitimate; the other man didn't cheat us! ]

[However, this means that he's simply unbelievable, right? ]

[Is this guy even human? ]

These two Xuan Beasts simply wouldn't have believed that such a feat was ever possible; however, they had witnessed it with their own eyes just moments ago!

"Now it's your turn." Jun Mo Xie's voice seemed very modest, and very humble: "This was just a small piece of skill, and even if one of you can imitate it, then I will concede this round."

They looked at each other for a long while before Big Bear reluctantly opened his mouth and muttered: "We cannot do this; we concede."

# Chapter 193: Preposterous

---

"Well, so I win the first round?" Jun Mo Xie deliberately asked the silently standing Long Crane. He had asked both the brothers to try and defeat him, and therefore it was important for the both of them to concede their defeat separately.

"Yes, we've lost." Long Crane reluctantly stated with difficulty.

Although he was admiring Jun Mo Xie's shocking abilities, he could sense that his opposition clearly possessed some magical abilities, which meant that it would be extremely hard to win this competition since the other party's abilities would be hard to assess.

[I simply don't understand how this happened! ]

[Our speed and strength will be completely useless against this man's magical powers! ] Long Crane and Big Bear were both basically thinking the exact same thing at this point.

"Thank you for letting me win!" Jun Mo Xie cupped his hands humbly: "Alright, the next one is yours to decide; I won't mind even if the both of you give the task a try."

[But we mind! How the hell are we supposed to come up with something that could possibly defeat you....!] The two people who were initially eager to celebrate their victory were now looking dismayed and doubtful.

Jun Mo Xie's stunt had completely shocked them both, but moreover it had completely disoriented their plans and calculations.

Long Crane and Big Bear pouted their lips after a while to hide their embarrassment.

[What can we possibly do against such a master? It seems that he'll beat us at anything. ]



The two of them remained huddled close for a while, and continued to mutter in discussion, but the more they discussed, the less sure they became of their victory; and the less sure they were of their victory, the tighter their brows puckered out of tension. They continued to discuss for a long while, and then eventually fell silent, and just continued to stare at each other in dismay, unable to come up with a solution.

"It seems that this is going to take some time. Shall I go home and get some sleep first?" Jun Mo Xie teased them.

"How dare you be so arrogant? I'm telling you...." Big Bear opened his mouth in fury to curse out, but was unable to find the right words; he tried almost five or six times, but wasn't able to find the right selection of words.

"So what's it then?" Jun Mo Xie decided to keep the pressure on them.

"I've had enough of you... you bastard!" Big Bear burst into anger out of embarrassment: ".....What's the hurry, huh? Let me remind you that your present attitude isn't very noble!"

Jun Mo Xie's face suddenly became rigid; [Did you just call me a bastard?] Fortunately Jun Mo Xie heard the second part of his sentence before bursting forth to procure some raw meat for a bear's paw soup.

"How long is this going to take? I reckon it will be dawn soon! You may have all the time in the world, but I have a lot of other things to do!" Jun Mo Xie's voice suddenly started to rise in volume: "Hurry up!"

"I've already told you....." Big Bear opened his mouth to hurl abuses at Jun Mo Xie again since he simply couldn't stand it anymore, but then suddenly ended up jumping up; a ring of halo emerged inside his brain, and he loudly roared out: "..... I'll pee!"

[What? ]The final words hit Jun Mo Xie's ears like a thunderbolt,

and he almost fell to the ground. He dizzily looked at the big and burly man in front of his eyes, unable to fathom that this fierce killing machine would've actually uttered the word 'pee' from his own mouth!

[Why is this guy talking like a three year old all of a sudden? ]

At this moment, Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but wonder if he had heard the word correctly.

Long Crane was also startled for a second, but then his slender eyes started involuntarily revolving in circles, while his pupils started to dilate.....

"You're telling me..... that you'll..... pee?" Jun Mo Xie repeated the sentence, but his eyes were glaring questioningly at his opponent and it seemed that his brain wasn't willing to trust his ears.

"Correct, we'll pee!" Big Bear's body language had suddenly become very confident ever since he had first said it, and it seemed as if the heavy burden which was suppressing him earlier had been lifted off: "I would like to challenge you to a urination contest! How about it? This is what we want the second round to be; do you wish to concede your defeat?"

"Urination contest? How do you intend to decide the winner? By who urinates higher... farther.....or more....." Jun Mo Xie was barely able to find his words, and it seemed that his eyes would start spinning around in circle at any moment.

[A first class Spirit Xuan expert has just challenged me to a urination contest? This may have been alright if we were all three years old, but most normal people are done with such activities after the age of three..... no one does this after they grow up! ]

A full grown man was standing in front of Jun Mo Xie, and was asking him to take out his equipment in front of everyone, and then use it to excrete his watery wastes.....[Do Xuan Beasts even

know the meaning of the word 'Shame'? ]

[What is this!] It seemed that Jun Mo Xie had underestimated the degree of shamelessness that certain people were capable of exhibiting; and to make matters worse, these people weren't even people... they were animals!

"Not higher, nor farther, these things are for children. We however, are all qualified masters here, so we won't be playing such basic games."

Big Bear groaned twice to clear his throat, but his face had already started to redden with embarrassment, and yet he tried to convince himself, [We really can't lose to this man, even if he only requires us to do just one task.... After all, who knows what he'll ask us to do? ]

[He's got some magical powers for sure, so his task definitely won't be very easy! ]

[Damn it, anyway not many people will see my shamelessness, so what do I need to be nervous about? As long as we win this contest, we at least won't have to do his work! ]

"You did an action which we both were incapable of doing, and therefore we readily conceded our defeat." Big Bear was struggling to maintain a straight face because he was afraid that relaxing his facial muscles would expose his embarrassment: "Now I will do an action, and as long as you can imitate me, we will lose this one. If you cannot do it, then you'll lose!"

"An action while.... urinating?" Jun Mo Xie narrowed his eyes: [is there something special about this thing? This is something that we learn to do the moment we are born. Now that we've all grown up, we can all urinate with two hands, with one hand, and even if we hold our hands behind our backs, we can still urinate freely, comfortably, and smoothly. We can lie down and urinate, we can urinate while twisting our waist around in a circle, and we can even urinate while jumping up and down. Heck, we can even run

around while taking a leak... and then we can make circles in the ground, and so on so forth.... There's nothing really more to it..... ]

[Ah, in case we urinate while squatting down, then it would be theoretically possible to direct it upwards and into our.... Is that what you're up to? Because I'm definitely not doing that! ]

"Of course the action will be done while urinating! What else do you think I said?" Big Bear opened his mouth and snapped back at Jun Mo Xie: "Since you're the challenger, I'll go first!"

Jun Mo Xie simply couldn't bear to see it at first and closed his eyes: [what's going on here? Do I really have to watch as he urinates? What does he think... does he think that beautiful flowers will start growing in the Tian Xiang City after he urinates here ah..... ]

Just as he was wondering what the action was going to be, Big Bear opened his mouth and exhaled a mouthful of air, and then stomped his burly feet on the ground with a 'thud', and then his burly body majestically flew upwards into the sky! The ease and speed of his movement was truly worthy of a Spirit Xuan expert's pride!

"Good skill!" Jun Mo Xie silently muttered to himself in praise. However, his eyes were still staring on in confusion: [didn't this guy say he was going to pee? Is he going to pee from up there? ]

Just as Jun Mo Xie was about to voice his doubt....

Big Bear proudly opened his mouth and grinned as his hands quickly untied the waistband of his trouser while his body continued to rise up in the air. Then, he quickly inserted his hands into his trousers, and nimbly pulled out his tool, shrugged it once, puffed his chest with air, and then exerted with all his strength, 'Hhh', and sparkling water arrows surged outwards like a flooding yellow river, making 'chi' 'chi' sounds as they raced away from his body.

Jun Mo Xie was left flabbergasted by the strong smell, and felt as if he'd faint at any second.....

On the other side, Long Crane suddenly covered his face from shame.....

Big Bear's tall and burly body was still standing upright in the sky, while his eyes were seemingly staring at the horizon. He exerted more strength from his chest, and held his weapon steadily in both his hands, and slowly starting rotating, making his shiny water arrows spray out in all four directions.....

His fluids were spreading in all directions in equal volumes, and were notching the same distance as well.....

Big Bear's clothes were fluttering in the air in a rather magnanimous manner... well... minus his indecent parts; but the rest of the show seemed quite exquisite....

Although his body was slowly drop in altitude, but the speed of his descent was almost negligible.

Finally the trajectory of the water jets slowly started contracting in range, and then eventually dried out. Then Big Bear comfortably shrugged his tool twice in the air, and then his hands swiftly.... Stuffed his war weapon back into his trousers. Then, he leisurely took his time to tie his waistband into a bowknot.

After he was done with his stunt, Big Bear leisurely descended down to the ground gracefully, and smilingly nodded in Jun Mo Xie's direction.

"I didn't have much to drink earlier." It genuinely seemed that Big Bear was regretting that he hadn't executed his action to perfection.

Jun Mo Xie didn't know whether to laugh or cry!

He was suddenly reminded of an incident from his previous life; A youngster had jumped onto the traffic police's podium at the cross-section of a busy crossroad, and had then flowed out his

water jets in all directions unbridled, despite the traffic policemen's repeated warnings; but Jun Mo Xie had never expected that someone would actually be capable of piling that man's achievements into insignificance! This was obviously a very difficult task to perform!

Jun Mo Xie was terrified out of his life at the thought of imitating this action!

Big Bear tightened his belt, and triumphantly stated: "Boy, I've demonstrated it; now it's your turn!"

Jun Mo Xie was left dumbstruck for a long while, and simply continued to stare at the face of this Spirit Xuan strong Xuan Beast; then he shook his head, sighed and said: "I concede my defeat!"

# Chapter 194: A taste of one's own medicine

---

"I'm not trying to brag, but this isn't a child's play." Big Bear opened his mouth and bragged in high spirits.

"I admire you, that was excellent. I've sincerely conceived and conceded by defeat!" Jun Mo Xie replied in an authentic and heartfelt tone.

Jun Mo Xie had only conceded this round since he didn't have an option. Jun Mo Xie was a fairly shameless character in his own merit, but he knew that he wouldn't be capable of accomplishing a feat such as this one.

Apart from being plainly shameless, Big Bear's stunt was also extremely difficult to master for a human being.

If the task was to achieve a high altitude in the air and then urinate, then some people could master it with practice. But to urinate in the air while maintaining one's position.... even Yun Bei Chen would've given up on this task.

This was a plainly physiological action; in order to maintain one's altitude in the sky, a person needs to constantly circulate their Xuan Qi around his body, and by doing so, one's body turns rigid, irrespective of the person's innate strength.

Although it's not difficult to revolve around in the sky, but one would need to relax every muscle of his body in order to urinate..... which would make this task absolutely impossible; because once a person relaxes his body's muscles, that man would immediately start falling to the ground!

A bystander would ask, [how was Big Bear able to pull off this action when even Yun Bei Chen wouldn't have been able to? Does this mean that Big Bear is even stronger than Yun Bei Chen? ]

This feat had nothing to do with Big Bear's innate strength!

The essence of this lay in the mere distinction between humans

and Xuan Beasts. Powerful beasts such as Big Bear and his Brother were gifted with a special talent or perhaps ability, called 'Stagnation'!

Xuan Beasts were capable of using this ability to freely venture into the sky at any time they wished to without using their Xuan Qi, whereas a human would need to employ his Xuan Qi to achieve the same. Therefore, in this regard, a Xuan Beast was undoubtedly far superior to a human. Moreover, Big Bear was already one of the strongest of his kind.....

In reality, Big Bear was not only the younger than his brothers, he was also the weakest one, but when it came to performing such a task to score a victory, Long Crane would've rather chosen to lose instead of doing such a shameless act in public, which is why Big Bear had heroically taken the charge, and had volunteered to perform the task.

Of course, Big Bear's thick skinned nature played a massive role in performing this task, but it also managed to bring his side back on level terms in one single swoop, leaving each side with one victory and one loss as it stood at present.

Long Crane was standing with his back towards Jun Mo Xie; his shoulders were already stooping low, and it seemed that he didn't even have the courage to stand and look Jun Mo Xie in the eye.

[I wish I was dead! ]

[There can be no greater shame for a dignified Beast from the Tian Fa forest; we actually resorted to unfair means to score a victory.... Thankfully there are only three people present here, but the other party seems to be quite powerful in his own merit, and may know some very powerful people as well... In case he tells the world about my fourth Brother's stunt, then it would be very humiliating for us..... damn it, just how can I explain it to him that he mustn't tell the world about the manner in which we just won this round..... ]



"Brother Crane, Congratulations, your Fourth Brother's mid-air stunt was really amazing, and I concede my defeat."

Jun Mo Xie had obviously sensed that Long Crane wasn't as thick-skinned as his younger brother, and decided to tease him for it; obviously Jun Mo Xie was just trying to vent out his gloom by doing this. "After this glorious victory, I think that it's best that the winners of the second round decide the final round's theme. So please Brother Crane, decide the next round's task."

Long Crane coughed twice to conceal his embarrassment, then gave Big Bear a ferocious glance before turning around to face Jun Mo Xie, only to reveal his embarrassed face, and then smile unnaturally, and spoke in a weird tone: "Thank you brother Feng, you really have a very high tolerance..... and thanks for giving us the chance to decide the next round....."

"That's alright brother, this was truly a good learning experience for me, and I honor my defeat." Jun Mo Xie was barely able to utter the words 'truly a good learning experience', in fact it seemed that he would bite his lips shut at any moment. However, Jun Mo Xie clearly knew that he wasn't as strong as Big Bear or his brother, and even though Jun Mo Xie knew that Big Bear had cheated him in this round, he didn't refute it since he was also aware that he done the same in the previous round.....

He had just gotten a taste of his own medicine!

Long Crane on the other hand was a proud personality, and had always carried himself with dignity. He would have rather resigned himself to losing this contest, but would've never resorted to using unfair means to win it. However, his reckless and shameless Fourth Brother had done exactly what he despised the most in the world, which had left him feeling very unpleasant inside. Firstly, he felt quite cheap for using such methods to secure a victory, and secondly, he felt sorry for his opponent, and thirdly, he needed this incident to stay a secret.

And just then, Jun Mo Xie's offer to allow him to decide the third round had completely humbled him.

The more he thought into it, the more ashamed he felt. Moreover, the fact that Jun Mo Xie had decided to concede the round without even attempting the task, made things even worse for him. In fact, he had already started associating himself with Jun Mo Xie by now.....

"Thank you brother.... The next one... the next one....." Long Crane strained himself hard for a long time, but was unable to come up with anything suitable. This opponent was really giving him a headache. On top of that, the noble demeanor of the opposition was making him feel even guiltier inwardly. Moreover, his heart was carrying a faint feeling that the other side would be able to imitate any action that he could think of.

Long Crane hadn't felt this way in a long time; in fact, this was only the second time in his entire life that he had ever felt this way! The first time was when he was faced with Yun Bei Chen!

As this thought crossed his mind, a burst of horror gripped Long Crane's heart: [Is this man really capable of matching up to Yun Bei Chen's mastery? ]

Big Bear squeezed closer to his brother, covered his mouth, and said: "Third Brother, haven't you already thought of it? It's very simple!"

Long Crane glared back at him, simply unwilling to entertain him any further.

"So, have you thought of something?" Jun Mo Xie looked at them.

"Yes." Big Bear opened his big mouth once again: "The next thing also involves peeing, are you ready for it?"

[Ah! Is there any limit to this guy's shamelessness? ]

His remark left both Jun Mo Xie and Long Crane staggering.

[There has to be a limit to shamelessness, right? He's as shameless as an animal! No, even calling him an 'Animal' isn't enough to describe him..... there really isn't a word despicable enough to describe this man...! ]

"How've you already not died of shame yet?!" Long Crane started hurling abuses at his younger brother, and then impulsively kicked his brother's buttocks in rage: "You go and stand there on one side! Even if you don't have any sense of shame, your third brother still does!"

Big Bear pouted as he rubbed his buttocks, feeling wronged: "Third Brother, you curse me in front of outsiders, isn't that shameful for me? Don't I have my own pride? And in case you really wanted to kick me, you could have done that in person... this wasn't right....."

"Bah! What shame are you talking about? You've already ashamed yourself a long time ago!" Long Crane continued to hurl abuses at his brother in resentment since his brother had been failing to meet his expectations and he was beginning to run out of patience now: "Roll over to one side, and don't you dare to open your mouth again!"

"You obviously can't think of anything by yourself, so I came up with something and I even managed to win us the round, and you're still asking to keep shut....." Big Bear muttered to himself as he bitterly took two steps to the side.

"Actually, I don't think I have any problems with the Fourth Brother's suggestion; none at all. In fact, it would be fully in compliance with our agreement in case the fourth Brother decides to carry out the same task more than once." Jun Mo Xie's face suddenly revealed a strange smile.

"Ah?" Long Crane couldn't prevent himself from exclaiming out loud: "Wouldn't you lose the round for certain if he did it again?"

Big Bear opened his mouth once again: "Boy, don't you go about

thinking that Big Bear has just peed once, so he won't be able to do it again. I have a large storage, so I can even go more than once without any issues....." Big Bear wanted to continue with his sentence, but his words withered under Long Crane's angry glance, and he resigned to muttering to himself: "I was only talking for his good... he thinks he's too clever, so I just wanted to remind him that we're far superior....."

"I don't doubt the Fourth Brother's words, but if we repeated the previous task in the exact same manner, then it would be rather dull and boring, wouldn't it? Therefore, I suggest that we change it around a bit, how about that?!"

Long Crane thought about it and said: "We'd like to hear about the details!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled: "It's very simple. The Fourth Brother demonstrated that he can urinate in the sky, which means that it's easy for him to urinate both on the ground, and in the sky. So how about we modify this task, and we urinate underground this time?"

"Urinate underground?" Big Bear opened his mouth once again: "How's this even possible? A person would suffocate once they go underground, and how could you possibly release it if you're simply surrounded by soil and stone? Even if you're lucky enough to find a loose patch, how on earth would you be able to move about?"

"What do you mean?..... are you saying that you can't do it?" Jun Mo Xie smiled.

"It is impossible to do this." They both shook their heads in unison: "It's easy in the sky since there is a void, but inside the ground.... That's simply impossible; can you do it?"

"What would you two say if I managed to do it?" Jun Mo Xie hummed provocatively. [I let you cheat me once, but this time it's my turn! ]

"Then we'll concede our defeat!" they looked at each other and smiled. [[[This is good for us, hmm hmm, it seems that he's trying to make up for his defeat in the sky by doing it underground, but even the two of us can't accomplish such a task, so how could this guy, right? This guy is so silly... even if you manage to get inside the ground, you'd still have to loosen up, try and find out for yourself kid! Anyway, it seems like this kid is only trying to experiment with this task.... It would be fun to see him fail at it hmm..... ]]]

Since they both felt that their opponent was unsure about executing this task, they both immediately nodded and agreed for this action to be appointed as the third round's challenge without even discussing it any further amongst themselves.....

"I'll go first!" Jun Mo Xie raised his hands, and the two of them suddenly felt a strong Aura in the air which they had been aching to get their hands on. They simply couldn't prevent themselves from inhaling its fervent and beautiful scent as they licked their lips, while their hearts itched to absorb it all.

# Chapter 195: Fatally enticing

---

Jun Mo Xie looked at the two of them as his feet slowly started sinking into the ground once again, and smiled in calm and relaxed manner.

All of a sudden, Jun Mo Xie's body was partially submerged in the ground, with only his chest and head visible above the ground; the soil and the water had managed to retain their normal position on the ground's surface.

Jun Mo Xie smiled once again, and then suddenly a jet of water projected outwards from the ground.....

The faces of the two Xuan Beast's instantly transformed to surprise and astonishment, and they immediately clutched their noses as they leapt sideways to avoid staining their clothes with Jun Mo Xie's urine. The shock in their eyes was clearly speaking for their mouths: [He actually did it! It's obvious that this is a man's urine.... There's no scope of fraud here! ]

Jun Mo Xie pulled his body out once he was done emptying his tank, and asked: "What do you say now?"

They looked at each other is dismal, and said: "You've done as you said, and we concede our defeat!"

Jun Mo Xie was greatly relieved to hear these words; [finally, I won! ]

However, he was completely unaware that his opposition was also sharing the same sentiment, but in a reversed context; Yes! [We finally lost! ]

Even though the winner was forced to undergo several hardships, the losers were still eagerly hoping to lose the bet; such bets are hard to come by.

"Alright, what is it that you wish for us to do?" Long Crane frowned as he spoke: "Although we're willing to honor this bet, but

I would like to remind you that we will only do just one task for you! In addition to this, you will not go back on your promise! We won't accept any excuses in case you go back on your promise!"

"Naturally; as long as you complete my assignment, I'll reward you as promised." Jun Mo Xie smiled as he extended his hand towards Long Crane.

Long Crane looked puzzlingly at Jun Mo Xie, but then slowly extended his hand and shook Jun Mo Xie's. Just as the two hands came in contact, Long Crane was suddenly startled and his entire body started to tremble. His face was reveling in an indescribably surprised expression, and then he gradually closed his eyes as he started to enjoy the sensation.

A pure and unadulterated Aura was streaming from Jun Mo Xie's hands and into Long Crane's body via his hands, and all of sudden, Long Crane felt as if he was walking in a heavenly paradise. Each meridian of his body, every inch of his bone, and every strand of his muscles was relishing this sensation.

The Xuan Qi which had been dormant for a long time had suddenly started burst into action in an unprecedented manner, and Long Crane could sense that as long as this Aura continued to circulate around his body, he could easily break past the next bottleneck! Wave after wave of this pure Aura had left him completely intoxicated, [good heavens; I never knew such a sensation could exist in the world! I'll complete as many tasks as he assigns for me.... ]

Long Crane had always been a calm and composed personality, but against his nature, his entire body was trembled in excitement at this moment! [I've never felt this kind of energy inside my body in years! Just thinking about it brings tears to my eyes ah.... I haven't been able to break through the bottleneck for a long time now, and I only have about thirty more years at most before my cultivation starts to slip from its peak.... Had I met him later in life, then it might have been too late to upgrade my cultivation....

]

Big Bear was looking dumbstruck at his brother, [what is the third brother doing? What's so mesmerizing about holding his hand? ]

Long Crane could sense that his cultivation was slowly inching towards its peak, and then suddenly this mysterious Aura stopped, just when he was about to reach the point of its need! This break in Aura almost drove him crazy for one second!

Jun Mo Xie had suddenly withdrawn his hand, and was now smiling at him. Jun Mo Xie opened his mouth and spoke in a calm voice: "Are you convinced now that I can help you as promised?"

At this point, Long Crane's heart was aching to grab Jun Mo Xie's hand, and feed more Aura into his own body, but Long Crane was too proud to stoop to such desperation, and so he breathed deeply a few times in order to calm himself down, while his eyes remained shut the entire time. Then, he opened his eyes, and spoke up, but the traces of excitement were still lingering in his trembling voice: "Yes, I'm convinced! I'm afraid that no Xuan Beast could ever be capable of resisting this temptation! For us, this is temptation can be fatally enticing!"

Big Bear was still eyeing Jun Mo Xie doubtfully, which is why Jun Mo Xie smiled and extended his hand towards him as well, and startled him in the same manner; However, Big Bear didn't close his eyes as his Elder Brother had, and instead started staring at Jun Mo Xie as if the man was a celestial being. Big Bear tightened his paws around Jun Mo Xie's hand, and it seemed as if he wouldn't let it go for the life of him; in fact, he almost started begging: "Give me a little please..... give me a little, hurry, hurry, give me a little more of it.... I... I really need this!....."

This stout and burly beast with a body almost three times the size of an ordinary man's had suddenly started acting like a naughty child who was unwilling to part with his favorite candy.....



Jun Mo Xie tried to pull his hand back, but found it stuck; he tried to pull harder, but Big Bear only gripped it ever more firmly, simply unwilling to let go, while constantly begging for more, leaving Jun Mo Xie to regret taking the extra initiative of convincing him as well.....

"Fourth Brother!" Long Crane berated his brother again: "Stop acting like this! Act like the dignified Xuan Beast you are! Why are you acting so anxiously? We haven't discussed the terms of appointment yet!"

"I, I, I..... how can I not be anxious?" Big Bear glared back at his brother; the anxiety of his heart was clearly visible in the pumped up veins of his eyes: "I've been trapped at my current stage for close to twenty years now..... each day passes like a year for me ah....."

"You get back here, and shut up! Sire, what is it that you wish for us to do? What task could you possibly be incapable of accomplishing with your own supernatural abilities?" Long Crane pulled his brother back with one hand, and asked in an urgent and pressing tone.

"Although I'm capable of doing this task on my own, but for reasons I cannot state, I won't. Else I wouldn't be offering you this reward....." Jun Mo Xie started to build up to his task in an unhurried and casual manner.

"Oh! Just say it quickly! We can do anything for that reward! You can't just give us a taste of that sweet energy, and take it away... it's making me really desperate!" Big Bear was practically jumping around Long Crane in the hope of breaking free of his Brother's grip: "Ask us anything! We'll do anything for you!"

"Recently, the Master Li Jue Tian has been giving me some trouble, and it disgusts me!" Jun Mo Xie stated, paying special attention to their facial reactions: "You need to kill him."

"What? Is this a joke?" Long Crane and Big Bear suddenly cried

out at the same time once; and then both of them fell silent.

[This is the second most powerful man in the world we're talking about! And this guy is talking like its..... ]

[That man is almost as strong as Yun Bei Chen! And in case we actually had enough strength to kill him, then wouldn't we have killed Yun Bei Chen when we faced him that one time ah? ]

[Li Jue Tian... he says that name like he's your next-door Spirit Xuan neighbor..... ]

"Find Li Jue Tian, and kill him!" Jun Mo Xie repeated the assignment.

[You think that's going to be like killing a chicken, ah?! Is this guy playing with us? Does he really think that it's that simple? Why don't you just ask us to go into the sky, and then bring you the moon or a star, huh? ]

[I reckon that even if our eldest brother, our boss personally attacked Li Jue Tian, then even he could only go as far as defeating Li Jue Tian at best! But even he won't be able to kill that man! There's only one way of killing Li Jue Tian: We'd have to fabricate a situation where Li Jue Tian would have no means of escaping away, and then we'd have to attack him with our Eldest Brother in support... that's the only way it's possible. Even if we were somehow able to stage this advantage in our favor, I still reckon that at least one out of us three brothers will end up getting buried beside Li Jue Tian's body! ]

You're asking us to risk our lives in this deal... no, you're practically asking for our lives!

"What happened? If there's some sort of an issue, then please tell me ah." Jun Mo Xie looked at the two of them as he asked in a tone of surprise.

"This isn't just another difficult task... it's an impossible one!" Big Bear cleared his throat twice before speaking up: "Did you really

just ask us to kill Li Jue Tian? You think that's like slaughtering cattle or pigs ah? Bah, just say it, and he's dead?!"

"What's to be done in that case? The Xue Hun Manor is my only problem at the moment, and why would I ask you do a task that I can get anyone else to do? If my task was that easy, then why would I come up with this kind of a reward in exchange?"

Jun Mo Xie stretched his hands at chest level, and looked helplessly at the two of them, "Since you can't do my task, then I'm afraid that this contract is null and void. I guess I'll just have to deal with Li Jue Tian on my own... it will take me a few days extra, and I'll have to get my hands dirty, but I'll do it on my own I suppose....."

What? The deal is over? No, we can't let you scrap this deal..... if you hadn't given us a taste of that Aura then we ourselves would've scraped this deal, but now we simply cannot allow that to happen. Had Big Bear not been afraid of this man's hidden abilities, then he would've already tried to use force.

"Hold on a minute!" Long Crane raised his hand and spoke up in a keen tone: "You just said that your troubles were provoked by Xue Hun Manor, and not Li Jue Tian himself, am I right?" Long Crane finally grasped his focus again, and suddenly became excited all over again.

The heavens never bar a good man's way! The two of them cried out at the same time, we would've regretted losing this opportunity for the rest of our lives, but it seems that we might just be able to turn things for the better here.

"I didn't understand your words properly; the Xue Hun Manor and Li Jue Tian are associated, aren't they? That makes them one or the same thing, so what's the difference between the two?" Jun Mo Xie's tone was exceptionally calm, almost as if it was some minor detail he didn't really care about.

"No, that's not the same thing!" Big Bear exploded in excitement:

"Li Jue Tian is a perennial wanderer, and doesn't really live with the Xue Hun Manor; in fact, he barely comes back once a year! How could you consider them to be one and the same? There's no issue with the task as long as this doesn't involve Li Jue Tian; if it's just the Xue Hun Manor you want dead, then we'll kill them off with ease!"

"Is that so ah? Hmmm... if killing Li Jue Tian isn't necessary to do away with the Xue Hun Manor, then there's no need to kill Li Jue Tian!" Jun Mo Xie continued in a puzzled tone, and patted his forehead: "I was almost getting ready to kill the wrong person."

Both the brothers rolled up with eyes in contempt, almost getting ready to kill the wrong person? You think you can kill Li Jue Tian that easily? You almost scared the life out of us there!

"If you only wish to deal with the Xue Hun Manor, then we can handle your task with ease." Long Crane smiled responsibly: "Although Xue Hun Manor has several Spirit Xuan experts, but that won't pose any problems for us; it's like my Fourth Brother said, we'll finish them off with ease."

## Chapter 196: Let's do it like this

---

"That's all good, but I have to take step back here. The target has now changed to Xue Hun Manor instead of Li Jue Tian, and this reduces the task's difficulty but a few grades. Therefore it seems to me that the reward I was previously offering is now too much....." Jun Mo Xie puckered his brows tightly, seemingly wishing to go back on his word since it seemed as if he'd overpaid for this bargain.

"Brother, you mustn't go back on the terms ah, the Xue Hun Manor is considered the second strongest force of this continent ah! Don't you think that it's enough? This will be too big a task for anyone else other than us....."

Even though Big Bear was prompt to reply, his words still sounded very sincere: "Please don't think that destroying the Xue Hun Manor will be an easy task... firstly, destroying the Xue Hun Manor will provoke the wrath of Li Jue Tian, and secondly, if we destroy the Xue Hun Manor, then won't it solve your problems with them? The two of us will also have to pay a considerable price for it ah."

"My Fourth Brother is right, even though the Xue Hun Manor is considered weaker than the Silver Blizzard City, it is only so because Li Jue Tian is always away from the Xue Hun Manor whereas Han Feng Xue is always inside the Silver Blizzard City. If you take these two masters out of the equation, then these two powers are neck to neck in terms of their strength and influence." Long Crane added.

"If that's the case, then let's do it like this." Jun Mo Xie wrinkled his brows together, still unwilling to settle for the current deal: "However, it still seems that I'm taking a bit of a loss in this deal, so I'd like to attach an additional request, and I'd insist that you complete this request as well, otherwise I'd consider this deal over!"

"Please express your request; as long as you don't require us to kill Li Jue Tian, we'd be willing to do one more task for you in addition to destroying the Xue Hun Manor!" Seeing Jun Mo Xie losing interest in the deal, Big Bear hastily made the commitment.

"Li Jue Tian has a son, Li Teng Yun; He's even more annoying than Li Jue Tian himself! This person must be taught a good lesson, and if possible, I'd like him dead as well!" Jun Mo Xie exposed a sinister smile: "Of course, I'd like him castrated one way or the other."

"That's simply out of question!" they both spoke up in unison: "Li Jue Tian fathered that boy after the age of eighty, and he also happens to be Li Jue Tian's only child. In case we kill him or even castrate him, then it would be tantamount to depriving Li Jue Tian of his bloodline. I'm afraid that Li Jue Tian will never forgive the Tian Fa forest for it, and we'll have to pay this debt with our blood for generations to come... and this is one consequence we simply cannot afford to bear!" Long Crane explained.

"If this isn't going to work, then how do we go about it?" Jun Mo Xie seemed to be losing his temper at this point: "Besides, if Li Jue Tian can father a son at the age of eighty, then I'm sure that he can father another at the age of hundred as well! So why are you so worried about it?"

"He became the laughing stock of the world when he fathered a child at the age of eighty, and in case he has to father another at the age of hundred, then I'm afraid that he'll die of the shame this world will instill on him for it." Big Bear shook his head regretfully.

Long Crane decided to walk the road of sensibility once again: "This request is too difficult to complete since this request is the same as annihilating Li Jue Tian's bloodline! However, if your purpose is only to teach Li Teng Yun a lesson, then we could perhaps beat up the boy very severely on your behalf; in fact, we'll make sure that he's rendered incapable of getting out of his bed for

more than a year if you wish it, how about that?"

Long Crane thought about it for a moment, came up with a compromise, and then said: "However, if you insist on kill the boy, then I'm afraid that we'll have to back away from this assignment all together."

"The Eight Great Masters are very selfish people by nature, and apart from Yun bei Chen, all the others seem to hate each other. Unless they see a personal gain, they don't even try to help each other out of grave situations. In reality, even attacking the Xue Hun Manor would push this peace we currently have to its limit.... I'm sure your distinguished self can understand the limitations of our position...."

"If you can guarantee that you'll wreak havoc on the Xue Hun Manor, and moreover, you'll break Li Teng Yun's legs; both of them, and ensure that he isn't even able to crawl around for a years' time, then we can consider this deal reached!" Jun Mo Xie decided to act flexibly in order to take advantage of this situation.

Long Crane and Big Bear discussed the proposal for a while, and then replied: "In that case, we have a deal!"

"We have a deal!" Jun Mo Xie smiled, and stretched out his hand: "Let's shake hands and swear it!"

"Clap!" they joined their palms together, indicating that they had agreed on terms.

Long Crane and Big Bear were both quite excited, [if we can trade this task for an opportunity to evolve our state, then it's a good deal for us. We're getting a really good deal here considering that we don't even have to kill Li Jue Tian, or his son, and we only have to weaken and destroy the Xue Hun Manor's strength. ]

Just the thought of living several years of their life in a free and leisurely manner post their evolution was enough to tickle their imaginations, [if we are able to progress again, then our strengths

will reach at par with the Eldest Brother, and then we won't even have to fear the Eight Great Masters! ]

Jun Mo Xie was excited as his partners. A near-negligible use of the Hongjun Pagoda's energy in exchange for this assignment's competition would immediately solve all problems surrounding Guan Qing Han, and would delay his troubles for at least half a years' time; [this is a very cost-effective deal... I just got lucky here! ]

"I suppose that one months' time should be enough to settle this matter, what do you say about that?" Jun Mo Xie stated hastily at first, but then controlled himself since he realized that he might end up revealing too much information in his excitement.

"That's not an issue!" Long Crane and Big Bear replied back anxiously as they smiled. [A months' time for this task is a lot of time. This is simply too much time considering our strength! Ha ha..... ]

"Brother Feng, how do we find you after the matter is resolved?" Long Crane finally raised the issue in a subtle and calm manner.

"You can seek out the Jun Family's residence in the Tian Xiang City, and then you may inform Jun Wu Yi, that the Xue Hun Manor has been dismantled as per requirement. Then, you can wait a moment, and I'll meet you again to honor my promise!" Jun Mo Xie solemnly vowed.

[I finally have a way to take care of the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City; even if it's only a temporary solution. I'll wait a month, and once they return, I'll talk about the Silver Blizzard City's task then, he he...] Jun Mo Xie chuckled treacherously within his belly.

"We'll take our leave brother. Until next time." Long Crane raised his hand to wave good-bye and pulled Big Bear along with him with his other hand.



"One moment! I have one thing that I'd like to ask the two of you about." Something came up in Jun Mo Xie's mind and he suddenly stopped the two of them again: "The Peak Level Nine Xuan Core, what's its use?"

The two brothers immediately stopped in their tracks, turned around, and continued to stare him for a long time before Big Bear finally asked: "Why do you ask this? ..... Don't me that you don't actually know what this Xuan Core is for?"

"After seeing my abilities, do you really think that I need that Xuan Core? However, since you look so excited after winning it over, I just thought I'd ask you this question. If you don't wish to discuss it, then I'll take my leave." Jun Mo Xie was a bit surprised that these two brothers were very cautious in this regard, and couldn't help regretting asking this question.

"That's also true... given the purity of the energy inside your body, this Xuan Core is useless for you! Naturally you wouldn't be aware of its usage either....." It sounded from Long Crane's voice that he envied Jun Mo Xie's ability.

[Why would this guy need a Xuan Core if his own body can produce such pure Aura? Moreover, it's fairly difficult to assess his strength, but I reckon that he could be as strong as Yun Bei Chen..... A man of such strength and ability naturally won't be bothered enough about these Xuan Cores to figure out its usage...] Long Crane and Big Bear were thinking the same thing, and it seemed that these two brothers had suddenly started feeling humble in front of Jun Mo Xie's abilities.

As this thought crossed their mind, Long Crane smiled and said: "I guess... telling you this will be of no harm to us. What the human race calls a Xuan Core, is known in our race by another name, Condensed Core, and it also considered one of the most miraculous things known to our race since it's the crystallized essence of our life! However, if a human uses it in the wrong manner, then even a Spirit Xuan expert wouldn't be able to

prevent his body from exploding to fragments. In order to use this Core, one would first need to stabilize its energy with a Heavenly Star Grass, and would also need to use a tri-colored Reishi Mushroom along with Nine Xuan Roots for support, and only then would a Spirit Xuan expert be able to use this Xuan Core to increase his energy and cultivation level. However, once the Core is ready, it can enhance a human's cultivation overnight, and the user would see a tremendous progress! However, all this one aspect, but getting those three herbs is another..... these three herbs are almost a myth, and even a Spirit Xuan expert is unlikely to be able to find them all."

Long Crane laughed to ridicule: "Why is mankind so selfish?"

"Is that so.....oh, that's really strange, people are willing to go to all this trouble of beating each other to death for something that may not even be possible at the end of the day... it really surprises me... why would they even bother with it?" Jun Mo Xie seemed at a loss: "The greed of humanity is the most terrible thing staining this world."

The two brothers felt the same way on the subject, and nodded in agreement, thoroughly impressed by Jun Mo Xie's words. The three men cupped their hands in unison to mark their parting salutation, and then the silhouettes of the two brothers darted away and faded into the horizon as Jun Mo Xie watched. It was evident from the velocity of their departure that these two Xuan Beasts simply couldn't wait to finish this task.....

The storm had already come to a stop, and the dawn was almost upon the sky.

Jun Mo Xie inhaled a deep breath to relax his mind, and then simply slammed down to the ground; he could distinctly feel the ache in his head.

Jun Mo Xie had completely exhausted his entire mental and physical energy a long while ago, and had been reluctantly pushing

himself further the entire night for the fear that Long Crane and Big Bear would sense his true strength in case he broke the connection with the Hongjun Pagoda, which would make things very difficult for him.

However, the result of this hard earned victory was beyond Jun Mo Xie's imagination.

Although the plan hadn't gone as smoothly as intended, but in one single swoop, he had managed to resolve the issue surrounding the Xuan Core as well as the Xue Hun Manor, which could be considered a great result for Jun Mo Xie.

Since Long Crane and Big Bear had agreed to beat up Li Teng Yun, it could be estimated that the threat from the Xue Hun Manor would end up being delayed by at least another six months. Jun Mo Xie could use these six months to promote the strength of the Jun Family, and even if the Xue Hun Manor came attacking in full force at that time, the Jun Family would actually be capable of fighting back!

In fact, Jun Mo Xie was looking forward to it.

How can one improve if there's no opponent? Pressure is the best stimulant for progress.

Once the Jun Family was ready for war, and the Xue Hun Manor was to back away, then Jun Mo Xie would himself go knocking on their door! [If you dare to claim a Jun Woman, then you better have the guts to fight over her! Whatever I do, I won't let Li Teng Yun get away with this! ]

[Silver Blizzard City, Xue Hun Manor, haven't you guys been too arrogant for a long while now? ]

Jun Mo Xie gritted his teeth and sat up on the ground. Then he slowly pulled himself up and merrily dragged his tired and aching body along the road, and towards to his house.

# Chapter 197: Jun Wu Yi loses his temper

---

Jun Mo Xie slept through the day.

The amount of energy which he had previously expended had put his body under a lot of strain, and had pushed him way beyond his limits. In fact, the Hitman had never pushed himself to such limits ever in the past.

Jun Mo Xie had been forced to continue using his energy to simulate the Hongjun Pagoda until he had sent the two Xuan Beasts away on their task, and had only loosened up thereafter. However, since he was afraid that someone might still be spying on him, the hitman hadn't completely lowered his guard out of a necessity, and if it hadn't been for the training he had received in his previous incarnation, the young master Jun might have actually collapsed to the ground before reaching the Jun residence.

However, by the time he reached the Jun residence, the young master Jun was completely exhausted, so much so that he had already pushed his body to a limit where he didn't even have the strength to lift his finger; the last thing he remembered was the guard lifting him up, and carrying him to his bed, post which he had no recollection of anything....

Little Ke had been so worried the entire night that even she hadn't been able to sleep a wink, and then later in the morning, Jun Wu Yi had joined her in the courtyard, clearly realizing that something major had happened, and was rather worried that his nephew might have participated in a life-threatening activity. Jun Wu Yi spent the entire day in sitting in his wheelchair inside Jun Mo Xie's little courtyard; his face clearly reflecting the worries of his heart.

[Jun Mo Xie said something before he passed out, but what did his words mean? ]

["The Xue Hun Manor... they won't be a problem for the time

being." ]

[Why won't the Xue Hun Manor be a problem for now? Why is everything alright? He left moments after we found about this problem with the Xue Hun Manor, why? Given the reputation of the Xue Hun Manor, this couldn't possibly be a big joke or something, right? That would simply be ridiculous given the imposing manner in which they operate, right? ]

To tell the truth, even though Jun Wu Yi had imposingly and proudly decided to protect his deceased nephew's widow against the might of the Xue Hun Manor, he still feared the unseen difficulties and the dangers that lay ahead. In reality, Jun Wu Yi wasn't afraid of the Xue Hun Manor itself, but he feared the organization's backer; Li Jue Tian, the second strongest man alive. He was well aware that the Jun Family simply couldn't afford to wage a war against that man!

Their current conflict with the Silver Blizzard City and its master Han Feng Xue had left the Jun Family in a difficult situation, and had pushed them to a point where they simply couldn't afford another enemy of the same caliber and influence!

Previously, when the news surrounding the peak level Nine Xuan Core's appearance had reached his ears, Jun Wu Yi had initially thought of putting on a mask, and venturing out to try his luck. In case he was able to win over the Xuan Core by a fluke, then he could possibly enhance his cultivation to the Spirit Xuan realm with the Xuan Core's assistance, and even though it wouldn't be sufficient to compete against a man like Li Jue Tian, it would still give the Jun Family a better chance of making a stronger stand!

After this thought had initially crossed his mind, Jun Wu Yi had cleared his mind to make a better assessment before rushing into action, and had realized that the strength of the individuals competing for this Xuan Core was far beyond his ability to match up, and in case he was met with a misfortune seeking this treasure, then the Jun Family simply wouldn't be able to withstand the loss!

And then the next morning, his baby nephew had suddenly uttered.....

"The Xue Hun Manor, they won't be a problem for the time being."

This sentence had left Jun Wu Yi both happy, and scared. Jun Wu Yi didn't doubt the authenticity of the information because he knew that his nephew possessed some remarkable abilities which had been surprising him a lot lately, and had been bringing him a lot of joy as well. However, even though he didn't doubt it, he still couldn't help feeling amazed by it, [how did my nephew managed this? The other side is backed by Li Jue Tian! ]

[This is really amazing! ]

Guan Qing Han had also come up to Jun Mo Xie courtyard several times after hearing Jun Mo Xie's words via Jun Wu Yi, but hadn't disturbed her brother-in-law since she could see that he was extremely exhausted, but couldn't prevent her eyes from becoming numb with tears.

She could sense that Jun Mo Xie had undertaken a lot of strain to protect her from harm, and although she had no reason to believe why Jun Mo Xie was so sure about it, but for reasons unknown, Qing Han chose to trust Jun Mo Xie.

She simply couldn't forget the words that had come out of Jun Mo Xie's mouth: "..... if the power of the Jun Family cannot protect her, then before the Jun Family is destroyed, I will personally kill her! ..... I will never allow her to be married into the Xue Hun Manor!"

Such cruel and cold-blooded words had only filled her heart with a sense of happiness and security. As far as she was concerned, these words weren't cruel, or cold-blooded, but that of a man who was determined to defend her to the point of risking his own life for her honor!

Guan Qing Han was quietly standing in her courtyard, staring at the drifting cloud over the horizon, trying to recall the many events of these last two days. Several thoughts and images were gushing about her mind, leaving her completely confused, and it was rather difficult to guess her thoughts at this point....

The evening lamps had already been lit by the time Jun Mo Xie finally woke up.

"You've finally woken up." Jun Wu Yi didn't even bothering taking a look, and simply charged inside his nephew's room when he heard a slight movement on the bed.

"Third Uncle, what are you doing here? How long was I asleep?" Jun Mo Xie's eyes remained closed for a while, and he groaned once before he finally opened them and sat up. Then, he shook his head since that biting pain of the previous night had already vanished, and had instead been replaced by a warm and comfortable feeling, almost as if his entire body was soaked in warm water. He felt strangely comfortable, while his meridians seemed strengthened, sturdy, and at peace.

This was a very different sensation when compared to his past experiences. Even though his body's physical resistance was much higher, but whenever the Hitman Jun was forced push himself to the limits in order to conclude an assignment, he would have to endure a headache for days at a stretch since his body would require a few days' time to recuperate after such extreme exhaustion. However, this time, the result was completely different!

Although overexerting his Xuan Qi was a dangerous process and resulted in extreme fatigue, but the link between his own body's energy and the Hongjun Pagoda was more closely associated than he had presumed, and for some reason the Hongjun Pagoda had not only repaired his body's fatigue, but had also left him feeling a strange and subtle sensation; as if he was reaching close to the threshold of the Second Layer. Jun Mo Xie's heart was carrying

this strange feeling as if he would be capable of making the breakthrough to second layer of the 'Art of Unlocking the Heaven's fortune' in two or three days' time, which would also mean that he could successfully unlock the second layer of the Hongjun Pagoda!

This feel was undoubtedly very mysterious, and Jun Mo Xie simply didn't know why he was feeling this, but it seemed that this feeling was real.

But there was no reason behind it.

"You left this time, and then you returned half-dead! How do you expect me to not worry?" Jun Wu Yi flared up his nostrils, "You've caused six big troubles these last few times you've gone out..... the first time, you managed to land in the middle of an assassination attempt on the princess, and you injured yourself very severely! The second, you actually ventured into the Magnificent Jewel Hall to casually play around? The third time you were with me, and you managed to cause a massacre inside the Huang Hua Hall! And then the fourth, you ran amok the Ni Chang Pavilion, and you rained curses on the Second Prince! Then, the fifth; you almost got yourself assassinated! And now this is the sixth one, you've returned half-dead, and from what the guards tell me, they had to carry you back, and were afraid that we would have to hospitalize you in case you didn't get up soon enough!"

Jun Wu Yi stretched out his finger while his face reveled in his frustration: "Jun Mo Xie, didn't your Third Uncle say that you must be accompanied by guards when you leave the house? You can get away from your guards whenever you wish to, and I know I can't even blame them for it given your skills, but these people have order to follow and protect you, don't you think they would've been worried? Even if you're the young master of this family, that doesn't mean that you have the right to worry anyone you feel like!"

"So why did you cause so much tension?" Jun Wu Yi practically growled: "Do I have to keep a check on you every time you leave?"



Last night, you vanished in the heavy rains, and then when the guards open the door early morning, they find you damned bastard wasted on the doorstep, crawling around in the mud!"

Jun Mo Xie scratched his nose, and giggled twice as he continued to respectfully listen to his Uncle's rebuke. Jun Wu Yi was usually the calmer one amongst his family members, but today the man was on fire. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie didn't dare to argue, and continued to listen quietly with a babyishly innocent look on his face.

[I had gone out to take care of some shady business, so how could I allow these people to follow me around? ]

Jun Wu Yi took a deep breathe in an attempt to regain his composure since he felt that he had already over done it a bit. Anyway, given the innocent look that Jun Mo Xie was covering his face with, Jun Wu Yi could sense that his temper was misplaced.

"I'm too lazy to scold you right now, and anyway, it's a pure waste of my energy." Jun Wu Yi waved his hand: "Well, you said something this morning; what did you mean?" Jun Wu Yi had spent the entire night listening about the horrifying battle which was taking place in the city, and naturally couldn't help but worry about his nephew's safety, which was the reason he had lost his temper!

"Ah? What did I say? What are you talking about, what meaning?!" Jun Mo Xie simply had no recollection of anything.

He wasn't just pretending, he had spoken those words right before he had fainted, and therefore had no recollection of it!

"Are you playing around with me?!" Jun Wu Yi's anger started flaring up again: "The Xue Hun Manor, they won't be a problem for the time being; you yourself said it, now what did you mean?!"

"Ah that one....." Jun Mo Xie's eyes turned around sharply, [if I tell Uncle that I was out dealing with two of the Eight Great

Master, and four other Spirit Xuan experts, plus twenty Sky Xuan experts and a few hundred Earth Xuan experts, and then went about striking a deal with two Tian Fa Xuan Beasts..... Wouldn't Uncle faint from the shock? ]

[I reckon that even if Uncle has enough nerve to withstand the shock, his legs still won't stop shaking from fear for a while... and he's supposed to be a cripple with no sensation in his legs....! However, I simply cannot keep this a secret from him! ]

[It seems that I'll have to figure out an indirect method of telling him this! ]

"I estimated it. Well, I guessed it." Jun Mo Xie braced himself for it as he calmly stated with a smile.

"You estimated it? No wait, you guessed it? Is this something to make a guess at?"

Jun Wu Yi's expression changed to that of ridicule as he endorsed last night's activities: "Last night, a large number of the world's strongest experts assembled together in the Tian Xiang City, and then engaged each other in a battle. It is reported that two of the 'Eight Great Masters', Shi Chang Xiao and the Solitary Falcon were also involved in this fight. In addition to this, the Yu Tang Empire's Imperial Teacher, Fei Meng Chen was also there along with the Third, the Sixth, and Ninth Elder of the Silver Blizzard City in addition to several other powerful experts. In addition to this, the Li Family's Li You Ran had also invited his Master, Li Wu Bei's top ten disciples to participate in this fray, and then two of the Tian Fa forest's legendary beasts also showed up at this scene. The reason behind all this is rumored to be an unknown masked man, who appeared at this scene with that Peak Level Nine Xuan Core, which had been stolen some time ago, and ended up causing this contention. At present, the Xuan Core is confirmed to be in the hands of those two Tian Fa Xuan Beasts."

Jun Wu Yi seemed rather familiar with everything that had

happened last night; well, almost everything.

## Chapter 198: Wu Hui's cenotaph!

---

Sweat drops had already started falling off from Jun Mo Xie's forehead and he was barely able to force a smile on his face: "Third Uncle, your intelligence network is so amazing ah, so there would have been no reason for you to personally go there, right?"

"Since so many experts had arrived, I naturally had to go and see it for myself!" Jun Wu Yi snapped loudly: "This after all, happened on my Tian Xiang Country's land and this obviously would have alerted His Majesty! In case His Majesty ordered a thorough investigation into the matter and I didn't have any information on the subject, then the Jun Family would be deemed as ignorant!"

His luminous eyes looked at Jun Mo Xie: "These things aren't important; the only thing that is important and the only thing that I wish to know about is that: who was that masked man who stole this Xuan Core and then appeared publicly last night? That damned bastard was the reason behind this commotion last night, and I want to know his identity!"

"Uh..... Must be some legendary expert! I can only guess that such an expert would be at least comparable to Yun Bei Chen, otherwise he would've never attempted such a feat!" Jun Mo Xie stated solemnly in a serious tone.

"Really?", Jun Wu Yi's expression resembled that of a dormant volcano simply waiting to erupt: "I gave you a Level Six Xuan Core a few days ago, bring it out, I want to take a look at it."

[That Xuan Core is now lying in the hands of Long Crane, so how can I bring it out? It's not like I can create something out of thin air! ]

"Uh, a mere Sixth level Xuan Core, I....." Jun Mo Xie's eyes were turning and twisting: "..... I lost it."

"You didn't lose it to a couple of extremely powerful Xuan Beast

from the Tian Fa forests, did you?" Jun Wu Yi glared at his nephew: "Now that you've properly woken up, I have a bucket of questions that I wish to ask you, and you should know that there is penalty waiting for you in case you give me a bucket of lies in return. Jun Mo Xie, your Third Uncle is older than you and more experienced as well....."

"I don't why you're so sure about what you said last night, nor do I know how you managed to pull it off, and I don't even know how you managed to fool those people; however I know that you will not lie to me, but....." Jun Wu Yi spoke his words slowly in a calm tone.

In the face of disaster, with fear and trepidation gripping his body, Jun Mo Xie quietly got out of his bed: "Uncle, I had a major Urinary Emergency, and I really needed to....."

"You couldn't hold your Urine in your pants? Bullshit!" Jun Wu Yi roared out. Jun Mo Xie obediently stayed rooted to his spot as Jun Wu Yi went on to say: ".... I suppose it's time to give you the Family's trademark punishment!"

Guan Qing Han was anxiously walking around in Jun Mo Xie's yard since she had already been informed that Third Uncle had gone into Jun Mo Xie's room just after he had woken up. Although Jun Mo Xie was her younger Brother-in-law, but this was still a young man's bedroom at the end of the day, and therefore she naturally felt embarrassed at the thought of rushing in without permission. Therefore, left with no other option, she was anxiously waiting in the courtyard when she started hearing the sounds of Jun Wu Yi's roars, and couldn't help getting nervous and worried: [Why is Third Uncle so furious.... This was only a small incident..... ]

Just as she was busy worrying.....

"Bang!" A stack of white clothes flew out from the room, and Qing Han subconsciously got up and almost fell to the ground

under the fierce momentum of this flying object which she tried to catch. Meanwhile this object was screaming out: "Uncle.... easy on that point!"

This flying object was obviously the young master Jun!

Guan Qing Han cried out in alarm, as the body landed on the ground face-first.

Jun Mo Xie had just received a kick in the buttocks by his Uncle, and even though he had screamed out to complain, he had still managed to adjust his body mid-air very quickly in order to ensure a secure landing position; but unexpectedly, he suddenly found himself crashing into a soft embrace while he was still screaming out, and then suddenly a sweet fragrance entered his nose as he came in contact with something really soft and warm, and then his body's projectile was rebounded and diverted.....

He couldn't help feeling a sense of pleasurable comfort for second, but just as he was about to start enjoying it, he found himself falling down.

This time, he didn't get enough time to adjust his posture, and ended up falling to the ground in a free-fall position, and ended up bumping his face in the ground. Then without any further explanations, Jun Wu Yi leapt out of the room, and started playing ping pong with his nephew's body as he fiercely rained an intense volley of kicks and punches, while Guan Qing Han starred on in horror.

Guan Qing Han was already aware of Jun Wu Yi recovery, so without worrying about anything, he simply continued beating up Jun Mo Xie.

With all his skills put in play, Jun Mo Xie quickly covered his head with one hand, and his crotch with the other, and started rolling around in the ground like a 'Sandbag'.

He had already accepted his fate and had resigned himself to this

beating! [Just go a little easy Uncle, else I'll also end up in a wheelchair like you! ]

"Uncle..... you.... Stop it please.... Don't hit him....." Guan Qing Han anxiously went up to him in persuasion.

Her remark clearly expressed her anxiety and distress, and Jun Wu Yi involuntarily stopped his hands mid-air in surprise; even Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes wide while still lying on the ground. This Uncle and Nephew duo were clearly in sync, and they both immediately stared blankly at Guan Qing Han in surprise, and then looked at each other, unable to believe her reaction.

[Since when did Qing Han bother with Mo Xie's life and death? ]

[Is my Brother's Daughter-in-Law possessed? ]

Guan Qing Han suddenly realized that these two men were staring at her out of sheer surprise since she had just charged up to plead in her Brother-in-Law's favor; a brother in law she previously didn't like at all.

[But why did I just plead to save him? ]

Guan Qing Han's face suddenly turned red, while her ears practically turned purple, and then she suddenly stomped her feet in anger: "I... I was afraid that you'll tire yourself Uncle.... Hit him, hit him again, kill him for all I care." She finished her sentence almost like a spoilt child throwing a tantrum, and then flushed with embarrassment once again seeing that they were both still staring at her, almost to the point where it seemed that their eyes would pop out of their sockets. She bitterly grunted and then swiftly walked away.

"Did I misinterpret that? Maybe I just misheard her ah? Was that person really my Sister-in-law?" Jun Mo Xie scratched his head a couple of times as he slowly got up to his feet.

"Looks like it... yes." Jun Wu Yi's tone also seemed uncertain. Suddenly he got furious again: "Who told you that you could stand

up? It really feels that you haven't understood it yet ah....."

Then he resumed his 'sandbag' training.....

Jun Wu Yi continued tossing about his arms and legs for a long while until he was completely satisfied with the result, and then said: "Tomorrow, it's your father's death anniversary day, and you will be accompanying me to the Family's memorial hall, and then you will light an incense stick in front of your father's Cenotaph. Do you understand your responsibilities as the son of this Family?"

Jun Mo Xie groaned and then chirped: "Yes."

Jun Wu Yi massaged his wrists as he stepped forward and resumed his place in his wheelchair, and then started pushing his wheelchair towards the exit. He turned around as he reached the courtyard's door: "the Xue Hun Manor..... what about them?!"

"Not a problem for now....." Jun Mo Xie wanted to cry, but couldn't find his tears.

[Great! Just great! Looks like beating me up is the only fun activity Uncle looks forward to these days. ]

The sky was still as gloomy the next day.

Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi were both sitting in a wheelchair of their own, quietly and calmly looking at the Cenotaph which could barely be justified as 'Magnificent'.

This object was already beyond the scope of being called a 'Cenotaph', and seemed more like as if someone had built a palace in the middle of the barracks.

There had already been a very strict and rigorous inspection of the surroundings before Jun Wu Yi's arrival.

Eight pillars were standing in support of a dome on top, with two large, flat, and smooth boulders facing the center, carrying the following engravings.

The Left one: the Winds listen to the Jun!



The Right One: The Heaven and Earth belong to the Jun!

A fleet of stairs paved the way upwards to the dome, and both sides of each step of this staircase had carvings of soldiers mounted on horsebacks. As they moved forward, there were eight large life-sized carvings of masculine and burly men, four on each side of the central sculpture. Their hands were positioned right next to their hilts, almost as if they'd draw their sword at any moment, and although these were only sculptures, it seemed as if they would come to life in case their master was in danger.

"These eight sculptures are dedicated to Big Brother's eight body guards. These eight men were assigned to protect him at the time he joined the army, and these eight followed him till the day he died; these eight men never left Wu Hui's side in danger or otherwise!" Jun Wu Yi's eyes were staring at the statues of these eight people while the depth of his eyes clearly reflected his appreciation for their loyalty. The tone of his speech was extremely deep and profound, almost as if he was trying to memorize their valor and companionship.

"This is the glory and honor, whether in life or death of the white commander, Jun Wu Hui! Who could ever match his name?" Jun Wu Yi slowly spoke as he slowly moved forward while his eyes continued to pay respects to each passing statue.

Jun Mo Xie simple couldn't help but awe at the magnificence of this memorial.

The entire mantle was neat and clean, to the point where there wasn't even one speck of dust on in it. It had just rained very heavily a couple of nights ago, and it was late autumn at the moment, but there wasn't even a single dead leaf on this memorial, nor was there any trace of corrosion from the rain.

"Someone is always placed in charge of taking care of this memorial; in fact there is an unwritten rule in the barracks: No matter who you are, as long as you're in charge of Big Brother's

memorial, and there's even a spot of dust found on it, your only penalty is..... Capital Punishment! There will no trial! No explanations will be listened to... there is no law more stringent in the military than this one! There are no exceptions, and no one ever dares to speak against it, nor has anyone ever try to violate it!" Jun Wu Yi slowly spoke as he pushed his wheelchair around.

Jun Mo Xie silently accompanied his Uncle in his wheelchair, but his heart had already started shaking with admiration. This one point was enough to express the military's love and admiration for his father. It was evident that his father, Jun Wu Hui, the White Commander's reputation had already transcended to that of a God's in the eyes of this country's military men!

Under the dome, there was a large, tall, stone statue of a middle-aged man upon his horse. The man's body was upright, his bright and piercing eyes seemingly seeing through all the strategies in play on the battlefield, his left hand was holding the rein of his horse, while his right hand was gently placed on the hilt of his sword which was hanging on his waist. Even the lines of face were clearly sculpted out, while his mouth was curved into a cold and awe-inspiring smile, almost as if he was the overlord of a hundreds of millions of people!

The cloak in his body's background seemed to be flying in the wind, and although this statue was lifeless in general, but it still faintly revealed the majestic and heroic spirit of Jun Wu Hui's personality!

# Chapter 199: A real man does not shun his grief

---

Jun Wu Yi's entire body had been motionless since the moment he had laid eyes on his Elder Brother's statute, and it seemed as if one statue was staring into the eyes of another. Although, the eyes of the living statue was reflecting the emotion of his beating heart.

Jun Wu Yi stayed root to his spot looking up at the statue, and slowly his eyes started to blur with tears, and finally one of the tears fell down as he stated in a low and hoarse voice, almost as if he was trying to hold back his pain: "..... Big Brother, I've brought Mo Xie to see you. He's finally progressed enough to be eligible of paying his respects to you!"

Jun Wu Yi silently and painfully closed his eyes, and it seemed that his mind was already reveling in the memories of the past.

He had grown up with his two elder brothers, he had played with them, and from his childhood days to that of his youth, his two elder brothers had always looked after him, but in return he provoked a boundless curse which took the life of his two elder brothers in the prime of their years!

Then, his sister-in-law died from the grief of this sorrow, and when her parents arrived to console her and realized that she had already died, they too broke off all contact with the Jun Family! These two families, who had once been close allies, never communicated again.....

Then Jun Wu Yi's nephews died young, also because of his fault!

Heaven knows that Jun Wu Yi would've chosen to die a hundred deaths before allowing his Elder Brothers and his nephews to die fighting his battles! This past decade hadn't been enough to rid his heart of his pain! This pain was still smoldering at the bottom of his heart even now!

The scenes of his past had started flashing through his mind in the face of his Elder Brother's vivid and lifelike statue, and Jun Wu Yi's mind had already fallen into a bottomless abyss of pain, infinite regrets, and boundless hate!

Real men don't cry; not unless they've really been hurt!

"Big Brother....."

Jun Wu Yi fell down to his knees on the ground ahead, and the strong and durable body of this valiant general started to tremble: "I'm sorry.... I've let you down! I've let Second Brother down! I've let Father down, and I've let our Family down!"

Through his tear stained eyes, Jun Wu Yi gazed into the fortitude and wisdom of Elder Brother's face, and he felt as if his Elder Brother had come back from the dead to stroke his hair, and then looked at him with a smile on his face, almost as if he was teaching him a lesson: "Third Brother....there's no need to suffer, there's no need to cry!"

At this moment, Jun Wu Yi started crying even more loudly as all those feelings which had been taking refuge in his heart for these past ten years started to pour out unrestrained, and then he started crawling closer to his Elder Brother's grave like an aggrieved child who was suddenly throwing himself into the arms of his loved ones.....

He could still distinctly remember the last words his brother had said to him the night before his departure all those years ago: "About this Silver Blizzard City matter, I've always felt that our business with them isn't over yet, and I'm afraid that the Silver Blizzard City still has some secret tricks up their sleeve. Therefore, when your Second Brother and I are away from home, you will not act recklessly. You mustn't get over anxious about marrying Miss Han; love always finds a way. Once your Second Brother and I return, we will talk to father, and then we'll find a way to help you; the whole Family will stand in your support. "

Jun Wu Yi could clearly remember the concern in his Eldest Brother's eyes and a similar look in the eyes of his Second Brother as well. The image of those profound and concerned eyes was piercing his heart with pain, almost as if someone had stabbing his heart with a knife and was twisting the knife inside his heart!

At that time, his two elder brothers had completely forgotten about their own pains and worries for the sake of their little brother! Those two men were only concerned about their little Brother's safety, and were worried that their little brother might end up hurting himself under the flame of impulse, and had seemingly forgotten all about the enemies they would have to deal with on the battlefield!

These two men were wise and loving enough to spare their little brother by not sharing their anxieties since they didn't wish to worry him any further!

Then, a loud and forceful drumming had started sounding, loud enough to make the entire world shake. Jun Wu Hui was standing in his military uniform, his white military uniform, and the next moment he was mounting his horse: "Third Brother, now that your Second Brother and I are going away, you are the only man the Jun Family can depending on!"

[Big Brother! Big Brother ah, why did you say that? How stupid was your little Brother, ah, I had never been able to understand the meaning behind your words until this day! Those were.... Your last words! ]

[Big Brother, did you already know this then? What did you know about? Perhaps, you had sensed something? Why didn't you say anything?.... why didn't you tell me! ]

[You knew that I would have chosen to die before sending my own brothers to the gates of ruin.... ah! ]

[If I ever get a change to return to that time a decade ago, when I hadn't met "Her", I would go back and do it all differently... I

would! I would!..... ]

"Third Uncle." Jun Mo Xie stepped out of his wheelchair: "The Dead are dead. Accept fate, and shun your grief! Looking after your own self is the correct way ahead!"

Jun Wu Yi slowly raised his head and looked at Jun Mo Xie as his face suddenly revealed a sorrowful smile: "Mo Xie, someone had once spoken these words to your father several years ago; Accept fate and shun your grief so you may be able to look after yourself. Do you know what he said in reply?"

"He.... What did my father say?"

"All three of us had fought in that battle together, and we had suffered heavy losses. Your father was very sad to see so many of our men lying dead on the battlefield. At that time, one of the officers advised him: General, Shun your grief! Take control of your body and emotions." Jun Wu Yi spoke slowly as he recalled the words: "At that time, Big Brother had replied: Why do you want me to shun my grief? Why should I shun my grief? My brothers have died, and they were killed by my enemy, shouldn't I now kill the enemy? How will letting go of my grief change anything? Taking control over my emotions...."

Jun Wu Yi's raised his voice, almost as if he was trying to imitate his Elder Brother: "Yes, we will have to find a way to shun this grief in time..... but I will not waste this grief in tears, I will use it to kill the enemy! I will use this grief to raid my enemy and then eliminate them in one swoop so my brethren never have to feel this grief again! I will not shun my grief! I will change my circumstances!"

"I will not shun my grief! I will change my circumstances!" Jun Mo Xie softly repeated these two phrases, and suddenly a wave current rushed through his body, flooding his body with pride and honor as it resonated throughout his soul!

"I will not shun my grief! I will change my circumstances!"

This one sentence aroused a sincere and earnest feeling of admiration for his father inside Jun Mo Xie's heart; a father he had never even met!

[An iron blooded man laughs when he feels like laughing, cries when he feels like crying; an iron blooded man isn't artificial! ]

[A real man doesn't shun his sorrows! A real man works on transforming his situation! ]

[His words have won over my heart! ]

Jun Mo Xie could suddenly feel that even in his previous life, he would have easily accepted such a man to be his father! [Even though this man has only fathered this body I live in and not my soul, I will accept him as my father in this life! I would accept such a man as my father in any life! ]

The uncle and nephew duo sat motionlessly and quietly like stationary, and neither man spoke up for a long time.

Suddenly, a round of rapid footsteps sounded outside; these footsteps proceeded to the door and opened it, and then a voice announced: "Third General, the Yu Tang Empire's General Zhao Jian Hun wishes to pay his respects to the Commander; General, please give me my orders!"

"Zhao Jian Hun?!" Jun Wu Yi seemed rather confused since he had never imagined that the enemy of his brothers would actually turn up here! "Ask him to come in. I've been longing to meet him; it's been a while since I've met my old friend!"

"Yes General!" the young military officer accepted his orders, and then walked away.

A little while later, a black silhouette slowly appeared at a distance. This man was abnormally tall, and was wearing black clock, black robes, even his face was black, and it seemed as if this person's entire body was made of cold black steel. His strides were as dominating as a tigers', and he was looking straight ahead; and

nowhere else. The Tian Xiang military soldiers, who were lined up on both sides of the walkway, were eyeing him with hostility, but he didn't seem to be paying any attention to them!

This person was tall and thin, had broad shoulders, long arms, a high nose, and sharp eyes; the lines on his face were so rigid that it almost seemed as if someone had carved them out with a knife. An awe-inspiring aura of war was surging out from his body as he continued to proceed forward, never looking to his side, nor looking to his back!

This man had turned up alone!

He had ventured into the enemy's army camp to pay his respects to his dead enemy! All by himself!

This man was Zhao Jian Hun!

Bold beyond words could describe!

Bold and valiant enough to be one of the most decorated generals of the Yu Tang Empire!

Zhao Jian Hun walked closer and stationed himself in front of Jun Wu Yi: "Jun Wu Yi, we meet again after all these years." His sonorous and powerful voice still inhibited a cry for battle!

Jun Wu Yi didn't look back at him, and kept his eyes lowered to the ground: "Zhao Jian Hun, I've been wanting to see you for a long time! A really long time!"

"Then why didn't you? There hasn't been a Jun on the battle field for a decade now....." Zhao Jian Hun's voice seemed authentic: ".....I've gotten very lonely!"

"If there had been a Jun on the battlefield over this past decade, then I'm afraid that you wouldn't have gotten his opportunity to stand in front of me and complain." Jun Wu Yi looked coldly at him: "Because you would've already been reincarnated!"

Even though this sentence was rather arrogant in its make, Zhao



Jian Hun could clearly tell from its tone that speaker was obviously harboring a feeling of regret, which affirmed him that only the Jun were worthy of being his true opponents! However, even though he clearly understood the true meaning behind Jun Wu Yi's words, but that sense of a military man's honor inwardly still incited a feeling of waging a fight at this moment!

"Yes, had you been on the battlefield over this past decade, then maybe I would have found myself buried in the ground! But you were not there! Why weren't you there?" Zhao Jian Hun actually seemed a bit angry.

The tone of this famous Yu Tang General left Jun Wu Yi puzzled, while Jun Mo Xie was left scratching his head, [this isn't a fake, right? Although he won the war under dubious circumstances, but he's the only general who's ever defeated the White Commander, Jun Wu Hui in battle, and the only man Jun Wu Hui was never able to defeat. In addition to facing all the three brothers of the Jun Family for years at a stretch, he also managed to see two of them fall, and the third one getting crippled. He knows well that Third Uncle wouldn't have been able to fight him on the battlefield after his injury, but this guy still wants to fight and defeat him? Has this guy lost his mind? ]

Zhao Jian Hun walked over to Jun Wu Hui's statue and came to a halt. He stood there motionlessly for a long while with a serious look on his face, his body perfectly upright, but his eyes were clearly showing the sincerity of his respect. Then, he bent down from his waist, and didn't straighten up for a long while.

A while later, he stood up straight once again, and looked sharply in the stone eyes of his enemy, but with a look of admiration in his own! He sighed and said: "Jun Wu Yi, do you know something? I, Zhao Jian Hun joined the military at a young age, and I've spent half-a-lifetime fighting many great generals on the battlefield; I've lost and I've won against some of the most decorated heroes of this world, but only one man has ever been capable of arousing a sense

of admiration in Zhao Jian Hun's heart! There is only one man I bow down to!"

"That man's name is Jun Wu Hui!"

# Chapter 200: The Characteristics of pride

---

Zhao Jian Hun was staring at the statue of his enemy with the utmost respect in his eyes: "Jun Wu Hui and I, have faced each other on the battlefield a total of twenty nine times, and regardless of my wits or strength, I've always lost. No matter my attack strategy, no matter my calculations, no matter my ambush plans, no matter the secrecy of operation, Jun Wu Hui would always see through everything."

"The White Commander could see through everything!"

Such words were probably the best and biggest compliment an enemy can ever be capable of giving a man!

Jun Wu Yi had nothing to add in this regard, but these words brought back the memories of his Eldest Brother, and his heart suddenly burst with pride once again.

The young master Jun had been silently watching Zhao Jian Hun the entire time, and could feel a strong sense of regret in the man's tone for not being able to defeat the great Commander. However, no matter how miserably the man was beaten in battle, he'd still rally his forces once again, and would rise up once again to wage hundred more wars! This was an amazing characteristic that this general possessed, and Jun Mo Xie could sense that this man was someone to reckon with!

"Our countries were at war with each other at that time, and although Jun Wu Hui and I met several times, but we always met on the battlefield in the form of sworn enemies. I always hoped that one day I'd be able to meet this valiant and terrifying enemy in person, so I could share a glass of wine with him over a conversation! And that one moment would have been enough for me to last a lifetime!"

Zhao Jian Hun seemed to be talking out of sentiment at this point: "However, the greatest desire of my life had always been to

defeat Jun Wu Hui in battle once; and convincingly at that, then I would've chopped his head with my own sword, and then I would have personally buried the man with all honors! Therefore, no matter how miserably he defeated me, no matter how desperate he made me, I would always struggle to get back on my feet because I believed in my dream! I would always get up again, so I could beat this unshakable enemy of mine! I would have lost a hundred more battles, but I would still fight again! The death of such an ingenious general under such shady conditions is indeed the most tragic thing I can ever imagine!"

"The mystery of his tragic death?" Jun Wu Yi suddenly opened his eyes and looked at him coldly: "Zhao Jian Hun, what are you trying to say? What do you know about it?"

The mysterious deaths of his two elder brothers and his two nephews could be described as the biggest puzzle of Jun Wu Yi's life, and although he believed that the Silver Blizzard City played a part in it, but he still didn't have any proof of it. Jun Wu Yi had been anxiously trying to get some concrete evidence, and suddenly it seemed to him that Zhao Jian Hun knew something about it!

Zhao Jian Hun turned around and looked at him: "What do I know? I'm an enemy soldier, so even if I told you something, why would you ever trust me?! Jun Wu Yi, although you've beaten me as well, but I've never respected you! Zhao Jian Hun has only ever admired one enemy; Jun Wu Hui! If Jun Wu Hui wasn't already dead, then I'd want to kill him! However, he died battling me, but under the most dubious of circumstances and I, Zhao Jian Hun will not take the blame of it! Nor do I know anything about his death!"

"I was supposed to have been defeated by Jun Wu Hui ten years ago, but unfortunately I defeated him, and then he died! This victory was the biggest defeat of my life, and this defeat was the final one!" Zhao Jian Hun smiled mischievously, but with abundant traces of sadness on his face: "That victory is the biggest irony of my life!"

At this moment, Jun Wu Yi finally started to understand the true meaning behind Zhao Jian Hun's words, and muttered to himself: "So, he also wants to know the truth?"

Zhao Jian Hun looked at him coldly: "Had I really defeated and killed him, then I would have proudly announced it to the whole wide world, and then I would've celebrated like you've never seen anyone celebrate before! That victory was marked as the biggest achievement of my life, but it was false! This feat does not belong to me, but it is still hung against my name, and this, for Zhao Jian Hun, is the biggest shame! A shame I simply cannot wash away! I cannot stand it, and so I wish to avenge him! Jun Wu Hui was a real soldier, and he should've died fighting on the battlefield, not under a conspiracy! I cannot accept this result, and I believe that he wouldn't have accepted it either!"

"You're his brother, something must have rubbed off on you as well....." Zhao Jian Hun smiled mockingly, "You're a soldier too, aren't you? If such a success was handed over to you by someone else, then what you have done? You're a soldier, aren't you? Would you have taken it? Perhaps, some people would secretly celebrate it, but I, Zhao Jian Hun cannot!"

Jun Wu Yi had no words to offer.

"Jun Wu Yi, I ask you! How did Jun Wu Hui die? How were you defeated?" Zhao Jian Hun was almost glaring at Jun Wu Yi: "Tell me, and tell me the truth!"

"The truth....." Jun Wu Yi shook his head as his face twitched: "... I would also like to know the truth."

By the virtue of being one of the most prominent generals of the Yu Tang Empire, Zhao Jian Hun was surely capable of calling the winds and summoning the rains, but in the face of a power like the Silver Blizzard City, he was no more than a mere ant.

Even though Jun Wu Yi didn't want an enemy like Zhao Jian Hun to exist in this world, but just as Zhao Jian Hun, Jun Wu Yi

also firmly believed that the bones of a soldier belonged in the battlefield. Although, he wished Zhao Jian Hun dead, he only wanted the man to die in battle, and preferably by his own hands! In any case, he didn't wish for Zhao Jian Hun to fight the Silver Blizzard City in order to avenge Jun Wu Hui and then end up dying under similarly dubious circumstances!

In reality, even Jun Wu Yi was also only vaguely conjecturing at the truth since he didn't have any proof of the Silver Blizzard City's involvement! Either way, he wouldn't imply his own hatred and impose his own battles on someone else!

"You would never be able deal with them. You weren't even able to deal with my Eldest Brother, or my Second Brother, or even me!" Jun Wu Yi replied coldly: "Zhao Jian Hun, you shouldn't overestimate your abilities! Although I hope that you die soon enough, but I don't wish for you to die the death my Brothers did! The bones of a soldier have always belonged on the battlefield!"

"So you already know how the three of you were beaten, and that I have no relation with what happened?" Zhao Jian Hun seemed rather excited about it.

"Of course. You may be worthy of being the most important general of the Yu Tang Empire, but you simply aren't capable of defeating the Jun Brothers!" Jun Wu Yi grunted: "You just don't have what it takes!"

"Thank you! Thank you!" even though Jun Wu Yi was belittling him, Zhao Jian Hun seemed very happy, grateful, and excited!

"Jun Yu Wi, you may be a victorious general, but you will never know what the burden of these victories can do to a man! I've never lost any battle in this past decade.... I may get hit hard, but I'd always counter and win the battle..... but since I wasn't able to defeat the Jun Brother convincingly, no matter where I go..... I can always feel as if someone is pointing at my back and saying..... you see that man, he's a lucky one.... No matter how badly he loses,

he'll always win in the end because he's a lucky general..... luck is his biggest strength....."

"This is the biggest humiliation for any soldier! A real soldier never believes in luck! Strength is everything!" Zhao Jian Hun's voice started turning up, and he was almost roaring at this point; but hysterically so: "I don't have the strength to win? I've never lost a war in ten years now! No matter how hard I'm hit, I always counter and I always win in the end! Why should anyone call me lucky? I would rather be dead before I accept my victories as a twist of fate!"

Jun Mo Xie had been watching Zhao Jian Hun since the moment he had come in, and could sense that this man was true soldier! Hearing these words only made him sure of it.

Perhaps Jun Mo Xie wouldn't agree with the pedantic thoughts and ideals of the man, but he couldn't help admire them, and therefore, he couldn't approve of them. [He is a true soldier! A truly Iron-blooded military man! ]

[Upright and straightforward! Real men and true swords don't believe in luck, and then don't believe in destiny! Even if they face death, they do so standing on their feet! They may die, but they always die in battle! They die with a forward posture, defending their pride and their national dignity, like an immortal and great wall, unwilling to move aside for the sake of their future generations and their country! ]

This unique prideful characteristics of a true soldier was vividly visible to Jun Mo Xie in the words and body language of Jun Wu Yi and Zhao Jian Hun!

[Whether friend or foe, such soldiers are worthy of admiration. ]

He could sense that even if another general is able to match up to Zhao Jian Hun's track record in the days to come, the said-man would unlikely ever be able to match this general's valor and ideals!

Jun Wu Yi and Zhao Jian Hun, two men who were once enemies, continued to talk in front of Jun Wu Hui's cenotaph for a long time, and even though they matched each other measure for measure, but a tone of sympathy and respect still lingered abundantly in their body language.

Jun Mo Xie didn't interrupt them at all since he knew that this moment belong to these two men; and these two men alone! These two war veterans, these two opponents, these two iron-blooded soldiers.

Towards the end, intentionally or otherwise, Zhao Jian Hun uttered a sentence with aroused Jun Mo Xie's interest: "There is another military Family in the Tian Xiang Country apart from the Jun Family: the Dugu Family. Things are looking a bit fishy on their end."

"What are you trying to say?" Jun Wu Yi asked: "What news have you come across Brother Zhao? Is the country turning against us?"

"Is the country turning against you?" Zhao Jian Hun smiled mischievously: "I came here with the state teacher of the Yu Tang Empire, and your three Princes have already visited us, and ha ha, their attitude is very... ha ha...."

Zhao Jian Hun was standing upright at this moment, and his deep voice seemed to be sneering at Jun Wu Yi: "The three Princes have been trying to disintegrate the Empire, but your Emperor has his heart set on maintaining the balance and unity. However, it seems that the three Princes are getting very impatient, and cannot wait for their succession any longer, which makes mutiny their only option. The Jun Family and the Dugu Family are extremely loyal to Yang Huai Yu, which makes your two families their biggest hurdle, and they need to clear them at any cost. The Dugu Family has an unmarried daughter, and she can be used as a very significant bargaining chip here, and in case one of the three Prince is somehow able to woo her..... even if a Jun is able to marry the Princess, it will only be done by the grace of his Majesty,



and will by no means obstruct the plans of the three Princes."

Jun Wu Yi looked downwards: "Is that so?"

# Table of Contents

## [Otherworldly Evil Monarch](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 101: By A Hair's Breadth!](#)

[Chapter 102: So White](#)

[Chapter 103: Treating The Poison!](#)

[Chapter 104: Accidental Ecstasy](#)

[Chapter 105: Grand Preceptor Li and the Jade Sea Coral](#)

[Chapter 106: Some Families Celebrate, Some Worry](#)

[Chapter 107: What's The Plan](#)

[Chapter 108: Clash Of Grandpas!](#)

[Chapter 109: Trouble Has Arrived](#)

[Chapter 110: Heroes and Legends Bravely Rushing Forward](#)

[Chapter 111: Superb Alcohol Capacity!](#)

[Chapter 112: Dugu Pays A Visit](#)

[Chapter 113: Extortion](#)

[Chapter 114: Insane Decision](#)

[Chapter 115: The Man from Magnificent Jewel Hall](#)

[Chapter 116: Battling with a Sky Xuan](#)

[Chapter 117: The Life doesn't go in Reverse](#)

[Chapter 118: His Deep-rooted Hatred](#)

[Chapter 119: Opportunity?](#)

[Chapter 120: This Life's First Deal's Commission](#)

[Chapter 121: "Faced with this, I can only kill"](#)

[Chapter 122: How do we handle this?](#)

[Chapter 123: Hiding in the forest](#)

[Chapter 124: The Formidable Practice of Habit!](#)

[Chapter 125: A new headache](#)

[Chapter 126: Unambitious](#)

[Chapter 127: A breakthrough within sight](#)

[Chapter 128: Talking Big](#)

[Chapter 129: Ni Chang Pavilion](#)

[Chapter 130: The Outrageous Debauchee](#)

[Chapter 131: Fear my immortal behavior](#)

[Chapter 132: Killing a chicken to scare the monkeys](#)

[Chapter 133: The legendary jinx](#)

[Chapter 134: A young maiden's heart](#)  
[Chapter 135: Surprise](#)  
[Chapter 136: It's difficult to do good](#)  
[Chapter 137: Open a net and the fishes come running](#)  
[Chapter 138: An eight faceted unrest](#)  
[Chapter 139: Despised](#)  
[Chapter 140: Forcing the Hongjun Pagoda](#)  
[Chapter 141: Aura Storm](#)  
[Chapter 142: Earth-shattering Affect](#)  
[Chapter 143: Yin and Yang escape](#)  
[Chapter 144: Xuan Beast Advances?](#)  
[Chapter 145: The First Knife of Tian Xiang](#)  
[Chapter 146: The Envoys from two countries](#)  
[Chapter 147: A chance encounter](#)  
[Chapter 148: It was you!](#)  
[Chapter 149: A mysterious master](#)  
[Chapter 150: I drink for the loneliness, not the wine](#)  
[Chapter 151: Tang Yuan's medical examination begins](#)  
[Chapter 152: Chapter 152 - The Super Amusing Incident](#)  
[Chapter 153: Disowned](#)  
[Chapter 154: The Debauchee Alliance](#)  
[Chapter 155: Challenges of the Yin Yang Escape](#)  
[Chapter 156: Buried alive](#)  
[Chapter 157: Business Guru](#)  
[Chapter 158: Hai Chen Feng](#)  
[Chapter 159: The warriors return](#)  
[Chapter 160: I'm not late, you just got here early](#)  
[Chapter 161: The eight great masters](#)  
[Chapter 162: The competition... had already begun](#)  
[Chapter 163: Pushing it to the limit](#)  
[Chapter 164: Sky Xuan Apprentice](#)  
[Chapter 165: Partnership with the Prince](#)  
[Chapter 166: Assassins](#)  
[Chapter 167: Torrent of terror](#)  
[Chapter 168: Slaughtered](#)  
[Chapter 169: Coming out safely](#)  
[Chapter 170: Clues](#)  
[Chapter 171: You're lucky I'm not killing you](#)  
[Chapter 172: Taking her back?](#)

[Chapter 173: Intense infatuation](#)  
[Chapter 174: Xue Hun forcefully approaches her!](#)  
[Chapter 175: No compromise](#)  
[Chapter 176: Different positions](#)  
[Chapter 177: Xuan Core comes out](#)  
[Chapter 178: A quartet movement](#)  
[Chapter 179: A Quick Escalation](#)  
[Chapter 180: Spirit Xuan experts gather](#)  
[Chapter 181: Masters in Confrontation](#)  
[Chapter 182: The Xuan Core changes hands](#)  
[Chapter 183: Qing Han's fury](#)  
[Chapter 184: I want to act as a father](#)  
[Chapter 185: A tragedy of exceptional speed](#)  
[Chapter 186: Talking tree?](#)  
[Chapter 187: Fishing in troubled waters](#)  
[Chapter 188: An unforeseen event](#)  
[Chapter 189: Lethal flying knives](#)  
[Chapter 190: A second time](#)  
[Chapter 191: The real objective](#)  
[Chapter 192: Chapter 192 - Cheating for victory?](#)  
[Chapter 193: Preposterous](#)  
[Chapter 194: A taste of one's own medicine](#)  
[Chapter 195: Fatally enticing](#)  
[Chapter 196: Let's do it like this](#)  
[Chapter 197: Jun Wu Yi loses his temper](#)  
[Chapter 198: Wu Hui's cenotaph!](#)  
[Chapter 199: A real man does not shun his grief](#)  
[Chapter 200: The Characteristics of pride](#)